

THE ULTIMATE
TOPICAL BIBLE GUIDE

Bible Basics

JOHN LEE

A CONDENSED TOPICAL BIBLE CATEGORIZED BY BASIC
BIBLE PRINCIPLES AND TOPICS.

Bible Basics

Bible Basics
© 1990 Global Missions - Sydney, Australia
Compiled by John Lee

"Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth." (2Timothy 2:15.)

Table of Contents

Preface.....	16
Explanation of Technical Aspects	16
Note to Teachers.....	17
Salvation	18
1. All men are sinners:.....	18
2. Salvation by grace (undeserved mercy), not works:.....	19
3. Salvation only through Jesus:	19
4. Believe on Jesus:.....	19
5. Receive Jesus:.....	20
6. Eternal salvation:.....	20
7. Receiving Jesus guarantees eternal life in Heaven:	21
8. The results of being born again:.....	21
9. Sin brings about spiritual death; but Jesus died in our place, taking our punishment:...	22
10. In the Mosaic law, blood is payment for sin; Jesus' death paid that price in full:.....	22
11. All men are not saved sons of God in their natural state:.....	22
12. The self-righteous refuse Jesus' salvation:.....	22
13. New Testament examples of salvation:.....	23
Jesus Christ, The Son of God.....	23
1. Jesus' Father, God, is the Eternal Spirit & Creator:	23
2. Why God sent Jesus into the world:	25
3. More reasons why God sent Jesus into the world:	26
4. Jesus' teachings & personal example:.....	27
5. Jesus, the way to salvation:.....	27
6. Jesus, the light of the world:	29

7. Jesus' life & resurrection are a fact:.....	30
8. Eyewitness accounts in the Bible tell us that:	31
9. Old Testament Messianic prophecies:	31
10. Jesus, the Son of God:	33
11. Jesus' relationship with God:	35
12. The authority & power God has given Jesus:	37
13. Jesus the Creator:.....	38
14. Titles of Jesus:	39
Holy Spirit, The.....	40
1. The Holy Spirit's part in our salvation:	40
2. The baptism (or overflowing) of the Holy Spirit:.....	41
3. The purpose of the Holy Spirit baptism:	42
4. Gifts of the Holy Spirit:	43
5. Freedom of the Holy Spirit:	45
6. The Holy Spirit inspires unity of believers:	45
7. Other points about the ministry of the Spirit:	45
8. Obeying the Holy Spirit:.....	45
9. The Holy Spirit in Jesus' life:	46
10. Other Bible examples:.....	47
Word of God, The.....	47
1. The Bible was written by divine inspiration:.....	47
2. God's Word is eternally true & never fails:.....	47
3. The Importance of God's Word:.....	48
4. God's Word is our spiritual weapon:.....	48
5. The Bible was written for our benefit:.....	48
6. Keeping (obeying, heeding) the Word:	49
7. What the Word does for us:.....	50
8. What we should do with the Word:	52
9. What you should not do with the Word:.....	54
10. Beware of those who don't teach the Word:	55
11. The devil blinds men's eyes to God's Word:	56
12. Stories relating to the Word:.....	56
Prayer.....	56
1. How to pray:	56
2. Conditions to getting prayer answered:.....	58

3. Prayer promises:	59
4. How not to pray:	60
5. Private prayer & united prayer with others:	62
6. When to pray:	62
7. Wholehearted desperate prayer:	64
8. Other points on prayer:	66
9. Ways God answers prayer:	67
Faith	68
1. What is faith?	68
2. The importance of faith:	68
3. The Word tells us to have faith:	69
4. How to obtain faith:	70
5. The rewards (blessings or fruits) of faith:	72
6. Trusting in the Lord's promises:	75
7. Faith vs. natural reasoning:	76
8. The power of faith:	76
9. The testing of our faith:	78
10. If you have true faith:	79
11. Lack of faith:	81
Love & Forgiveness	82
1. God is love, & He loves us:	82
2. The first great commandment—to love God:	83
3. The second great commandment—to love thy neighbour:	84
4. Love one another:	84
5. Real, genuine love:	86
6. Real love results in good deeds:	88
7. Love vs. hate:	89
8. Special categories of love:	90
9. Love, forgiveness & mercy:	91
10. We are to be merciful & forgiving:	93
11. The limits of forgiveness:	94
12. Even erring Christians must repent to be forgiven:	96
Our Relationship with the Lord	97
1. We worship the Lord by loving Him:	97
2. How we show our love for the Lord:	99

3. We are to love God above all else:	101
4. We are to fear & reverence the Lord:.....	102
5. Resting in the Lord:	103
6. Drawing close & resting in the "Secret Place":	104
7. The benefits of taking quiet time with the Lord:.....	105
8. Hindrances to our relationship with the Lord:	106
9. Our special relationship with the Lord:	107
Fellowship.....	110
1. The Bible instructs us to fellowship:.....	110
2. The reasons for fellowship:	111
3. Holding meetings:	112
4. Being "of one mind" & working together in unity:	113
5. Fellowship with the world:	113
Witnessing	114
1. It is your duty, as a Christian, to witness:	114
2. Why you need to witness:	115
3. Don't be shy or ashamed to witness:	115
4. Pointers on how to be a good witness:.....	116
5. Use the Word in your witnessing:	117
6. Keeping your witness simple:.....	118
7. What you should preach (witness about):	118
8. Who to witness to:.....	119
9. A winning personal example:	120
10. When to witness:	121
11. Where to witness:.....	121
12. The "fruit" Christians should bear is other Christians, new saved souls:.....	122
13. The Holy Spirit & witnessing:	122
14. Witnessing, the greatest work on earth:	123
15. Reactions to the gospel:.....	123
16. Witnessing boldly despite opposition:	124
17. More verses about witnessing & testifying:	125
Giving	125
1. The Bible commands believers to give:	125
2. God blesses us when we give:.....	126
3. Giving to God's work:	126

4. Christian duty regarding giving & sharing:.....	127
5. Giving with the right motives:.....	128
6. What happens when we withhold & don't give:.....	129
7. Tithing:.....	130
8. Other aspects of giving:.....	131
How to Find the Will of God.....	132
1. The prerequisite: Submit your will to the Lord:.....	132
2. The Holy Spirit guides us to find God's will:.....	133
3. The first place to look for God's will is in His Word:.....	133
4. God sometimes reveals His will through dreams:.....	134
5. God sometimes reveals His will through visions:.....	135
6. The Lord sometimes reveals His will through prophecy & revelations:.....	136
7. Seeking counsel:.....	137
8. God often reveals His will by obvious circumstances:.....	138
9. Knowing by faith, the "witness of the Spirit":.....	140
10. Determining God's will by confirming signs:.....	140
11. Sometimes God's will & plans are conditional:.....	141
12. God often gives Christians alternative choices:.....	142
13. When God does not reveal His will:.....	142
14. When you desperately require specific directions:.....	143
15. You can count on God's leadings even when—.....	144
16. The will of God is supreme:.....	145
17. Rewards for doing God's will:.....	145
18. God's will on specific subjects:.....	145
Obedience to God.....	146
1. Obeying the Lord:.....	146
2. If you love & know the Lord, you will obey Him:.....	147
3. Blessings for obeying the Lord:.....	147
4. Submission to godly pastors & leaders in the Lord:.....	148
5. Jesus' example of obedience:.....	149
6. Yieldedness to God:.....	149
7. Obeying God rather than ungodly men:.....	150
8. Disobedience to God—how the Lord views it:.....	150
9. Various categories of disobedience:.....	150
10. Reasons for disobedience:.....	151

11. How to relate to the disobedient:	153
12. God's punishments for disobedience:	154
13. Obedience is building on a sure foundation:	155
Strength & Power	155
1. God's strength vs. your strength:	155
2. Trust in the Lord, not your own strength:	157
3. Our weakness causes us to depend upon God:	158
4. God can strengthen & use you:	159
5. Don't trust in yourself:	161
6. Power when witnessing:	162
7. God's power vs. your adversaries' physical power:	163
Protection	166
1. Trusting in the Lord is your only sure refuge:	166
2. God will protect you because He loves you:	168
3. The Lord can protect you from:	169
4. Protection from your enemies:	172
5. Special protection promised in the last days:	174
6. Conditions for having God's protection:	174
7. Some examples of divine protection:	176
Supply	177
1. God can supply all our needs:	177
2. God can do miracles to supply:	178
3. Supply during famine:	179
4. Conditions to God's supply:	180
5. Reasons why we sometimes lack:	182
6. God loves you & wants to supply:	182
7. Doing what we can do to supply:	183
8. When God uses others to supply His workers' needs:	184
9. Giving to God's work:	186
10. God promises to prosper our work & businesses:	186
11. God supplies our needs, not always our wants:	187
Trials, Temptations & Tribulations	188
1. Trials & tests are to be expected:	188
2. Trials often result when things don't go our way:	188
3. Why the Lord allows you to have trials & tests:	190

4. Trials over suffering personal loss:.....	192
5. Some Bible examples of trials & tests:.....	193
6. Why it's worth it to endure tests & temptations:.....	194
7. Be thankful for your trials & temptations:.....	195
8. Helping others who are going through trials:.....	196
9. Temptations: Where they come from:.....	196
10. Avoiding temptation:.....	197
11. How to resist & overcome temptation:.....	198
12. The Lord will deliver you:.....	200
13. How righteous men fell through temptation:.....	200
14. When tempted by worldly beauty:.....	202
Suffering.....	203
1. Who causes suffering?—God or the devil?.....	203
2. Why does God allow the righteous to suffer?.....	204
3. Some specific reasons that God allows suffering:.....	205
4. Suffering because of obedience & righteousness:.....	206
5. The benefits & good fruits of suffering:.....	206
6. Rewards in Heaven for earthly suffering:.....	208
7. Remember, Jesus also suffered:.....	208
8. The right attitude toward suffering:.....	209
9. Wrong attitudes towards suffering:.....	210
11. Deliverance from suffering:.....	211
12. Your duty toward the suffering & afflicted:.....	212
13. The suffering of the worldly wicked:.....	212
14. Much of the world's suffering is often self-inflicted:.....	213
15. What suffering does for the unsaved or disobedient:.....	214
Comfort.....	215
1. The Lord will help & comfort you:.....	215
2. How to receive God's comfort:.....	216
3. God loves you & cares for you:.....	219
4. God's loving hands uphold you:.....	220
5. If you feel you're in the dark, trust in God for light:.....	220
6. Look on the bright side:.....	220
7. Why & how to comfort one another:.....	221
8. When abandoned, suffering heartbreak or loss:.....	223

9. Heavenly consolation for present suffering & sorrow:	225
Healing	226
1. Healing was part of Jesus' ministry:	226
2. Healing promises are still valid "today":	226
3. It is God's will to heal:	226
4. Nothing is too serious for God to heal:	227
5. Conditions for healing:	228
6. Practical steps in obtaining healing:	228
7. Praying for the sick:	230
8. Fight in the Spirit for your healing:	231
9. Reasons that God allows afflictions & illnesses:	231
10. Points to remember after prayer:	233
11. Miraculous or natural healing?	234
12. No sickness in Heaven:	235
Overcoming the Devil	235
1. Where did the devil come from?	235
2. The devil is under God's control & restrictions:	236
3. Victory over the devil:	237
4. The spiritual warfare:	238
5. The devil's devices:	240
6. Accuser & tempter:	241
7. The devil is a destroyer:	241
8. Judgment of the devil & his demons, & final end:	242
9. Your armour & weaponry to defeat the devil:	243
10. Power, freedom & deliverance from the devil's darkness:	243
11. Our astonishing angelic allies, the hosts of Heaven:	244
Fear Not.....	245
1. The Lord tells you not to fear:	245
2. Trusting in God overcomes fear:	246
3. Some causes of fear:	247
4. What fear can result in:	248
5. How to have peace & freedom from fear:	251
6. The only One you should fear is God:	252
Thankfulness.....	253
1. Having a thankful, grateful attitude:	253

2. Praising the Lord:.....	255
3. Have a continual attitude of praising God:	256
4. Murmuring (complaining) forbidden by God:.....	256
5. Causes of murmuring:.....	256
6. Why murmuring is dangerous:.....	258
7. What to do when problems arise:.....	259
Pride, Self-Righteousness & Humility	260
1. What does God think about pride?.....	260
2. Why is it wrong for us to be proud?	260
3. Some causes of pride:.....	263
4. Warnings against pride:.....	264
5. Self-righteousness: Why is it wrong to think that we—in ourselves—are good & righteous?.....	264
6. Self-righteousness: Why is it wrong to think we—in ourselves—are better than others?	266
7. The humbling of the proud:.....	267
8. Why we should want to be humble:.....	268
9. Keeping a humble attitude:.....	270
10. Humility with one another:	270
11. The solution:.....	271
Power of the Tongue, The	272
1. The power of positive speech:	272
2. Silence & restrained speech:.....	275
3. The damage an uncontrolled tongue will do:.....	277
4. Foolish & evil speech:	278
5. Controlling your tongue:	279
6. Gossiping, backbiting & slander:.....	280
7. The punishment for gossiping:.....	281
8. How to avoid criticising & gossiping about others:.....	282
9. Warning against judging others:.....	283
10. What to do when others speak evil of you:	283
11. Arguments & contentions:.....	284
12. Lying, deceit & bearing false witness:	287
Unity	288
1. Unity or disunity?.....	288

2. How to work at keeping united:.....	289
3. The fruits of unity:	292
4. Unity of believers in Jesus:	292
5. Causes of disunity:.....	293
6. What disunity results in:.....	295
7. How to deal with disunity:	296
8. Excommunication:	297
9. Restoration to fellowship:.....	297
10. When contentions & disputes are necessary:	298
Discipleship	298
1. What is a disciple?.....	298
2. A disciple's job:.....	299
3. A disciple is one who obeys the Master:.....	300
4. Dedicating oneself totally to the Lord:.....	300
5. The decision to dedicate oneself to Christ as a disciple:.....	301
6. Different ministries of disciples:	302
7. Discipleship & family obligations:	303
8. Discipleship & "losing your own life":.....	303
9. The path the disciple follows:	304
10. The life of a disciple:	305
11. The benefits of discipleship:.....	306
12. Jesus' last words & prayer for His disciples:	307
Christian's Relationship to Worldly Society, The.....	307
1. Christians do not belong to this world (society):.....	307
2. Though in this world, we are not to be part of it:	308
3. Our attitude toward worldly values:	310
4. If possible, live peaceably with others in order to win them to the Lord:	312
5. Caution against compromising with the world:	313
6. The importance of an honest, sincere example:.....	313
7. Secular work & employment:.....	315
8. The work of pastors, full-time Christian workers & missionaries:.....	316
9. A Christian's relationship to worldly governments:.....	317
10. The governments of man:	318
11. Christians & secular educational systems:.....	318
Persecution.....	319

1. Persecution promised to all followers of Jesus:	319
2. Benefits of persecution:	320
3. Attitude to have during persecution:	322
4. Reasons why persecutors attack Christians:	324
5. How: Persecutors usually begin with verbal attacks:	327
6. Persecution from family & friends:	329
7. The world persecuted & rejected Jesus:	329
8. Compromising, fleeing & avoiding persecution:	330
9. God will judge your persecutors:	332
10. Endtime persecution:	333
Backsliding	333
1. Spiritual problems that lead to backsliding:	334
2. How the Lord views those who turn their backs on Him:	337
3. The danger of fellowshiping with those who have turned away from the Lord:	338
4. God's punishment of those who forsake Him:	338
5. God's promises of mercy to those who return to Him:	339
6. Attitude for repentant prodigals to have:	339
7. How to avoid backsliding:	340
8. The attitude to have towards backsliders:	344
Christianity in Crisis	345
1. Predictions of a great apostasy in the last days:	345
2. Ignorance of the Word of God:	346
3. Doctrines & traditions of man vs. God's Word:	347
4. The dwelling place of God:	348
5. The danger of complacency:	349
6. Disobedience to the great commission:	350
7. Failure to shepherd the flock:	351
8. Warning against coveting financial gain:	352
9. Warnings against hypocrisy:	352
10. Religious persecution:	354
Law of Christ, The	354
1. Salvation is purely by grace, not works:	354
2. What was the Mosaic law?	355
4. Atonement (payment) for breaking the law:	358
5. The new law, the law of Christ:	358

6. Now the commandment is to love God & our neighbour:	360
7. Living the new law:	361
8. Warnings against misusing the new law:	361
9. Beware of falling into religious legalism:	362
10. Trying to legalistically keep the law is not God's will:	363
11. Even under the Mosaic law, God's love & mercy prevailed:	364
Creation vs. Evolution	365
1. God created the world, not chance evolution:	365
2. God's Word created (& maintains) the universe:	365
3. God's creation is proof of His existence:	366
4. Jesus believed in & quoted from Genesis:	366
5. False science doesn't have the answers:	366
6. The Bible & true science:	366
7. God, as the Creator, has rights of ownership of everything:	368
8. He expects & deserves reverence & worship from His creations:	368
9. God has power to control His creation:	368
10. As Creator, God is above all "gods":	369
Endtime, The	369
1. The last days; signs of the times:	369
2. How to recognise the Antichrist world government:	371
3. The Antichrist & his rise:	371
4. Signing of the covenant:	371
5. Breaking of the covenant & daily sacrifice (Jewish worship) stopped:	372
6. Great tribulation:	372
7. The second coming of Jesus Christ:	374
8. The resurrection & rapture:	375
9. The marriage supper of the Lamb:	376
10. The judgment seat of Christ:	376
11. The wrath of God upon the earth:	377
12. The battle of Armageddon:	377
13. The millennium:	378
14. The battle of Gog & Magog:	380
15. Great white throne judgment:	380
16. New heaven & new earth:	381
Marriage & the Home	382

1. Marriage:	382
2. A husband's responsibility toward his wife:	383
3. A wife's attributes & responsibilities:	384
4. Duties of wives toward their husbands:	385
5. Spiritual ministries not restricted to men:	386
6. Harmony & marital peace:	387
7. Marriage & lovemaking:	388
8. Marriage vs. celibacy:	389
9. Divorce, remarriage, marital infidelity & forgiveness:	390
10. Parental duties towards their children:	390
11. A word of caution to parents:	392
12. The importance of training your children right:	393
13. Parents as "good shepherds":	393
Children	394
1. Pregnancy:	394
2. The Lord's hand on children before birth:	395
3. The Bible on "the right to life":	396
4. Childbirth:	397
5. Teaching & training your children:	398
6. Children's obedience & disobedience:	400
7. Loving instruction balanced with firm discipline:	400
8. The growing years:	402
9. Children in God's service:	403
10. Becoming like children:	404
Sleep	405
1. Sleep considered a blessing:	405
2. If you can't sleep, pray:	406
3. Some reasons for not being able to sleep:	406
4. Good reasons for missing sleep:	407
5. When it is not good to sleep:	408
6. Trusting the Lord to awaken you:	409
Old Age	409
1. The blessings of old age:	409
2. God's special help in our old age:	410
3. Desiring long life:	410

4. God can mightily use aged believers:	413
5. Strength in old age:	414
6. Cautions regarding old age:	414
7. Joy in children & in grandchildren:	415
Condensed Word Basics	415
SALVATION	416
JESUS CHRIST, THE SON OF GOD	417
THE HOLY SPIRIT	417
THE WORD OF GOD	418
PRAYER	419
FAITH	420
LOVE	421
FORGIVENESS	421
OUR RELATIONSHIP WITH THE LORD	421
FELLOWSHIP	422
WITNESSING	422
GIVING	423
HOW TO FIND THE WILL OF GOD	424
OBEDIENCE TO GOD	425
STRENGTH and POWER	425
PROTECTION	426
SUPPLY	426
TRIALS, TEMPTATIONS and TRIBULATIONS	427
SUFFERING	428
COMFORT	428
HEALING	429
OVERCOMING THE DEVIL	430
FEAR NOT	430
THANKFULNESS	431
PRIDE, SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS and HUMILITY	431
THE POWER OF THE TONGUE	432
UNITY	433
DISCIPLESHIP	433
THE CHRISTIAN'S RELATIONSHIP TO WORLDLY SOCIETY	434
PERSECUTION	434

BACKSLIDING	435
CHRISTIANITY IN CRISIS	435
THE LAW OF CHRIST	436
CREATION VS. EVOLUTION	437

Preface

The purpose of the *BibleBasics* handbook is to clearly outline the basic beliefs that form the foundation for true Biblical Christianity. This book is "a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us...that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave". (Lk.1:1; 1Tim.3:14,15.)

Bible Basics will undoubtedly prove to be a very useful and helpful topical concordance and study aid for all Christians who read it. Familiarizing yourself with the Scriptures herein will deepen your knowledge of God's Word, which will prove to be "a lamp unto your feet and a light unto your path" (Psa.119:105), a continual source of strength and direction.

This handbook will also be a particularly valuable tool to all active witnesses, lay workers and missionaries who wish to instruct new Christians in basic Biblical truths. Pastors & counselors will find it a great help when instructing or counseling others. Parents will also find *Bible Basics* a most helpful tool in bringing up their children in the "nurture and admonition of the Lord". (Eph.6:4.)

It is our hope that the Lord will use this handbook to encourage and strengthen the faith of all of its readers & to open the Scriptures to those who are unfamiliar with them. And most importantly, we hope that it will fulfill its principal purpose of placing a compact Bible manual in the hands of all Christian workers, aiding them to "feed the flock of God which is among them". (1Pet.5:2.)

In a handbook of this nature, it is understood that we were unable to include a comprehensive study on every subject of interest. In order to keep this book down to a useful length, we limited ourselves to include only what we believed to be the most vital and essential sections. The result was a compact teacher's manual that could be easily carried anywhere, rather than a weighty tome which would, by its sheer volume, be limited to desk side study. Many topics that do not appear as individual sections in *Bible Basics* are, however, included as subtopics within the book, and can be located in the topical index.

Explanation of Technical Aspects

As in most other Bible concordances and topical study helps, the Bible verses have not been quoted in their entirety. Our goal was to produce a handy-sized booklet small enough to be carried in a pocket, purse or briefcase as a constant companion. Therefore, to limit the verses to one line each, or two lines

when warranted, we abbreviated them. We have placed ellipses, "... " to indicate when words are omitted.

Parentheses () are used when:

(1) We wanted it to be clear who or what was being referred to. For example, Mat.26:44 says, "He prayed the third time, saying the same words". We quote it as, "(Jesus) prayed the third time..."

(2) Parentheses are also used to give the exact or current meaning of a word in cases where the old English of the Authorized Version is not entirely clear. An example is Psa.23:1, "The Lord is my shepherd, I shall not want (lack)."

(3) Where we changed the tense of a word simply for the sake of easier reading—such as in the case of Isa.57:15, where "dwell" was changed to "(dwells)": "The high and lofty One that inhabiteth Eternity...(dwells) with him that is of a contrite and humble spirit".

Brackets [] are used when:

(1) A Scripture passage was too lengthy or difficult to merely abbreviate, such as when an entire story is referred to, and a simple summary was sufficient to explain what the passage was about.

(2) When something is not stated in a verse, but is implied.

Verse references which have been placed in parentheses at the end of a section indicate verses which, though good, are perhaps not quite as important or as clear on the subject as the spelled-out abbreviated verses. When these "See also" verses appear at the end of a section, they are on the same general subject as the rest of the verses in that particular section. When a "See also" reference appears on the same line as a verse that means that it refers specifically to the same subject as that particular verse.

Sometimes the verse references refer to either the first part of a verse (a) or the latter part of it (b). A good example of this would be Neh.8:10b, which says, "The joy of the Lord is your strength." Neh.8:10 is a rather long verse, and the first part is not closely related to the point brought out in the second part. Therefore, to help you easily locate and mark this part of the verse in your Bible, the Scripture reference simply refers you to the last or "b" part of the verse.

To save space and to enable us to fit a verse on one line, we have overall substituted ampersands ("&") for the word, "and". For this same reason, "w/" was occasionally used instead of "with".

Note to Teachers

Many of these sections are rather lengthy and will take several hours to go through in a Bible study group. Therefore, we suggest that you familiarize yourself with the material before teaching it to others, so that you can tailor your classes according to the needs of your students, as well as to the time they have available.

If you have regular Bible study meetings composed of students who have the time and the desire to study all of the verses contained in these lessons, then, of course, the lengthier sections will pose no problems to you. But if you don't have several days or many hours to teach some of these sections, we recommend that you prepare to teach a more abbreviated version, touching on only the most important verses which best bring out the key principles and Scriptures you wish to get across to your class. When studying and familiarizing yourself with a section, you'll find that underlining, highlighting or somehow marking what you feel are the most important verses will make it easier for you to deliver condensed versions of that lesson to those you are teaching.

Remember also that stories and actual Bible examples will often help your students to visualize the principles you are discussing. So if a section contains Bible stories or examples, you may want to choose ahead of time which ones you wish to cover in your class.

Something else to consider is that when sharing or teaching a section with a class for the first time, you may not always want to teach the entire exhaustive version even if your students do have the time. The reason for this is because some of the material may not be simple enough. For example, in the section, "Jesus Christ, the Son of God", although most of it is very basic to Christian belief and should be taught early, some of it—though no less true—is quite a bit deeper and what some might call a bit more "theological". Therefore, in order to avoid your class possibly getting bogged down in some rather deep and difficult-to-understand details the first time around, you may prefer to cover the simplest and most basic verses first, then go back to the deeper points later, after your class has been through all the most basic material.

Some verses are so basic to a certain topic they have been included more than once in some sections. We tried to use each Bible verse only once per section, but when a particular passage contributed an important thought to more than one subtopic within a section, it was included more than once. So though you will find a certain amount of repetition, it should be minimal.

TOPICS:

Salvation

1. All men are sinners:

Rom.3:23For **all** have sinned & come short of the glory of God

Eccl.7:20Not a just man on earth, that...sinneth not

Isa.64:6All our righteousnesses are as filthy rags

Rom.3:10There is none righteous, no not one

Jam.2:10Whoever shall offend in one point (of law), guilty of all

1Jn.1:8If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves

2. Salvation by grace (undeserved mercy), not works:

Eph.2:8,9For by **grace** are ye saved through faith, not of yourselves...not of works

Mk.10:25-27Who can be saved? With men it is impossible

Rom.3:20aBy deeds of law shall **no** flesh be justified in His sight

Rom.11:6And if by grace, then is it no more of works

Gal.2:16Justified by the faith of Christ & not by works of the law

2Tim.1:9Saved us, **not** according to our works, but according to His grace

Tit.3:5Not by works of righteousness which we have done

3. Salvation only through Jesus:

Acts 4:12None other name...whereby we must be saved

1Tim.2:5One mediator between God & men...Christ Jesus

Jn.3:16God...gave His **only** begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him, should...have everlasting life

Jn.3:36bHe that believeth not the Son shall not see life

Jn.8:24If ye believe not that I am **He**, ye shall die in your sins

Jn.10:1He that entereth not by the door...but climbeth up some other way...is a thief & a robber

Jn.10:9I am the door: by **Me** if any man enter in...be saved

Jn.14:6I am the way, the truth, & the life: no man cometh unto the Father but by **Me**

1Cor.3:11For other foundation can no man lay than... Jesus Christ

1Jn.5:12He that hath not the Son of God hath not life

4. Believe on Jesus:

Jn.3:16Whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life

Jn.11:25,26I am the resurrection & the life...whosoever believ eth in Me shall never die

Acts 16:31Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, & thou shalt be saved

Rom.10:9,10If thou shalt...believe in thine heart...thou shalt be saved

1Jn.5:1aWhosoever believeth Jesus is the Christ is born of God

5. Receive Jesus:

Rev.3:20If any man...open the door, I **will** come in to him

Jn.1:12But as many as **received** Him...power to become sons

Gal.4:6God hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your heart

Eph.3:17That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith

6. Eternal salvation:

A. You can never lose it, even if you make mistakes & fall:

Psa.37:24Though he fall, he shall not be utterly cast down: for the Lord unholdeth him with His hand

Jn.3:36aHe that believeth on the Son...hath everlasting life

Jn.6:37Him that cometh to Me I will in no wise cast out

Jn.10:28I give unto them eternal life; & they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of My hand

Rom.8:38,39I am persuaded that [nothing] shall be able to separate us from the love of God...in Christ Jesus

1Cor.3:11-15[If works are] wood, hay & stubble...shall be burned, yet he himself shall be saved

1Cor.5:5Destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved

Heb.13:5bI will never leave thee, nor forsake thee

2Tim.2:13Though we believe not, yet He abideth faithful

1Jn.5:13Ye may know that ye **have** eternal life

B. But the Lord will chasten you for wrongdoing:

Psa.89:30-34 If they break My statutes...I will visit with the rod...(but) My lovingkindness will I not utterly take away

Heb.12:5-8 Whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth, & scourgeth every son whom He receiveth

Rev.3:19 As many as I love, I rebuke & chasten

7. Receiving Jesus guarantees eternal life in Heaven:

Rom.6:23b The gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ

Jn.11:26 Whosoever...believeth in Me shall never die

Jn.14:2-3 In My Father's house are many mansions

1Pet.1:3,4 Incorruptible inheritance reserved in Heaven for you

1Jn.5:11 God hath given to us eternal life...in His Son

(See Rev.21:1-27 & 22:1-5 for a description of Heaven)

8. The results of being born again:

A. Spiritual rebirth makes you a new creature:

Jn.3:3b Except a man be born again, he cannot see Kingdom

Mat.18:3 Be converted & become as little children

Jn.1:13 Born, not of blood, nor of the will of man, but of God

Rom.12:2a Be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind

2Cor.5:17 If any man be in Christ, he is a new creature

1Pet.1:23 Born again, not of corruptible seed, but...by the Word of God

B. You will desire to work for Jesus:

Eph.2:10 We are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works

Tit.2:14 (Jesus) gave Himself for us (to) purify unto Himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works

(See also Eph.4:21-24; Col.3:8-10; Tit.3:8; Jam.2:18.)

9. Sin brings about spiritual death; but Jesus died in our place, taking our punishment:

Isa.59:2 Your iniquities have separated you and your God

Rom.6:23 The wages of (penalty for) sin is death

Rom.5:8 While we were sinners, Christ died for us

2Cor.5:21 He hath made Him (Jesus) to be sin for (in place of) us

1Jn.1:9 If we confess our sins, He [will] forgive & cleanse us

1Jn.2:1,2 We have an advocate...Jesus Christ. He is the propitiation for...the sins of the whole world

10. In the Mosaic law, blood is payment for sin; Jesus' death paid that price in full:

Lev.17:11 It is the **blood** that maketh atonement for the soul

Heb.9:22 Without shedding of blood is no remission [of sin]

Mat.26:28 My blood...shed for the remission of sins

1Jn.1:7 The blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth us from all sin

Jn.1:29 The Lamb of God, which taketh away sin of the world

Eph.1:7 We have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins (See also 1Jn.2:12)

1Pet.1:18,19 Ye were **redeemed**...with the precious blood of Christ

11. All men are not saved sons of God in their natural state:

Eph.2:2,3,12 Ye were children of disobedience, children of wrath, aliens and strangers without Christ

Mat.7:13 Wide is the gate...that leadeth to destruction, & **many**... go in thereat

Jn.3:19 Light is come into the world, & men loved darkness rather than light

Jn.8:44 Ye are of your father the devil

Jn.8:47 Ye hear (God's Words) not, because ye are not of God

12. The self-righteous refuse Jesus' salvation:

(See Mat.5:20; 9:10-13; 21:31b; Lk.18:9-14; Jn.5:39-44; Rom.10:3; 1Jn.1:9,10.)

13. New Testament examples of salvation:

Lk.19:1-10[Conversion of the corrupt tax-collector, Zaccheus]

Acts 9:1-22[Conversion of apostle Paul] (See also Acts 6:8-14; 7:57-60; 8:1-4; 26:9-11.)

Acts 10:1-8[Conversion of Roman centurion Cornelius]

Acts 13:1-12[Conversion of governor of Cyprus, Sergius Paulus]

Acts 16:13-34[Conversion of the merchant Lydia & Roman jailor]

Jesus Christ, The Son of God

1. Jesus' Father, God, is the Eternal Spirit & Creator:

A. God has always existed & always will:

Exo.3:14God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM

Psa.90:2From everlasting to everlasting, Thou art God

Psa.102:24b-27The heavens...shall perish, but Thou shalt endure... Thou art the same, & Thy years shall have no end

Rev.1:8I am Alpha & Omega, the beginning & the ending...which is, & which was, & which is to come, the Almighty

(See also Isa.41:4)

B. God is an immortal, invisible Spirit:

Jn.4:24God is a Spirit: they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit & in truth

1Tim.1:17Unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour & glory

(See also 2Cor.3:17a; Heb.11:27.)

C. He fills the entire universe:

2Chr.2:6Who is able to build Him an house (temple), seeing the heaven & the Heaven of heavens cannot contain Him?

Psa.139:7-10 Whither shall I flee from Thy presence? Thou art there

Acts 7:48,49 Heaven is My throne, & earth is My footstool

Acts 17:24-29 In Him we live, & move, & have our being

(See also 1Ki.8:27; 2Chr.6:18; Isa.66:1.)

D. He is the only true God:

Isa.43:10,11 I am He: before Me there was no God...neither shall there be after Me

Isa.44:6,8 I am the first, & the last; beside Me there is no God

Isa.45:21b,22 There is no God else beside Me...I am God, & there is none else

E. He created the world, the universe, & man:

Gen.1:1 In the beginning God created the heaven & the earth

Gen.1:26,27 God created man in His Own image...male & female

Gen.2:7 God formed man of the dust of the ground

(See also Isa.45:18; 48:13; Acts 17:24-26.)

F. His understanding & power are infinite:

Psa.139:4 There is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O Lord, Thou knowest it altogether

Psa.147:5 Great is our Lord...His understanding is infinite

Isa.40:13-18 All nations before Him are as nothing...less than nothing, & vanity

Isa.40:28b There is no searching of His understanding

Rom.11:33 O the depth of...the wisdom & knowledge of God!

G. God is far beyond man's limited ability to understand:

Isa.55:8,9 As the heavens are higher than the earth, so are...My thoughts (higher) than your thoughts

H. God has a wonderful & beautiful plan for man:

1Cor.2:9 Neither have entered into heart of man, the [wonderful] things God hath prepared for them that love Him

(See also Isa.64:4)

I. But sinful man is estranged from God:

Rom.3:23For **all** have sinned, & come short of the glory of God

Eccl.7:20Not a just man on earth, that...sinneth not

Isa.59:2Your iniquities have separated between you & your God

J. God loved man & wanted him to have salvation:

Mat.18:14It is not the will of (God) that one...should perish

2Pet.3:9The Lord is...not willing that **any** should perish (See also Ezk.18:23,32; 33:11.)

2. Why God sent Jesus into the world:

A. God sent Jesus to show us a picture of what He is like:

Col.1:13b,15His dear Son: Who is the image (perfect picture) of the invisible God

Heb.1:3The brightness of His (God's) glory, & the express (clearly communicated) image of His person

2Cor.4:4bChrist, Who is the image of God

B. In knowing Jesus, we can know & understand God:

Jn.8:19If ye had known Me, ye should have known My Father

Jn.14:7-9He that hath seen Me hath seen the Father

(See also Jn.12:45)

C. God showed us His love by sending Jesus to earth:

Jn.3:16God so loved the world, that He gave His only...Son

Rom.5:8God commendeth His love toward us, in that...Christ [came into the world &] died for us

1Jn.4:8b-10The love of God...God sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him

(See also Eph.2:4-7)

D. Jesus showed us God's love by dying for us:

Jn.10:11 I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth His life for the sheep

Jn.15:13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends

E. Jesus' death paid the price for our sins, & if we believe in Him, we receive God's gift of salvation:

1Tim.1:15 Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners

Lk.19:10 The Son of man is come to seek & to save that which was lost (See also Mat.9:13)

Jn.3:17 God sent not His Son into the world to condemn world; but that the world through Him might be **saved**

Rom.5:6-11 We were reconciled to God by the death of His Son

1Jn.3:5 He was manifested to take away our sins

1Jn.4:14 The Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world

Rev.5:9b Thou wast slain, & redeemed us to God by Thy blood

(See also 1Cor.15:3; Eph.1:7; 2:12-18; 1Thes.5:9,10; Heb.9:12,14,26b,28; 10:12,14; 1Jn.4:9,10; Rev.1:5b.)

3. More reasons why God sent Jesus into the world:

A. To proclaim the truth:

Jn.18:37b For this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth

B. To destroy the power of the devil:

1Jn.3:8 For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil

Heb.2:14b,15 That...He (Jesus) might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil

(See also 1Cor.15:54-57)

C. To know our human weaknesses & to sympathise with us:

Heb.2:16-18 Made like unto His brethren...in that He himself hath suffered being tempted, He is able to succour them

Heb.4:15(He was) touched with the feeling of our infirmities: Lk.2:40 (growing up); Lk.4:2 (hunger); Lk.8:23 (need for sleep); Lk.9:58 (poverty); Jn.4:6,7 (weariness & thirst); Mat.26:37 (sorrow).

4. Jesus' teachings & personal example:

A. Jesus' teachings were with power & authority:

Lk.4:32They were astonished at His doctrine: for His word was with power (See also Mat.7:28,29)

Jn.7:46Never man spake like this man

B. Jesus' message was love:

Mat.22:37-39Thou shalt love the Lord..thou shalt love thy neighbour

Jn.13:34,35A new commandment I give you, That ye love one another

Jn.15:12Love one another, as I have loved you

(See also Jn.15:17; 17:26; 1Jn.3:11.)

C. Jesus' humility:

Phi.2:5-8(He) made Himself of no reputation, & took...the form of a servant...humbled Himself

Mat.11:29Learn of Me; for I am meek & lowly in heart

Lk.22:27I am among you as He that serveth

Jn.13:3-15[Jesus' humble example of washing His disciples' feet]

D. He befriended & won sinners & outcasts of society:

Mat.9:9-13Jesus sat at meat (ate with) many publicans & sinners Lk.7:36-48 [Jesus confounded a Pharisee by allowing a sinful woman to touch, wash & kiss His feet as He was eating]

Lk.19:2-10[Jesus ate with & forgave a despised tax collector]

Lk.23:39-43[Jesus forgave the penitent thief dying with Him]

Jn.8:1-11[Jesus forgave the woman caught in adultery]

5. Jesus, the way to salvation:

A. Jesus is the only way to God:

Jn.1:29**The** Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world

Jn.14:6I am the way, the truth,& the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me

Acts 4:12Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name...whereby we must be saved

1Tim.2:5**One** mediator between God & men, Christ Jesus

1Jn.5:11God hath given to us eternal life, & this life is in His Son

(See also Jn.8:51; 10:7-9; 17:2,3.)

B. Jesus has the power to give us eternal life:

Jn.5:26As the Father hath life in Himself; so hath He given to the Son to have life in Himself

Jn.1:4In Him was life; & the life was the light of men

Jn.3:16Whosoever believeth in Him...have everlasting life

Jn.5:24He that believeth hath everlasting life, &...is passed from death unto life

Jn.6:40Every one which...believeth on Him (has) everlasting life

Jn.6:47He that believeth on Me hath everlasting life

Jn.6:48,50,51I am the living bread...if any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever

Jn.10:28I give unto them eternal life; & they shall never perish

Jn.11:25I am the resurrection, & the life

Jn.17:2,3This is life eternal, that they might know...Jesus Christ

Rom.6:23The gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ

Heb.5:9He (Jesus) became the author of eternal salvation

1Jn.5:12,13He that hath the Son hath life...you that believe on the name of the Son of God...have eternal life

C. When we receive Jesus, God dwells in our hearts:

1Jn.4:15Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, & he in God
(See also Jn.13:20b)

D. God's sheep will hear Jesus' voice & come to Him:

Jn.5:23 All men should honour the Son, **even** as they honour the Father

Jn.6:45 Every man that...learned of the Father, cometh unto Me

Jn.8:42 If God were your Father, ye would love Me (Jesus)

Jn.10:3,5,27 My sheep hear My voice...& they follow Me

E. God loves us if we love Jesus:

Jn.14:21,23 He that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father

Jn.16:27 The Father Himself loveth you, because ye loved Me

F. Those that hate Jesus, also hate God:

Jn.15:23,24 He that hateth Me (Jesus) hateth My Father also...now have they both seen & hated both Me & My Father

G. What rejecting Jesus means:

Jn.3:36b He that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him

Jn.3:18 He that believeth not (on Jesus) is condemned already

Jn.3:19,20 This is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, & men loved darkness rather than light

Jn.8:24 If ye believe not that I am He, ye shall die in your sins

Jn.12:48 He that rejecteth Me...hath one that judgeth him : the Word...shall judge him in the last day

1Jn.2:22,23 Whosoever denieth the Son...hath not the Father

1Jn.5:12b He that hath not the Son of God hath not life

6. Jesus, the light of the world:

A. Jesus is the true Light:

Jn.1:9 That was that true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world

Jn.8:12 I am the light of the world: he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness (See also Jn.9:5)

Mat.4:16The people which sat in darkness saw great light...in the region & shadow of death light is sprung up

Lk.2:30-32A light to lighten the (nations) (See also Isa.49:6)

1Jn.2:8The darkness is past, & the true light now shineth

(See also Acts 26:18)

B. The devil & evil men hate the true Light:

(See 2Cor.4:4; Jn.1:5; 3:19-21.)

7. Jesus' life & resurrection are a fact:

A. The facts of His life & death were recorded by eyewitnesses:

2Pet.1:16We have **not** followed cunningly devised fables, when we [told of the] coming of Jesus, but were eyewitnesses

Lk.1:1,2Those things which are most surely believed among us... they [told] us, which were...eyewitnesses

Jn.19:25,26,34,35He (John) that **saw** it [Jesus' crucifixion] bare record, & his record is true: & he **knoweth** that he saith true

Acts 4:20We cannot but speak the things which we have **seen**

Acts 10:38,39We are witnesses of **all** things which He did

(See also Jn.21:24,25; Acts 5:32; Heb.2:3; 1Jn.1:1-3a.)

B. His resurrection from the dead is a fact:

Acts 1:2,3He showed Himself alive after His passion (death) by **many** infallible proofs, being seen of them **40 days**

Acts 2:31,32Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses

Acts 13:30,31God raised Him (Jesus) from the dead: & He was seen many days of them...His witnesses

1Cor.15:3-6He rose again...He was seen of above 500 brethren at once (See also Acts 10:40,41)

C. His resurrection proves that He is divine:

Rom.1:3,4 Jesus Christ our Lord was...declared to be the Son of God with power...by the resurrection from the dead

8. Eyewitness accounts in the Bible tell us that:

A. Jesus was crucified:

(See Mat.27:27-50; Mk.15:15-37; Lk.23:23-49; Jn.19:16-30.)

B. He was buried in a grave for three days:

(See Mat.27:57-66; Mk.15:42-47; Lk.23:50-56; Jn.19:31-42; Acts 13:28,29.)

C. He was resurrected from the dead:

(See Mat.28:1-18; Mk.16:1-14; Lk.24:1-43; Jn.20:all; 21:all; Acts 2:23, 24,32; 3:14,15; 10:39-41; 13:29-31; 1Cor.15:3-8; Rev.1:18.)

D. He was then taken up into Heaven:

(Mk.16:19; Lk.24:50,51; Acts 1:4-11.)

9. Old Testament Messianic prophecies:

—Fulfilled in the birth, death & life of Jesus Christ:

Lk.24:44 All things...fulfilled (in Scriptures) concerning Me

A. His lineage foretold:

Gen.3:15 [He would be the "seed of a woman"—Gal.4:4; Lk.2:7]

Gen.18:18 [The promised seed of Abraham—Mat.1:1] (Also compare Gen.17:5-7 & Gal.3:16,19)
(Also compare Gen.28:13,14b & Acts 3:25,26)

Gen.17:15,19 [The promised seed of Isaac—Mat.1:1,2]

Num.24:17 [The promised seed of Jacob—Mat.1:2; Lk.3:34]

Gen.49:10 [He was to descend from the tribe of Judah—Lk.3:33]

Isa.9:6,7 [Heir to the throne of David—Mat.1:1; Acts 2:29,30]

B. His birth & childhood:

Mic.5:2 [His birthplace, Bethlehem in Judah, prophesied—Mat. 2:1-6; Lk.2:4-7; Jn.7:42]

Isa.7:14[Born of a virgin—Mat.1:18; Lk.1:26-35]

Jer.31:15[Massacre of infants—Mat.2:16-18]

Hos.11:1[God's Son to be called out of Egypt—Mat.2:13,14, 19-21]

C. His ministry & rejection:

Isa.9:1,2[His ministry in Galilee—Mat.4:12-16]

Psa.110:4[An eternal priest, like Melchizedek—Heb. 6:20; 7:11- 16; 20-26]

Isa.53:3[Rejection by the Jews—Jn.1:11; 5:43; Lk.17:25; 23:18]

Psa.2:1,2["Rulers took counsel against Him"—Acts 4:25-28; 3:14, 15,17; See also Mat.27:1; Lk.24:20; Jn.11:47,53]

Zech.9:9[His triumphal entry into Jerusalem on a donkey: Jn.12:12-14; Mat.21:1-11]

D. His betrayal:

Psa.41:9[Betrayed by a close friend who ate of His bread—Jn.13: 18; Mk.14:10; Mat.26:14-16,20-23; Mk.14:43-45]

Zech.11:12[Sold for 30 pieces of silver—Mat.26:15; 27:3-10]

Zech.11:13[Money then used to buy a potter's field—Mat.27:3-10]

Psa.109:7,8[Judas' office taken by another—Acts 1:15,16,20-22]

E. His persecution & crucifixion:

Psa.27:12[False witnesses to accuse the Messiah—Mat.26:60,61]

Isa.53:7[Silent when accused—Mat.26:62,63; 27:12-14]

Isa.50:6[Smitten & spat on—Mk.14:65; 15:19; Jn.18:22; 19:1-3]

Isa.53:4,5,8[Suffered for our sins (See also Dan.9:26)—Mat.8:16,17; Rom.4:25; 1Cor.15:3]

Isa.53:12[To die with sinners—Mat.27:38; Mk.15:27,28; Lk.23:33]

Psa.22:16 &[Hands & feet pierced—crucifixion was not practiced by

Zech.12:10the ancient Jews—Jn.19:37; 20:25,26,27]

Dan.9:25[Exact **year** of His death predicted: 30 AD]

Psa.22:6-8[Mocked while dying—Mat.27:39-44; Mk.15:29-32]

Psa.69:21[Given gall & vinegar—Jn.19:29; Mat.27:34,48]

Zech.12:10[His side pierced—Jn.19:34]

Psa.22:18[Soldiers cast lots for His clothes—Mk.15:24; Jn.19:24]

Psa.34:20[Not a bone to be broken—Jn.19:33] (Also Exo.12:46)

Isa.53:9[Buried with the rich—Mat.27:57-60]

F. His resurrection:

Psa.16:10[His resurrection—Mat.28:9; Lk.24:36-48; Acts 2:23-31]

Psa.68:18a[His ascension—Lk.24:50,51; Acts 1:9]

Psa.110:1[Enthroned in Heaven—Acts 2:32-35]

(See Psa.2; 22; Isa.53.) (See also Acts 13:27-29)

10. Jesus, the Son of God:

A. The Old Testament states that God has a Son:

Psa.2:7The **Lord** hath said unto Me, Thou art My **Son**

Pro.30:4Who hath established all the ends of the earth? What is His name, & what is His **Son's** name?

Dan.3:25I see four men...the fourth is like the Son of God

(See also Dan.7:13,14)

B. Jesus declared He was the Son of God, Christ the Messiah:

Mat.16:15-17Thou art the Christ, the Son of...God. Jesus answered, Blessed art thou...My Father (revealed it unto you)

Mat.26:63,64I adjure Thee...tell us whether Thou be the Christ, the Son of God. Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said

Mat.27:43bHe said, I am the Son of God (See also Jn.19:7)

Mk.14:61,62 Art Thou Christ, Son of the Blessed? Jesus said, **I am**

Jn.4:25,26 Woman saith...Messias cometh, which is called Christ. Jesus saith, I that speak unto thee am He

Jn.9:35-38 Jesus said, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? Who is He? Jesus said, It is He that talketh with thee

Jn.10:33,36-38 Because I said, I am the Son of God

(See also Jn.3:16-18,34-36; 5:19,20,25,26; 6:40; 11:4.)

C. He was declared to be the Son of God by others:

Mat.16:15-17 Peter...said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of...God

Mat.27:54 The centurion (said), Truly this was the Son of God

Jn.1:34 [John the Baptist:] I bear record this is the Son of God

Jn.1:40,41 Andrew...saith, We have found the Messias...the Christ

Jn.1:49 Nathanael saith unto Him, Thou art the Son of God

Jn.6:67-69 We...are sure that Thou art that Christ, the Son of God

Jn.11:27 (Martha) saith...I believe that Thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world

D. Even the devils knew He was the Son of God:

(See Mat.8:29; Lk.4:33,34,41.)

E. Jesus called God His Father:

Jn.5:17,18,20 Jesus...said that God was His Father, making Himself equal with God

Jn.8:54 My Father...of whom ye say, that He is your God

(See also Lk.10:22; 22:29; Jn.5:22-31,36,37; 8:16,19, 26-28,38,49; 14:13; 16:28; 17:1-26; 20:17.)

F. God anointed Jesus with power:

Mk.1:27 With authority commandeth He even the unclean spirits, & they do obey Him

Lk.4:16-21 Spirit of the Lord is upon Me...He hath anointed Me

Jn.3:34b God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto Him

Acts 10:38 God anointed Jesus...with the Holy Ghost & with power

11. Jesus' relationship with God:

A. Jesus' closeness to God, His Father:

Jn.1:18 The only begotten Son...is in the bosom of the Father

Jn.16:15 All things that the Father hath are Mine

(See also Jn.15:15)

B. He was with God in His pre-existence in Heaven:

Jn.17:5,24 The glory which I had with Thee before the world was

Jn.8:42b I proceeded forth & came from God...He sent Me

2Cor.8:9 Though He was rich, yet for your sakes He became poor

(See also Jn.1:1; 13:3; 16:28; 17:8,18a.)

C. God loves Jesus & is pleased with Him:

Mat.3:16,17 This is My beloved Son, in Whom I am well pleased

Jn.8:29b I do always those things that please Him

(See also Lk.9:34,35; Jn.15:10.)

D. Jesus is one with His Father:

Jn.10:30 I & My Father are **one**

Jn.10:38b The Father is in Me, & I in Him

Jn.14:9,10a He that hath seen Me hath seen the Father

E. Jesus is God, He is one with the Father:

Isa.9:6 A **child** is born...& His name shall be called...the mighty **God**, the everlasting **Father**, the Prince of Peace

Jn.8:56-58 Before Abraham was, I am (Compare w/ Exo.3:6,13,14)

Jn.20:28,29 Thomas said unto Him, "My Lord & my **God**" [Jesus then commended him for believing]

Col.3:11 Christ is all, & in all

1Tim.3:16 God was manifest in the flesh

Heb.1:8 Unto the **Son** He saith, Thy throne, O **God**, is for ever

Rev.1:8,11a; 22:12,13 I am Alpha & Omega, the beginning & the ending...which is, & which was...the Almighty (Compare w/ Isa.44:6)

F. Yet they are distinct, individual personalities:

1Jn.5:7,8 There are three that bear record in Heaven, the Father, the Word, & the Holy Ghost: & these three are **one**

G. God the Father has preeminence:

Jn.14:28b My Father is **greater** than I

Jn.20:17 I ascend unto My **Father**, & your Father; & to My **God**, & your God (See also Eph.1:17)

1Cor.3:23 Ye are Christ's; & Christ is God's

1Cor.11:3 The head of Christ is God

1Cor.15:24-28 Then shall the Son **also** Himself be subject unto Him... that God may be all in all

(See also Jn.15:1)

H. Jesus' total obedience to the Father:

Jn.4:34 To do the will of Him that sent Me...finish His work

Jn.5:19 The Son can do nothing...but what He seeth (God) do

Jn.5:30 I can of Mine Own self do nothing...I seek not Mine Own will, but the will of the Father

Jn.8:28,29 I do nothing of Myself...I do always those things that please Him (God)

Jn.12:49,50 I have not spoken of Myself; but the Father...gave Me a commandment, what I should say...so I speak

Jn.14:31b As the Father gave Me commandment, even so I do

Phi.2:6-8[Jesus] humbled Himself...obedient unto death

(See also Jn.8:26b,38a,42; 14:10b,24.)

I. Jesus submitted & obeyed utterly:

Mat.26:39,42,44He...fell on His face, & prayed, saying, O My Father... not as I will, but as Thou wilt

(See also Mk.14:35,36; Lk.22:41-44.)

12. The authority & power God has given Jesus:

A. Jesus is seated on the right hand of God in Heaven:

Mk.16:19Was received into Heaven, & sat on right hand of God

Lk.22:69Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God (See also Mat.26:64b)

Rom.8:34Christ...Who is even at the right hand of God, Who also maketh intercession for us

Eph.1:20He raised Him from the dead, & set Him at His Own right hand in the Heavenly places

Heb.1:3bHe...sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high

Rev.3:21bI overcame, & am set down with My Father in His throne

(See also Psa.110:1; Acts 2:32,33a,34; 7:55,56; Col.3:1; 1Pet.3:22a.)

B. God has given all authority to Jesus:

Mat.28:18All power (authority) is given unto Me in Heaven & earth

Dan.7:13,14There was given Him dominion, & glory & a Kingdom, that all nations...should serve Him (See Heb.1:8)

Jn.3:35The Father...hath given all things into His hand

Jn.5:26,27He (hath) given (Jesus)...authority to execute judgment

Eph.1:20-22Set Him...far above all principality, & power, & might, & dominion...& hath put all things under His feet

Phi.2:9-11At the name of Jesus every knee should bow

Col.2:10(Jesus) is the head of all principality & power

1Pet.3:22bAngels & authorities & powers...made subject to Him

Rev.17:14Lord of lords, & King of kings (See also 1Tim.6:15)

(See also Mat.11:27; 26:53; Jn.3:31; Heb.1:4,6; Eph. 1:10; Col.1:18; Rev.1:5a.)

C. Jesus is the King, & the Kingdom of Heaven is His:

(See Mat.13:41; 16:28; 27:11; 25:31,34; Lk.22:29,30; Jn.18:33-37; Col.1:13.)

D. Jesus is Lord:

Jn.13:13Ye call me Master & Lord: & ye say well; for so I am

Acts 2:36God hath made that same Jesus...both Lord & Christ

Phi.2:11Every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord

Rev.19:16KING of Kings, & LORD of Lords (See also 1Tim.6:15; Rev.17:14a.)

E. God has made Him judge of the world:

Mat.16:27The Son of man shall come...& then He shall reward every man according to his works

Mat.25:31-46The Son of man...shall...sit on the throne of His glory: & before Him shall be gathered all nations

Jn.5:22The Father...hath committed **all** judgment unto the Son

Acts 10:42Ordained of God to be the Judge of (the living) & dead

Rom.2:16God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ

F. Jesus will also sit in judgment of Christians:

Rom.14:10We shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ

2Cor.5:10We must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ

Rev.2:23bI am He which searcheth the...hearts: & I will give unto every one of you according to your works

Rev.22:12My reward is with Me, to give every man according as his work shall be

13. Jesus the Creator:

A. God created the universe through Jesus:

Jn.1:1-3,10 In the beginning was the Word (Jesus)...& all things were made by Him...the world was made by Him

Gen.1:1 In the beginning, God created the heaven & the earth

Col.1:15,16 By Him (Jesus) were all things created...all things were created **by Him, & for Him**

Heb.1:2 His Son...by Whom also He made the worlds

Heb.1.8,10 Unto the Son He saith...Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth

B. Jesus upholds all matter in the universe:

Col.1:17 He is before all things, & by Him all things consist

Heb.1:3 Upholding all things by the word of His power

C. All the fullness of God dwells in Jesus:

Col.1:19 That in Him (Jesus) should **all** fulness dwell

Col.2:2b,3 Christ...in Whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom & knowledge

Col.2:9 In Him (Jesus) dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead

D. A description of Jesus' immortal resurrected body:

Rev.1:13-17 The Son of man...eyes as a flame of fire...countenance as the sun [skin glowed like white-hot metal]

14. Titles of Jesus:

Isa.7:14 (Immanuel—"God with us"); Isa.9:6 (Counsellor, The mighty God, the everlasting Father, the Prince of peace); Mat.25:31 (the Son of man); Mat.16:16 (Son of the living God); Lk.5:34,35; Jn.3:29 (the bridegroom); Jn.1:29,36 (The Lamb of God); Jn.1:41 (the Messiah, the Christ); Jn.1:49 (Rabbi, Son of God, King of Israel); Jn.6:35,48,51 (the bread of life); Jn.8:12; 9:5 (the light of the world); Jn.10:7,9 (the door of the sheepfold); Jn.10:11 (the good shepherd); Jn.11:25 (the resurrection & the life); Jn.13:13 (Master & Lord); Jn.14:6 (the way, the truth, & the life); Jn.15:1 (the true vine); 1Cor.2:8 (the Lord of glory); 1Cor.10:4 (the spiritual Rock); Col.2:19 (the Head); 1Tim.6:15 (the blessed & only Potentate, the King of kings, & Lord of lords); Heb.2:10 (the captain of our salvation); Heb.4:14 (great high priest); Heb.12:2 (the author & finisher of our faith); Heb.13:20 (that great shepherd of the sheep); 1Pet.2:4 (a living stone); 1Pet.2:6; Eph.2:20 (a chief corner stone); 1Pet.2:25 (the Shepherd & Bishop of your souls); 1Pet.5:4 (the chief Shepherd); Rev.1:5 (faithful witness, prince of the kings of the earth); Rev.1:8 (Alpha & Omega, the Almighty); Rev.5:5 (the Lion of the tribe of

Judah, the Root of David); Rev.19:11 (Faithful & True); Rev.19:13 (the Word of God); Rev.19:16 (KING of Kings, & LORD of Lords); Rev.22:16 (the root & the offspring of David, & the bright & morning star).

Holy Spirit, The

1. The Holy Spirit's part in our salvation:

A. We must be born of & made alive by the Spirit:

Jn.16:8,9[The Holy Spirit reproves & convicts men of their sin]

Jn.3:5-8Except a man be born of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God

Jn.6:63It is the Spirit that quickeneth (gives life)

Tit.3:5He saved us by the washing of regeneration, & renewing of the Holy Ghost

(See also 2Thes.2:13; Eph.2:1)

B. A measure of God's Spirit is given to us when we're saved:

2Cor.1:22Who hath sealed us, & given us the earnest (deposit) of the Spirit

Eph.1:13,14After ye believed, ye were sealed with the Holy Spirit

Eph.4:30The Holy Spirit, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption

C. The Holy Spirit assures us that we are saved:

Rom.8:16Spirit beareth witness that we are children of God

1Jn.3:24bWe know He abideth in us, by the Spirit

1Jn.4:13Hereby know we that...He (dwelleth) in us, because He hath given us of His Spirit

D. The Holy Spirit testifies Jesus is the truth; "Blasphemy against the Spirit" means rejecting the Spirit's witness:

Jn.15:26The Spirit of truth...shall testify of **Me** (Jesus)

Jn.16:14He (the Spirit) shall glorify **Me**

Mk.3:28,29He that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness (See also Mat.12:31-32)

2. The baptism (or overflowing) of the Holy Spirit:

A. Jesus gives us the Holy Spirit:

Mat.3:11He (Jesus) shall baptise you with the Holy Ghost

Lk.24:49I send the promise of My Father upon you ...ye [shall] be endued (clothed) with power from on high

Jn.7:38,39Out of his belly flow rivers of living water... the Spirit

Jn.14:16I will pray the Father & He shall give you (a) Comforter

Jn.16:7I will send Him (the Comforter) unto you

Acts 2:1-4[Spirit poured out on Christians on day of Pentecost]

B. When Christians receive the baptism of the Spirit:

Acts 8:15-17[Samaritans baptised with the Spirit **after** salvation]

Acts 19:2Have ye received the Holy Ghost **since** ye believed? They said, We have not

Acts 10:44-46[Cornelius' household was filled with the Holy Spirit at the **same** time they received Jesus]

C. Receiving the Holy Spirit:

Acts 19:1,2Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed?

Lk.11:9-13If ye know how to give good gifts...how much **more** shall (God) give Holy Spirit to them that **ask** Him?

1Cor.6:19Your **body** is the temple of the Holy Ghost (See also 1Cor.3:16)

Eph.5:18bBe **filled** with the Spirit

D. The Spirit is often given by "laying on of hands":

Acts 8:15-17[Peter & John laid hands on the Samaritan believers]

Acts 19:6[Paul laid hands on the Ephesian believers]

3. The purpose of the Holy Spirit baptism:

A. The Holy Spirit anoints us with power to witness:

Acts 1:8Ye shall receive **power** after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you & ye shall be **witnesses** unto Me

Lk.4:18The Spirit of the Lord hath anointed me to preach the gospel (See also Isa.61:1,2)

Jn.15:26The Spirit of truth...shall testify of Me (Jesus)

Acts 4:29,31They were **filled** with the Holy Ghost & spake the Word of God with **boldness**

Acts 5:32Ye are His witnesses, & so is also the Holy Ghost

Mic.3:8I am full of **power** by the Spirit of the Lord...to declare to Israel his sin

B. Transforms us into a new person:

1Sam.10:6The Spirit will come upon thee, and thou shalt...be turned into another man

Psa.51:10-13[Creates a clean heart & a right spirit]

C. Gives us a closer relationship with Jesus:

Eph.5:18,19Be filled with the Spirit...singing & making melody in your heart to the Lord

(See also Jn.14:16-18)

D. Minding the things of the Spirit brings life & peace:

Rom.8:5-7They that are after the Spirit mind things of the Spirit

Gal.5:16,17Walk in the Spirit, & ye shall not fulfil lust of the flesh

E. The Spirit brings forth virtues in our lives:

Gal.5:22,23The fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace [etc.]

Rom.5:5The love of God is shed in our hearts by Holy Ghost

Rom.14:17Righteousness & peace & joy in the Holy Ghost

Rom.15:13Abound in hope through power of the Holy Ghost

1Cor.12:4-11[The Spirit gives us different kinds of spiritual gifts]

F. The Holy Spirit comforts us:

Jn.14:16,26The Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost

Jn.16:7I will send (the Comforter) unto you

Acts 9:31bWalking in the comfort of the Holy Ghost

Rom.8:1There is no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk...after the Spirit

1Pet.4:14If ye be reproached, happy are ye; for the Spirit of God resteth upon you

G. The Holy Spirit & prayer:

Rom.8:26,27We know not what we should pray for...but the Spirit maketh intercession for us according to will of God

Jude 20Building up yourselves...praying in the Holy Ghost

H. The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of truth:

Jn.16:13bWhen the Spirit of truth is come, He will guide you into all truth

1Jn.5:6bThe Spirit beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth

(See also Jn.14:17a; 15:26; 16:13a.)

4. Gifts of the Holy Spirit:

A. The Spirit gives us wisdom & guidance:

Mk.13:11It is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost

Lk.12:11,12The Holy Ghost shall teach you...what ye ought to say

Jn.14:26bHoly Ghost shall teach you all things & bring all things to your remembrance (See also 1Jn.2:27)

Jn.16:13aThe Spirit of truth will guide you into all truth

1Cor.2:9,10God hath revealed them to us by His Spirit...yea, the deep things of God

1Cor.2:12We have received the Spirit that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God

1Cor.2:13We speak words which the Holy Ghost teacheth

1Cor.12:8[The Spirit gives word of wisdom, word of knowledge]

Eph.1:17May God give you the spirit of wisdom & revelation

2Tim.1:13,14Hold fast sound words...keep by the Holy Ghost

B. The Holy Spirit gives us the gift of prophecy:

1Cor.12:7a,10To one is given by the Spirit...prophecy

Jn.16:13bSpirit of truth will show you things to come

Acts 2:17,18I will pour out of My Spirit...your sons & your daughters shall prophesy (See also Joel 2:28,29.)

2Pet.1:21Prophecy came...[when] men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost

C. The Holy Spirit gives us discernment:

Isa.11:2,3The Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him...he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes

1Cor.2:12-15[We have received the Spirit of God and can spiritually discern matters]

1Cor.12:10[Gives gift of discernment of spirits] (Also 1Jn.4:1-6)

D. The Spirit gives faith, healing & miracles:

1Cor.12:9To another **faith** by the same Spirit; to another gifts of **healing** by same Spirit

1Cor.12:10To another the working of **miracles**

E. The Spirit leads & checks (restrains) us:

Acts 8:29[Specific directions:] The Spirit said to Philip

Acts 16:6,7[Restrains:] The Spirit suffered (permitted) them not

Rom.8:14As many as are **led** by Spirit of God are sons of God

Isa.30:21[Spirit says:] This is the way; walk ye in it

F. The gift of tongues:

Acts 2:1-4Spoke with other tongues as Spirit gave them utterance

1Cor.12:10To another interpretation of tongues (See 1Cor.14:13)

1Cor.12:10,11To another diverse kinds of tongues...all these worketh the Spirit

1Cor.13:1Speak with the tongues of men & of angels

1Cor.14:2He that speaketh in an unknown tongue...in the Spirit he speaketh mysteries

1Cor.14:4He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth (strengthens) himself

G. God's Spirit strengthens us:

Eph.3:16Be strengthened with might by His Spirit in the inner man

(See also Judg.14:6,19; 15:14,15 about Samson.)

5. Freedom of the Holy Spirit:

2Cor.3:17bWhere the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty

Rom.8:2The law of the Spirit...hath made me free from the law of sin & death

Rom.8:15Ye have not received the spirit of bondage to fear, but the Spirit of adoption

Gal.5:18If ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law

2Tim.1:7God hath (given) us the Spirit of power, of love & of a sound mind

6. The Holy Spirit inspires unity of believers:

Acts 4:31,32They were all filled with the Holy Ghost...& the multitude were of one heart, & of one soul

1Cor.12:13By the Spirit are we all baptized into one body

2Cor.13:14The communion of the Holy Ghost be with you all

7. Other points about the ministry of the Spirit:

Acts 8:17-20[The Holy Spirit cannot be bought; it's a gift]

Acts 20:28Feed the flock...Holy Ghost hath made you overseers

Rom.8:11He shall quicken (make alive, resurrect) your bodies by His Spirit that dwelleth in you

8. Obeying the Holy Spirit:

A. The Holy Spirit is given to the obedient:

Pro.1:23 Turn at My reproof, I will pour out My Spirit unto you

Acts 5:32 The Holy Ghost, Whom God hath given to them that **obey** Him

B. Obey the Spirit once you are Spirit-filled:

Gal.5:25 If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit

1Pet.1:22 Seeing that ye obey the truth through the Spirit... see that ye love one another

Rev.2:29 Hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches

C. Warnings to obey the Spirit & not resist it:

Rom.8:5-6 [Living according to Spirit is life & peace; being carnally minded causes death]

1Cor.2:14 The natural (carnal) man receiveth not the things of the Spirit, for they are foolishness unto him

Eph.4:29,30 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, grieve not the Holy Spirit

1Thes.5:19 Quench not the Spirit

Heb.3:7-10 The Holy Ghost saith, Harden not your hearts

D. Results of resisting the Holy Spirit:

Gen.6:3a My Spirit shall not always strive with man

Isa.63:10 They rebelled & vexed (grieved) His Holy Spirit, therefore He...fought against them

Acts 7:51-53 Ye do always resist the Holy Ghost [resulting in them persecuting the prophets & disobeying God]

Acts 20:22,23 [Paul ignored the Spirit's warnings, resulting in imprisonment & finally being beheaded—See also 21:10-14]

9. The Holy Spirit in Jesus' life:

Mat.1:18 (Mary was with child of the Holy Ghost); Mat.1:20 (Jesus was conceived of the Holy Ghost); Lk.3:21,22 (Holy Ghost anointed Him); Lk.4:1 (Jesus' ministry began with Him being full of the Holy Ghost); Acts 10:38 (God anointed Jesus with Holy Ghost & power); Jn.3:34b (God gave Him the Spirit without measure); Lk.4:1 (Jesus was **led** by the Spirit into the wilderness); Mat.12:28 (He cast out devils by the Spirit); Rom.8:11; 1Pet.3:18 (The Spirit raised Jesus from the dead).

10. Other Bible examples:

A. Examples of being filled with the Holy Spirit:

Exo.31:2-5 (Bezaleel); 1Sam.10:6,9,10 (Saul); 1Sam.16:13 (David); Lk.1:15 (John the Baptist); Lk.1:41,42 (Elizabeth); Lk.1:67 (Zacharias); Lk.2:25,26 (Simeon); Lk.4:1 (Jesus); Acts 2:1-4; (Christians on the day of Pentecost); Acts 6:3-5,7 (Early church deacons); Acts 9:17 (Paul); Acts 11:22-24 (Barnabus anointed to teach).

B. The Spirit's anointing of power in time of need:

Acts 4:8 (Peter anointed to preach); Acts 4:29-31 (Early church prayed during persecution & was filled); Acts 7:55 (Stephen's witness); Acts 13:9-11 (The Spirit empowered Paul to smite the sorcerer with blindness); Acts 13:50-52 (Persecuted disciples were filled with the Holy Ghost).

Key chapters about the Holy Spirit: Jn.14, Acts 2, Rom.8.

Word of God, The

1. The Bible was written by divine inspiration:

2Tim.3:16 **All** Scripture is given by inspiration of **God**

1Thes.2:13 Ye received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the Word of God

Heb.1:1 God...spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets

2Pet.1:21 Men of God spake as they were moved by Holy Ghost

2. God's Word is eternally true & never fails:

1Ki.8:56 There hath not failed one word of all His good promise

Psa.119:89 Forever, O Lord, Thy Word is settled in Heaven

Psa.119:160 Every one of Thy judgements endureth forever

Isa.40:8 The Word of God shall stand forever

Isa.55:10,11 So shall My Word be...it shall accomplish...& prosper

Mat.24:35 Heaven & earth shall pass away, but My Words [never]

Jn.10:35bThe Scripture cannot be broken (cancelled, annulled)

1Pet.1:25The Word of the Lord endureth forever

3. The Importance of God's Word:

Deut.32:46,47Set your heart unto all the Words...for it is not a vain thing for you; it is your **life**

Psa.138:2bThou (God) hast magnified Thy Word above all Thy name

A. Jesus is the "Word made flesh":

Jn.1:1In the beginning was the Word...& the Word was **God**

Jn.1:14The Word (Jesus) was made flesh & dwelt among us

Rev.19:11-13His (Jesus') name is called the Word of God (See also 1Jn.1:1)

B. The power of the Word:

Jn.6:63The Words that I speak, they are **spirit** & they are **life**

Psa.33:6,9By the the Word of the Lord were the heavens made... He spake, & it was done

Rom.1:16Gospel of Christ...is the power of God unto salvation

Heb.11:3The worlds were framed by the Word of God

2Pet.3:5-7Earth...by the Word, kept in store, reserved unto fire

4. God's Word is our spiritual weapon:

Eph.6:17The sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God

Jer.5:14I will make My Words in thy mouth fire

Jer.23:29Is not My Word like as a fire? and like a hammer?

Mat.4:4-11Jesus said to (Satan), It is **written**. Then devil leaveth

Heb.4:12Word is quick, & powerful, & sharper than any...sword

1Jn.2:14The Word of God abideth in you, & ye have overcome the wicked one

5. The Bible was written for our benefit:

Psa.102:18This shall be written for the generation to come

Jn.19:35He (John) that saw it bare record...that ye might believe

Jn.20:31These are written that ye might believe

Rom.15:4Written for our learning, that we through...the Scriptures might have hope

1Cor.10:11And they are written for our admonition (See also 1Jn.5:13)

6. Keeping (obeying, heeding) the Word:

A. It's important to heed & keep the Word:

Deut.11:1Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, & keep His...statutes, & His judgments, & His commandments, always

Heb.2:1We ought to give more earnest heed to the (Word)

2Pet.1:19Sure Word...ye do well that ye take heed

B. Obeying & keeping the Word proves we know & love Jesus:

Psa.119:167My soul kept Thy testimonies; I love them exceedingly

Jn.8:31If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My disciples indeed

Jn.14:15If ye love Me, keep My commandments

Jn.14:21,23If a man love Me, he will keep My Words

Jam.1:22-24Be ye doers of the Word, & not hearers only

1Jn.2:3Hereby we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments

1Jn.5:3This is the love of God...keep His commandments

2Jn.6This is love, that we walk after His commandments

Rev.3:8Thou...hast kept My Word, & hast not denied My name

C. The benefits of keeping the Word:

Deut.7:9The Lord...keepeth mercy with them that love Him & keep His commandments

Psa.1:2,3In His law doth he meditate. And he shall...bring forth fruit

Psa.37:31 Law of God is in his heart; none of his steps shall slide

Lk.8:15 They, which...having heard the Word, keep it, bring forth fruit with patience

Lk.11:28 Blessed are they that hear the Word of God & keep it

Jn.15:7 If...My Words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, & it shall be done

Jn.15:10 If ye keep My commandments, ye shall abide in My love

1Jn.2:5 Whoso keepeth His Word, in him verily is the love of God perfected

1Jn.3:24 He that keepeth His commandments dwelleth in Him, & He in him (See also 1Jn.2:24)

D. The Holy Spirit will guide you in the Word:

Psa.25:5 [Pray:] Lead me in Thy truth, & teach me

Jn.14:26 The Holy Ghost...shall teach you, & bring (Words) to your remembrance

Jn.16:13 The Spirit...will guide you into all truth

1Jn.2:27 The anointing teacheth you of all things (See also Psa.119:18; Ezk.36:27.)

E. Additional verses on the importance of keeping the Word:

Psa.119:2,4,33,34,55,57,60,63,67,88,100,115,129,134,145,146,167,168; Pro.3:1,21; 4:4,13,20-21; 6:20,22; 7:1-3; 19:16; 22:17-18; 28:4,7; 29:18; Eccl.8:5; 12:13.

7. What the Word does for us:

A. Saves us & gives us spiritual rebirth:

Psa.19:7a Law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul

Jam.1:18 Of His Own will begat He us with the Word of truth

Jam.1:21b The engrafted Word...is able to save your souls

1Pet.1:23 Being born again...by the Word of God

2Pet.1:4 Precious promises: by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature

B. The Word gives us faith, truth, wisdom & strength:

Rom.10:17 Faith cometh by hearing...the Word of God

Psa.19:7b Testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple

Psa.119:99, I have more understanding than all my teachers: for

100 Thy testimonies are my meditation

Jn.15:7 If My Words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will

Jn.17:17b Thy Word is truth

Acts 20:32 Word of His grace, which is able to build you up

2Tim.3:15-17 Scriptures...are able to make thee wise

C. Meditating in the Word causes prosperity & success:

Josh.1:8 Meditate therein day & night...then shalt thou make thy way prosperous &...have good success

Psa.1:2,3 In His law doth he meditate...whatsoever he doeth shall prosper

1Tim.4:15 Meditate upon these things...that thy profiting may appear to all

D. The Word guides us & is a light to our path:

Psa.19:8 Commandment of Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes

Psa.25:10 All the paths of the Lord are mercy & truth unto such as keep His...testimonies

Psa.119:105 Thy Word is a lamp unto my feet & light unto my path

Psa.119:130 The entrance of Thy Words giveth light

E. The Word cleanses us spiritually:

Psa.119:9 Where withal shall a young man cleanse his way? By taking heed...to Thy Word

Jn.15:3 Now ye are clean through the Word which I have spoken

Eph.5:25b,26 That He might sanctify & cleanse (us) with the washing of water by the Word (See also Jn.17:17)

F. Other things the Word does for us:

Psa.107:20 He sent His Word and **healed** them

Psa.119:11Word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin

Psa.119:165Great peace have they which love Thy law

Jer.15:16bThy Word was...the **joy & rejoicing** of mine heart

Jn.8:31,32If ye continue in My Word...the truth shall make you free

1Thes.2:13bWord of God...effectually worketh in you that believe

2Tim.3:16,17All Scripture is...profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction

Heb.4:12Word is...discerner of thoughts & intents of heart

8. What we should do with the Word:

A. Feed on it, for it is our spiritual food:

Psa.119:103How sweet are Thy Words! Sweeter than honey

Job 23:12I have esteemed Words more than my necessary food

Jer.15:16Thy Words were found, & I did eat them

Mat.4:4Man shall not live by bread alone, but by...Word

1Pet.2:2As newborn babes, **desire** the sincere milk of Word

B. Teach the Word to our children:

Deut.6:7And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children

Deut.11:19And ye shall teach (the Word unto) thy children

Psa.78:1-8They should make them known unto their children

2Tim.3:15From a child thou has known the holy Scriptures

C. Teach "milk" to babes, & "meat" to the mature:

Heb.5:13Every one that useth milk...is a babe

Heb.5:14But strong meat belongeth to them that are (mature)

1Cor.3:1,2I have fed you with milk, and not with meat

Heb.6:1-3Leaving the principles of the doctrine...let us go on

2Tim.2:15A workman...rightly dividing the Word of truth

Jn.16:12I have many things to say...ye cannot bear them now

D. Love the Word & let it dwell in our hearts:

Deut.6:6,7These Words...shall be in thine heart

Deut.11:18Lay up these My Words in your heart & in your soul

Psa.40:8I delight to do Thy will...Thy law is within my heart

Psa.119:20My soul breaketh for the longing that it hath unto Thy judgments (Word)

Psa.119:40Behold, I have longed after Thy precepts

Psa.119:47,48I will delight myself in Thy commandments, which I have loved (See also Psa.119:113,140,159,163)

Psa.119:72Law of Thy mouth better than thousands of gold

Psa.119:97O how I love Thy law! It is my meditation all the day

Psa.119:127I love Thy commandments above gold

Psa.119:131I panted...I longed for Thy commandments

Psa.119:162I rejoice at Thy Word, as one that findeth great spoil Col.3:16 Let the Word of Christ dwell in you richly

1Tim.4:15Meditate upon these things, give thyself wholly (See also Isa.51:7)

E. Study the Word & "search the Scriptures":

Jn.5:39Search the Scriptures...they testify of Me

Acts 17:11Received the Word with all readiness of mind, & searched the Scriptures daily

1Tim.4:16Take heed...unto the doctrine; **continue** in them

2Tim.2:15**Study** to shew thyself approved unto God...rightly dividing the Word of truth

F. Answer questions & witness with the Word:

Psa.119:42 So shall I have wherewith to answer him

Pro.22:20,21 Answer Words of truth to them that send unto thee

Phi.2:15,16 Shine as lights...holding forth the Word of life

Tit.1:9 By sound doctrine to convince gainsayers

1Pet.3:15 Be ready always to give an answer to every man

1Pet.4:11 If any speak, let him speak as the oracles of God

G. Teach & preach the Word:

Psa.68:11 Great was company of them that published it

Jer.23:28 He that hath My Word, let him speak (it) faithfully

Hab.2:2 Write the vision, & make it plain

Mat.28:20 Teaching them to observe all things...I have commanded

Acts 8:25 They testified & preached the Word of the Lord

Acts 18:11 Continued...teaching the Word of God among them

1Cor.2:4,13 Not with enticing words of man's wisdom

2Tim.4:2 Preach the Word...reprove, rebuke exhort (See also Jn.12:49; 14:10,24; 17:8.)

9. What you should not do with the Word:

A. Don't read it sceptically or doubtfully:

Heb.4:2 Word did not profit...not mixed with faith in them that heard

B. Don't err by being ignorant of the Word:

Mat.22:29 Ye do err, **not** knowing the Scriptures (See also Mat.12:3; 19:4; 21:42; Jn.20:9; Acts 13:27.)

C. Don't "wrest" and twist the Scriptures:

2Cor.2:17 Not as many which corrupt the Word of God

2Cor.4:2 Not...handling the Word of God deceitfully

2Pet.3:14-17They that are unlearned & unstable wrest...Scriptures

D. Don't argue over minor, controversial doctrines:

Rom.14:1Him that is weak in the faith, receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations

2Tim.2:14-16Strive not about words to no profit

Tit.3:9Avoid foolish questions & strivings about the law

E. Don't harden your heart & despise the Word:

2Chr.36:16But they mocked the messengers of God & despised His Words

Pro.13:13Whoso despiseth the Word shall be destroyed

Isa.5:24They cast away the law...& despised the Word

Zech.7:12,13They made their hearts as stone, lest they should hear the Words the Lord sent

F. The fate of those who doubt & despise the Word:

2Chr.36:16They...despised His Words...until the wrath of the Lord arose

Psa.50:17,21Thou castest My Words behind thee...I will reprove thee

Isa.5:24Their root shall be as rottenness...because they despised the Word

Hos.4:6My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will reject thee

Zech.7:11,12They refused to hearken...therefore came a great wrath

Jn.12:48He that receiveth not My Words...the Word...shall judge him in the last day

Lk.16:31If they hear not [the Word], they will not be persuaded, though one rose from the dead

(See Amos 2:4; Zech.7:12; 2Pet.2:21; Jer.36:all.)

10. Beware of those who don't teach the Word:

Isa.8:20If they speak not according to this Word, it is because there is no light in them

Rom.16:17Mark them which cause divisions...contrary to doctrine

Gal.1:8,9If any preach any other gospel...let him be accursed

1Tim.4:1,2Some shall depart from the faith...speaking lies

1Tim.6:3-5If any man teach otherwise, & consent not to wholesome words...he is proud, knowing nothing

Tit.1:10,11Unruly & vain talkers...teaching things which they ought not...whose mouths must be stopped

Heb.13:9Be not carried about with diverse & strange doctrines

2Pet.2:1,2False teachers...shall bring in damnable heresies

(See also 2Tim.4:3,4; Acts 20:29,30.)

11. The devil blinds men's eyes to God's Word:

2Cor.4:4The god of this world hath blinded the minds of them

Lk.8:12They hear, then cometh devil & taketh away the Word (See also Jn.8:43,47; 1Jn.2:11.)

12. Stories relating to the Word:

Mat.4:3-11[Jesus tempted by the devil, quotes the Word]

Mat.7:21-27[The parable of the house on the rock & on the sand]

Mat.13:1-23Parable of the sower (the seed is the Word) (See also Mk.4:1-20 ; Lk.8:4-15.)

Special chapter:

Psa.119King David's beautiful tribute to the Word

Prayer

1. How to pray:

Lk.11:1-4Lord, teach us to pray...when ye pray, say, Our Father which art in Heaven... (See also Mat.6:9-13)

A. Praise & thank the Lord before petitioning Him:

Psa.95:2Let us come before His presence with thanksgiving

Psa.100:4 Enter into His gates with thanksgiving, & into His courts with praise: be thankful...& bless His name

Phi.4:6 With thanksgiving let your requests be made known

B. If you have the gift of tongues, pray & praise in it:

1Cor.14:2,4 He that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh...unto God (&) edifieth himself

Rom.8:26,27 The Spirit...maketh intercession for us with groanings

Eph.6:18 Praying always with...supplication in the Spirit

Jude 20 Building up your...faith, praying in the Holy Ghost

1Cor.14:39 Forbid not to speak with tongues

C. Be specific & ask for what you need:

1Ki.3:5,9,10 [God told Solomon,] Ask what I shall give thee

Mat.7:7,8 Ask, & it shall be given you; seek, & ye shall find

Mat.21:22 Whatsoever ye ask in prayer...ye shall receive

Jn.16:24 Ask, & ye shall receive, that your joy may be full

Phi.4:6 Let your requests be made known unto God

Jam.4:2b Ye have not, because ye ask not

D. Pray to the Father in Jesus' name:

Jn.14:13,14 Whatsoever ye shall ask in **My name**, that will I do

Jn.16:23 Whatsoever ye...ask Father in My name, He will give

(See also Jn.15:16b; 16:26; Eph.2:18.)

E. Prayer also includes you listening to God:

1Sam.3:9,10 If He call thee...say, "Speak, Lord; for Thy servant **heareth**"

Gen.24:63 Isaac went out to meditate in the field at eventide

Num.9:8 Stand still, & I will hear what the Lord will command

Psa.4:3,4 Lord will hear...commune with your heart...& be still

Psa.46:10 Be still, & know that I am God

(See also Eccl.5:1; Zeph.1:7; Zech.2:13.)

F. Listen by meditating on God's Word:

Josh.1:8 Thou shalt meditate therein (the law) day & night

Psa.1:2 In His law doth he meditate day & night

Psa.119:148 [Before] the night watches...I meditate in Thy Word

1Tim.4:15 Meditate on these things; give thyself wholly to them

G. Be diligent to pray, don't be lazy:

Isa.64:7 There is none that calleth upon Thy name, that stirreth himself to take hold of Thee

Dan.9:13 All this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer

Jon.1:6 What meanest thou, O sleeper? Arise, call upon God

Lk.22:46 Why sleep ye? Rise and pray

Lk.18:1 Men ought always to pray, & not to faint

2. Conditions to getting prayer answered:

A. Pray in faith:

Mat.21:21,22 Have faith...doubt not...whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive

Mk.11:24 When ye pray, **believe** that ye receive & ye shall have

Rom.4:21 Being fully persuaded that, what He had promised, He was able also to perform

Heb.11:6 He that cometh to God must believe that He is

Jam.1:5-7 Let him ask in faith, nothing wavering

(See also Mat.17:18-20; Lk.7:1-10.)

B. Obey God & do His will:

Jn.9:31 If any man...doeth God's will, him He heareth

Jn.15:7 If ye abide in Me, & My Words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, & it shall be done unto you

1Jn.3:22 We ask, we receive, because we keep His (commands)

(See also Isa.58:6-9a)

C. Submit yourself to God & pray according to His will:

Psa.143:10 Teach me to do Thy will; for Thou art my God

Mat.6:10 Thy will be done in earth, as it is in Heaven

Lk.22:42 Nevertheless not My will, but Thine (God's), be done

Jn.5:30 [Jesus:] I seek not Mine Own will, but will of (God)

1Jn.5:14 If we ask anything according to His will, He heareth

D. Pray humbly:

Dan.9:18b We do not present our supplications...(because of) our righteousnesses, but for Thy great mercies

Lk.18:10-14 The publican (said), God be merciful to me a sinner

Jam.4:6 God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace to the humble

3. Prayer promises:

2Pet.1:4 Are given unto us exceeding great & precious promises

A. Remind God of His promises when praying:

Gen.32:6-12 Jacob was greatly afraid & distressed [& prayed, reminding God of His promises of protection]

Neh.1:4-11 [Nehemiah prayed:] Remember...the word that Thou commandest Thy servant Moses

B. Some promises to claim in prayer:

Psa.37:4,5 Delight thyself in Lord: & He shall give thee desires

Isa.65:24 Before they call, I will answer; & while they are yet speaking, I will hear

Jer.33:3 Call unto Me, & I will answer thee & shew thee great & mighty things

Jn.15:7 Ask what ye will, & it shall be done unto you

Jn.15:16b Whatsoever ye ask in My name...[God will] give it

Psa.81:10b Open thy mouth wide, & I will fill it

C. The Lord promises to hear prayer:

2Sam.22:7 In my distress I called...He did hear my voice

Psa.34:15,17 The righteous cry, & the Lord heareth

Psa.72:12 He shall deliver the needy when he crieth

Psa.91:15 He shall call upon Me, & I will answer him

D. God's blessings for those who seek Him:

2Chr.26:5 As long as he sought the Lord, God made him prosper

2Chr.31:21 He (sought God) with all his heart, & prospered

4. How not to pray:

A. Don't be disobedient:

Deut.1:43,45 Ye would not hear, but rebelled against (Word) of the Lord...the Lord would not hearken to your voice

Deut.3:23-27 [Moses' request to enter Canaan denied.—Num.20:12]

1Sam.28:5,6 When Saul enquired of the Lord, the Lord answered him not [See the reason in 1Sam.28:15-19]

Isa.1:15 When ye make many prayers, I will not hear

Mic.3:4 Then shall they cry unto the Lord, but He will not hear... they have behaved themselves ill (See also 1Sam.13:8-14 & 14:37; Hos.5;6.)

B. Don't be unbelieving:

Job 9:16 If I called, & He answered me; yet would I not believe He had hearkened unto my voice

Mat.17:19,20a Why could not we cast him out? Because of your unbelief

Heb.11:6 Without faith it is impossible to please Him: for he that cometh to God must **believe** that He is

C. Don't harbour unrepented sin in your heart:

Psa.66:18,19 If I regard iniquity in my heart, Lord will not hear

Isa.59:1,2 Your sins have hid His face...that He will not hear

Jam.5:16 Confess your faults...& pray one for another

D. Don't doubt & disobey the Word:

Pro.1:24-28 Then shall they call upon Me, but I will not answer

Pro.28:9 He that turneth ear...his prayer shall be abomination

Zech.7:12,13 Therefore...they cried, & I would not hear

Jam.1:5-7 Let not that man [who doubts] think he shall receive anything of the Lord

E. Don't hold resentment or "oughts" in your heart:

Mk.11:25 When ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought

F. Don't have selfish motives:

Jam.4:3 Ye ask, & receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts

Deut.23:4,5 They **hired** against thee Balaam...to **curse** thee. [But] the Lord would not hearken unto Balaam

G. Don't pray in pride, but sincerely & humbly:

Mat.6:5,6 Not be as hypocrites (who) love to pray [publicly]

Lk.18:10-14 God, I thank Thee, that I am not as other men are

H. Don't pray long, repetitive prayers:

Eccl.5:2 God is in Heaven...let thy words be few

Mat.6:7,8 When ye pray, use not vain repetitions

Mat.23:14 Woe unto you (who) for a pretence make long prayer

Josh.7:6,10[God told Joshua to stop praying & get up]

I. What happens when we don't pray:

Jam.4:2Ye have not, because ye ask not

(See also Isa.64:7)

5. Private prayer & united prayer with others:

A. Private prayer:

Mat.6:6When thou prayest, enter into thy closet...in secret

Mk.1:35He...departed into a solitary place, & there prayed

Mk.6:46He sent them away, He departed to a mountain to pray

Lk.5:16He withdrew Himself into the wilderness, & prayed

B. United prayer:

Mat.18:19,20Where two or three are gathered together in My name

Acts 1:13-15These all [120 people] continued with one accord in prayer...in an upper room

Acts 4:23-31[After a beating, Peter & John held a prayer meeting]

Acts 12:12House of Mary...**many** were gathered together praying

C. "Watching" in prayer:

1Sam.15:11It grieved Samuel; & he cried unto the Lord all night

Mat.26:40,41Could ye not watch with Me one hour? Watch & pray

Lk.6:12He (Jesus) **continued** all night in prayer to God

Acts 12:5Peter was kept in prison...prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him

Eph.6:18Praying always...& watching thereunto

6. When to pray:

A. Be in a constant attitude of prayer:

1Chr.16:11 Seek the Lord...seek His face continually

Pro.3:6 In **all** thy ways acknowledge Him, & He shall direct

Lk.18:1 Men ought always to pray

Lk.21:36a Watch ye therefore, & pray **always**

1Thes.5:17 Pray without ceasing (See also Eph.6:18)

B. Pray in time of special need:

Psa.50:15 Call upon Me in the day of trouble

Psa.27:8 When Thou saidst, "Seek ye My face"

Psa.107:19 They cry unto the Lord in their trouble, & He saveth

Heb.4:16 Let us come **boldly** unto the throne of grace that we may...find...help in time of need

Jam.5:13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray

(See also 2Chr.14:11,12; Psa.34:4,6.)

C. Morning prayer:

Psa.5:3 In the morning will I direct my prayer unto Thee

Psa.63:1 O God, Thou art my God; early will I seek Thee

Psa.119:147 I [rose before] the dawning of the morning, & cried

Pro.8:17 Those that seek Me early shall find Me

Mk.1:35 In the morning, rising up before day, He...prayed

D. Evening prayer:

Mk.6:46,47 (Jesus) departed to mountain to pray...even was come

Gen.24:63 Isaac went out to meditate in the field at eventide

Psa.55:17 Evening, & morning, & at noon, will I pray

Dan.6:10 Daniel...kneeled three times a day, & prayed

E. Prayer in the night:

Lam.2:19 Arise, cry out in the night...pour out thine heart like water before the face of the Lord

Psa.42:8 In the night His song shall be with me, & my prayer

Psa.63:5b,6 When I...meditate on Thee in the night watches

Isa.26:9a With my soul have I desired Thee in the night

Lk.6:12 (Jesus) continued all night in prayer to God

Acts 16:25 At midnight Paul & Silas prayed, & sang praises

(See also Psa.4:4; 119:55,62.)

7. Wholehearted desperate prayer:

A. Stir yourself up; call on God wholeheartedly:

1Sam.15:11,16 It grieved Samuel; & he cried unto the Lord all night

Isa.64:7a None...stirreth up himself to take hold of Thee

Jer.29:13 Ye shall seek Me, & find Me, when ye search for Me with **all** your heart (See also Deut.4:29)

Lam.2:19 Arise, cry out...pour out thine heart like **water**

Lk.22:44 Being in an agony, He (Jesus) prayed more earnestly

Heb.4:16 Let us therefore come **boldly**...in time of need

Heb.5:7 (Jesus) offered up prayers...with strong crying & tears

Jam.5:16b Effectual fervent prayer...availeth much

(See Psa.61:1,2; 119:10.)

B. Praying fervently & desperately for others:

Rom.15:30,31 Strive (agonise) together with me in our prayers to God

Col.4:12 Epaphrus...always labouring fervently for you in prayers

C. Don't give up; be persistent:

Gen.18:23-32[Abraham repeatedly asks God to spare Sodom for the sake of the righteous. God agrees, if there are 10]

Gen.32:24-28[Jacob refuses to let angel go until he blesses him]

Lk.11:5-10Because of his importunity (insistence) he will give

Lk.18:1-8a[Widow & unjust judge] Lest by her continual coming

Rom.12:12Continuing instant (steadfast, persevering) in prayer

Eph.6:18Praying always...watching thereunto with **perseverance**

Jam.5:16b-18The effectual, fervent prayer of a righteous man (See 1Ki.18:2,41-45)

D. Challenge God to keep His Word & answer prayer:

2Ki.2:14[Elisha challenges:] "Where is the God of Elijah?"

Isa.45:11bConcerning the work of My hands **command** ye Me

(See also Exo.32:11-14)

E. Sometimes you can change God's mind through prayer:

Gen.19:17-21I will not overthrow this city (Zoar), for the which thou hast spoken

Exo.32:9-14Moses besought the Lord...& the Lord repented of the evil which He [had] thought to do

2Ki.20:1-6[King Hezekiah was told he would die, but when he prayed, God changed His mind & healed him]

Amos 7:1-6The Lord repented for this: This also shall not be

Jon.3:4-10[Nineveh cried out & repented, so God spared it]

F. Repeating your desperate prayer:

1Ki.18:42,43Elijah...put his face between his knees...Go 7 times

Mat.26:44(Jesus) prayed the third time, saying the same words

G. Fasting & prayer:

Ezra 8:23So we fasted & besought our God for this: & He was intreated of us

Joel 2:12 Turn ye to Me with all your heart, & with fasting

Mat.17:21 This kind goeth not out but by prayer & fasting

(See also Deut.9:9,18; Acts 13:2,3; 1Cor.7:5.)

8. Other points on prayer:

A. Jesus mediates & prays for us:

Rom.8:34 Christ...Who is at the right hand of God...maketh intercession for us

Heb.7:25 He ever liveth to make intercession for [us]

(See also Lk.22:32; Jn.17:9.)

B. The Holy Spirit prays for us:

Rom.8:26,27 (The Spirit) maketh intercession for the saints

C. Be thankful to the Lord for answering prayer:

Psa.116:1,2,7 I love the Lord, because He hath heard my (prayers)

(See also Psa.30:1-4; 66:16,17,19,20.)

D. Prayer is precious:

Psa.141:2 Let my prayer be set before Thee as incense

Pro.15:8b The prayer of the upright is His delight

Rev.5:8 Golden vials full of odours are the prayers of saints (See also Rev.8:3)

E. Giving thanks before eating:

1Sam.9:13 People will not eat till he...bless the sacrifice

Mat.14:19 Looking up to Heaven, He blessed & brake...the loaves

Mat.26:26 Jesus took bread, & blessed it, & brake it, & gave

Mk.8:6 He (Jesus) took the seven loaves, & gave thanks

Acts 27:35 He (Paul) took bread, & gave thanks to God

1Tim.4:3-5[Food] sanctified (cleansed) by prayer

9. Ways God answers prayer:

A. Answer to prayer greater than request:

1Ki.3:7-14[Solomon prayed for wisdom & God granted him much more]

Eph.3:20Able to do exceeding abundantly **above** all that we ask

Acts 12:1-16[Church prayed for Peter, but not quite expecting his miraculous release from prison (vs.15,16)]

B. Answer to prayer delayed (It tries our faith):

Job 30:20[Job's prayer not answered immediately]

Psa.40:1I waited patiently for the Lord, & He...heard my cry

Jer.42:4,7[Jeremiah's prayer answered 10 days after he prayed]

Lam.3:25,26The Lord is good unto them that wait for Him, to the soul that seeketh Him (See also Psa.62:1)

Dan.10:2,12,13[The answer to Daniel's prayer was delayed for 21 days]

Lk.18:7,8[Answer] His elect...though He bear long with them

Heb.10:36Patience...after ye have done will of God, receive

Rev.6:10,11How long, O Lord? [Answer:] Rest yet a little season

C. Answer to prayer different from request:

Deut.3:23-27[Moses allowed to view the promised land, not enter]

Jn.11:1-3,6[Jesus is asked to heal Lazarus, but lets him die, then resurrects him] (See Jn.11:14,15,32,37,43-45)

2Cor.12:7-9[Paul prays for healing; instead is given grace to bear his affliction]

(See also 2Ki.5:9-13)

D. Beware about insisting that God grant your request:

Psa.106:15He gave them their request; but sent leanness into their soul

(See 1Sam.8:4-22; 12:1,13,16-19 re: asking for a king)

Faith

1. What is faith?

A. Faith is a belief in the unseen:

2Cor.4:18 We look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are **not** seen...which are eternal

2Cor.5:7 We walk by faith, **not** by sight

Heb.11:27 By faith he...endured, as seeing Him Who is invisible

(See also Rom.8:24)

B. Faith is a substantial & real thing:

Heb.11:1 Faith is the substance (title deed) of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen

2. The importance of faith:

Gal.5:6 [Nothing] availeth any thing, (except) faith which worketh by love

A. We are saved by faith:

Jn.3:16 Whosoever believeth in Him (Jesus) should...have everlasting life

Jn.3:36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life

Lk.7:47-50 Thy sins are forgiven. Thy faith hath saved thee

Acts 10:43b Whoever believeth in Him...receive remission of sins

Acts 16:31 Believe on...Jesus Christ, & thou shalt be saved

Rom.5:1 Being justified by faith, we have peace with God

Gal.3:26 Ye are all children of God by faith in Christ Jesus

Eph.2:8,9 For by grace are ye saved through faith

Eph.3:17a That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith

(See also 1Pet.1:9)

B. We must live by faith:

Gal.2:20 Life which I live, I live by the faith of (Jesus)

Heb.10:38a The just shall live by faith (See also Rom.1:17b)

1Jn.5:4b This is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith

C. We cannot please God without faith:

Heb.11:6 Without faith it is impossible to please Him (God)

Rom.14:23b Whatsoever is **not** of faith is **sin**

D. Faith gives us the strength to keep going:

Psa.27:13 I had fainted, unless I had believed to see the goodness of the Lord in the land of the living

Rom.11:20a Thou standest by faith

2Cor.4:16-18 We faint not...while we look not at things which are seen, but at things which are not seen

3. The Word tells us to have faith:

A. In God & Jesus:

2Chr.20:20 Believe in the Lord your God

Mk.11:22 Jesus saith unto them, Have faith in God

Jn.6:28,29 Believe on Him (Jesus) Whom He (God) hath sent

Jn.14:1 Ye believe in God, believe also in Me

1Jn.3:23 His commandment, that we should believe on Jesus

(See also Acts 20:21)

B. We are also to trust the Lord day by day:

Psa.37:5 Commit way unto the Lord; trust also in Him

Prov.3:5,6 Trust in the Lord with all thine heart

Jer.17:7 Blessed is the man that trusteth in the Lord, & whose hope the Lord is

C. Have faith in the Word, God's promises to us:

Mk.1:15b Repent ye, & believe the gospel

2Pet.1:19 We have a...sure Word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed (See also 2Pet.3:2)

(See also Acts 15:7)

4. How to obtain faith:

A. Faith is a gift from God:

Heb.12:2a Jesus, the **author** & finisher of our faith

Rom.12:3b God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith

1Cor.12:7,9a To another (is given) faith by the same Spirit

Gal.5:22 The fruit of the Spirit is...faith

Eph.6:23 Peace be to brethren...& love with faith, from God

B. Pray for it:

Mk.9:24 Lord, I believe; help Thou mine unbelief

Lk.17:5 [They] said unto the Lord, Increase our faith

C. Read the Word:

Rom.10:17 Faith cometh by hearing...the Word of God

Jn.20:30,31 These are written that ye might believe

Acts 15:7b Hear the word of the gospel & believe

Rom.15:4b Written...that we through...Scriptures might have hope

D. The Word nourishes & builds up our faith:

Acts 20:32 The Word of His grace, which is able to build you up

1Tim.4:6bThou shalt be...nourished up in the words of faith

E. Read the Word in a receptive, believing spirit:

Lk.8:15They...which in an honest & good heart, having heard the Word, keep it, & bring forth fruit

Heb.4:2The Word...did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it

Heb.11:13[Past saints died in faith believing & embracing the promises of the Word]

F. Listen to testimonies of faith:

2Ki.5:1-5[The Hebrew maid's witness inspires Naaman's faith]

Jn.4:28-30,39Many of the Samaritans...believed on Him (Jesus) for the saying of the woman, which testified

Jn.17:20Them which believe on Me through their word

(See also 2Pet.1:16,19)

G. Miracles glorify God's power & often inspire faith:

Acts 3:1-13,16; 4:4[After the lame man was miraculously healed], many of them which heard the Word believed...5,000 men

Acts 8:5,6,14[Samaritans believed Philip & received the Word] seeing the miracles which he did

Acts 9:36-42Many believed in the Lord [when Peter raised the dead]

(See also 1Ki.18:30-39; 2Ki.5:9-17.)

H. Faith grows:

2Thes.1:3We thank God for you...your faith groweth exceedingly

I. Becoming strengthened & steadfast in the faith:

Acts 14:22Confirming the souls of the disciples, & exhorting them to continue in the faith

1Cor.16:13Watch ye, stand fast in the faith...be strong

Col.1:23aContinue in the faith, grounded & settled, & be not moved away from the hope of the gospel

Col.2:6,7Rooted & built up in Him, stablished in the faith

J. We should have faith when we pray:

Mat.21:21,22Have faith, & doubt not...whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive

Mk.11:24What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, **believe** that ye receive them

Rom.4:21Being fully persuaded that, what He had promised, He was able also to perform

Heb.10:22Let us draw near...in full assurance of faith

Jam.1:5,6Ask of God...ask in faith, nothing wavering

5. The rewards (blessings or fruits) of faith:

Heb.11:6He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him

A. Access to God:

Rom.5:2We have access by faith into this grace

Eph.3:11,12We have access...by the faith of Him

B. God's love:

Psa.32:10He that trusteth in the Lord, mercy shall compass him

Jn.16:27The Father loveth you, because ye...have believed

C. Righteousness & purity:

Gen.15:6He (Abraham) believed in the Lord; & He counted it to him for righteousness (See also Rom.4:1-5)

Acts 15:9Purifying their hearts by faith

Rom.4:8,9Faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness

Rom.9:30bThe righteousness which is of faith

Phi.3:9That which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith

D. The Holy Spirit:

Jn.7:38,39He that believeth on Me (Jesus)...out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water...the Spirit

Gal.3:14We...receive the promise of the Spirit through faith

E. Protection against the devil's attacks & lies:

Eph.6:16**Shield** of faith...quench all the fiery darts [doubts] 1Thes.5:8 Putting on the breastplate of faith & love

F. Rewards in Heaven:

Jn.14:1-3Believe in Me...I go to prepare a (mansion) for you

Heb.11:13,16These all died in faith...He (God) hath prepared for them a city

G. Conviction to witness our faith:

2Cor.4:13Having spirit of faith...we believe, & therefore speak

H. Spiritual strength:

Psa.27:13I had fainted, unless I had **believed** to see

Psa.31:24He shall strengthen your heart, ye that hope in Lord

Isa.26:4Trust ye in the Lord...for in the Lord is... strength

Isa.30:15bIn confidence (faith) shall be your strength

1Jn.5:4bThis is the victory that overcometh the world...faith

I. Stability:

2Chr.20:20bBelieve in the Lord...so shall ye be established

Psa.125:1They that trust in the Lord...cannot be removed

J. Joy:

Psa.33:21Our heart shall rejoice in Him, because we have trusted in His holy name

Psa.146:5Happy is he...whose hope is in the Lord his God

Pro.16:20bWhoso trusteth in the Lord, happy is he

Acts 16:34He...rejoiced, believing in God

1Pet.1:8Ye see Him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy

K. Understanding:

Heb.11:3 Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the Word of God

L. Protection:

Psa.5:11 [They] put their trust in Thee... Thou defendest them

Psa.115:1 Trust in the Lord: He is their help & their shield

Pro.29:25 Whoso putteth his trust in the Lord shall be safe

Pro.30:5 (God) is a shield unto them that put trust in Him

Jer.39:17,18 I will surely deliver thee... because thou hast put thy trust in Me

Heb.11:31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not (See Josh.2:1-22; 6:17,22-25.)

M. Provision:

Psa.33:18,19 Them that hope in His mercy... keep alive in famine

Psa.37:3 Trust in the Lord... so shalt thou dwell in the land, & verily thou shalt be fed

Jer.17:7,8 Blessed is the man that trusteth in the Lord... he shall not (worry) in drought, [nor] cease from yielding fruit

Mal.3:10 Prove Me herewith, if I will not open you the windows of Heaven, & pour you out a blessing

N. Healing:

Psa.42:11 Hope thou in God... Who is the health of my countenance

Mk.5:25-29,34 If I... touch His (Jesus') clothes, I shall be whole. [Jesus said:] Thy faith hath made thee whole

Mk.10:51,52 Go thy way; thy faith hath made thee whole

Lk.8:49,50 Fear not: believe only, & she shall be made whole

Jam.5:14,15 Prayer of faith shall save the sick... Lord shall raise him

O. Desires of your heart:

Psa.37:4,5 Trust in Lord...& He shall give desires of thine heart

P. Resurrection from the dead:

Job 19:25-27 [Job declared that though his flesh was utterly consumed & destroyed, he would have a **new** body]

Jn.11:25,26 He that believeth in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live (See also 1Cor.15:12-20)

6. Trusting in the Lord's promises:

A. You trust in God's promises because you trust Him:

Mat.8:5-10 The centurion said, Lord...speak the word only

Lk.5:4,5 We have toiled all the night, & taken nothing: Nevertheless at Thy word I will let down the net

2Tim.1:12b I know **Whom** I believed, & am persuaded He is able

Heb.10:23 Hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; for He is faithful that promised

Heb.11:11b [Childless Sara] judged Him faithful Who had promised

(See also 2Chr.6:14,15)

B. You trust He is able to fulfil His promises:

Rom.4:20-24 Being fully persuaded that, what He had promised, He was able also to perform

2Cor.1:20 All the promises of God in Him (Jesus) are yea, & Amen

Eph.3:20 He is able to do exceeding...**above** all that we ask

C. God is able to do anything:

Jer.32:27 I am the Lord...is there anything too hard for Me?

Jer.32:17 Ah Lord God! There is **nothing** too hard for Thee

Mat.19:26 With God all things are possible

Lk.1:37 With God nothing shall be impossible

Rom.4:17 God...calleth those things which be **not** as though they **were**

D. You trust Him because He has not failed in the past:

1Ki.8:56There hath not failed one word of His good promise

(See also 2Chr.6:15)

E. You know He will not go back on His Word:

Num.23:19Hath He **said**, & shall He not **do** it? Or hath He spoken, & shall He not make it good?

Psa.119:49Remember the Word...upon which Thou hath caused me to hope

Heb.6:18aIt (is) impossible for God to lie

7. Faith vs. natural reasoning:

1Sam.16:7The Lord seeth not as man seeth; man looketh on the outward appearance...Lord looketh on the heart

Psa.118:8It is better to trust in the Lord than...in man

Pro.3:5,6Trust in Lord; & lean not unto thine own understanding

Isa.11:3He shall not judge (according to) the sight of his eyes

Isa.55:8,9Neither are your ways My ways, saith the Lord

Jer.17:5Cursed be the man that trusteth in man [& not in God]

Jn.20:29bBlessed are they that have not seen, & yet...believed

1Cor.1:21The world by wisdom knew not God

1Cor.2:5Your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God

1Cor.2:14aThe natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit

2Cor.5:7For we walk by faith, not by sight

8. The power of faith:

A. Genuine believing faith has tremendous power:

Mk.9:23If thou canst believe, all things are possible

Lk.7:50Thy faith hath saved thee [woman who touched His hem]

Lk.18:42Receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee

Jn.14:12He that believeth on Me...greater works...shall he do

Acts 6:8Stephen, full of faith...did great wonders & miracles

Jam.5:15The prayer of faith shall save the sick

B. "Faith as a grain of mustard seed":

Mat.17:20bSay unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place

Mat.21:21,22Ye shall not only do this which is done to fig tree

Mk.11:22,23Have faith in God...say unto mountain, Be removed

Lk.17:6Say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou plucked up

C. Faith trusts God to do outright miracles:

Num.13:26-30[Caleb had faith to conquer the promised land]

Josh.14:6,12[Caleb had the faith to drive out the giants]

1Sam.17:37[David said:] The Lord will deliver me (from Goliath)

Lk.18:27Things...impossible with men are possible with God

Heb.11:11Through faith, Sarah received strength to conceive ...when she was past age

Heb.11:29By faith they passed through the Red Sea

Heb.11:30By faith the walls of Jericho fell down

Heb.11:33-35Through faith...stopped the mouths of lions...women received their dead raised to life again [etc.]

D. Answer to prayer depends on our faith; the Lord can do anything, but we need to believe:

Mat.9:27-30Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said, Yea. [Jesus said:] According to your faith be it unto you

Mat.8:13As thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee

Mat.17:19,20Why could not we cast him out? Because of unbelief

Mat.21:21,22If ye have faith, & doubt not...ye shall receive

E. Believing, expectant faith will be rewarded:

Mat.15:28Great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt

Mk.5:22,23[Jairus said:] Come...that she may be healed. [And she **was**—See vs.35,36,41,42.]

Mk.9:23All things are possible to him that believeth

Mk.11:23Whosoever...shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe...he shall have whatsoever he saith

Lk.1:45Blessed is she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her

Jn.11:40If thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God

F. Persevering faith:

Mat.15:22-28A woman...cried to Him, Have mercy on me...He answered not a word [She **continued** insisting until He did]

Mk.10:46-52[Blind Bartimaeus continued crying out to Jesus until Jesus granted his request for healing]

G. Faith & patience:

Rom.8:25If we hope (have faith) for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it

Heb.6:12bWho through faith & patience inherit the promises

Heb.6:15After he patiently endured, he obtained the promise

Heb.10:35,36Cast not away your confidence (faith)...After ye have done the will of God...receive the promise

Jam.1:3The trying of your faith worketh patience

9. The testing of our faith:

1Pet.1:6,7Trial of your faith...more precious than gold

Job 23:10When He hath tried me, I shall come forth as gold

A. God tests our faith:

Gen.22:1-18[God tested Abraham to see if he was willing to offer Isaac as a sacrifice] (See also Heb.11:17-19)

Josh.6:2-5[He had Israelites merely walk around walls of Jericho]

Judg.7:2-7[He had Gideon drastically reduce the size of his army]

Jn.11:23,39-40Take ye away the stone. Lord, by this time he stinketh

Acts 5:17-20[Just released from prison, the apostles are commanded to go preach publicly again]

(See also Deut.8:2)

B. He allows the devil & wicked men to test saints' faith:

Dan.3:14-27[Shadrach, Meshach & Abednego:] God...will deliver us ...but if not...we will not serve thy gods

Mat.4:1-11[The devil tempted Jesus :] If Thou be the Son of God, cast Thyself down

Heb.11:35-38[Saints were] stoned, sawn asunder, tempted, slain

10. If you have true faith:

A. You will continue to trust God, even when things look hopeless:

Job 13:15[Job, having lost his wealth, family & health, said:] Though He slay me, yet will I trust in Him

Dan.3:16-18Our God whom we serve is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace...& out of thine hand, O king

Mat.8:24,26There arose a **great** tempest...the ship was **covered** with waves, [but Jesus chided His disciples for fearing]

Jn.11:21,22[Four days after Lazarus died, Mary said:] I know, that even now, whatsoever Thou wilt ask...God will give it

Acts 27:18-25All hope...was taken away. (But Paul said:) I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me

Acts 28:3-6[Paul calmly shook off a poisonous snake that had just bitten him]

Rom.4:18Who against hope believed in hope, that he (Abraham) might [re ceive the promise]

Rom.4:20He staggered not at promise of God through unbelief

(See also 2Chr.32:7,8; Isa.26:3; Jon.2:1-9; Acts 9:36-38.)

B. You will not be shaken or alarmed at bad news:

Psa.112:7 He shall not be afraid of evil tidings: his heart is fixed (established), trusting in the Lord

C. You will not fret or run around anxiously:

Isa.28:16b He that believeth shall not make haste

Pro.19:2b He that hasteth with his feet sinneth

D. If you trust, you will obey & put your faith into action.—Your deeds & words will show your faith:

Psa.116:10 I believed, therefore have I spoken

Mat.8:5-8,13 [The centurion believed Jesus' word, returned home] & his servant was healed in the selfsame hour

Mat.12:10a,13 [Jesus tells man with withered hand:] stretch forth thine hand. And he (did); & it was restored whole

Mk.7:25-30 [Syrophenician woman believed Jesus, went to her home & found her daughter well]

Lk.17:11-19 [Ten lepers:] As they **went**, they were cleansed (healed)

Jn.4:46-53 Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word...& he went his way

Jn.11:39-41 Take ye away the stone. They took away the stone [& Jesus raised Lazarus from the dead]

Heb.11:7 By faith Noah, moved...prepared an ark

Jam.2:21-26 As the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also

(See also Josh.6:1-16,20; Judg.7:7,16-22; 1Ki.17:9-16; 2Ki.3:9-11,16-20; 4:1-6; Heb.11:8,17,23.)

E. Declarations of faith, followed by victorious action:

1Sam.14:6-16 There is no restraint to Lord to save by many or few

1Sam.17:32-50 The Lord...will deliver me out of the hand of this Philistine

Judg.7:15-22 Arise; for Lord hath delivered [them] into your hand

11. Lack of faith:

A. Warnings not to doubt or lose faith:

Mat.14:31 O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

Jn.20:27 Be not faithless, but believing

Lk.12:29,30 Neither be ye of doubtful mind

Heb.3:12 Take heed...lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God

Heb.4:11 Lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief

Heb.10:35 Cast not away therefore your confidence (faith)

B. The consequences of not having faith:

Deut.32:20 I will hide My face from...children in whom is no faith

Isa.7:9b If ye will not believe, ye shall not be established

Mat.13:58 Did not many mighty works because of their unbelief

Jn.3:36b He that believeth not the Son shall not see life

Rom.14:23b For whatsoever is not of faith is sin

1Tim.1:19 Faith...which some having put away, made shipwreck

Heb.3:18,19 They should not enter in [& receive God's promises] because of unbelief

Heb.11:6 Without faith it is impossible to please Him (God)

Jam.1:6,7 Ask in faith, nothing wavering...he that wavereth...shall receive (nothing) of the Lord

Jude 5 The Lord...destroyed them that believed not

C. Weak or doubting faith seeks miracles & signs:

Mat.16:1,4 A wicked...generation seeketh after a sign

Jn.20:24-29 Jesus saith, Thomas, because thou hast **seen** Me, thou hast believed

1Cor.1:22a The Jews require a sign

D. Faith or doubt?—To do or not to do:

Mat.9:29 According to your faith be it unto you

Rom.14:5b Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind

Rom.14:22 Hast thou faith? Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth

Rom.14:23 He that doubteth is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: Whatsoever is not of faith is sin

Special chapter:

Hebrews 11 "The Faith Chapter" or "Faith's Hall of Fame"

Love & Forgiveness

1. God is love, & He loves us:

1Jn.4:8b God is love

A. God's love for us:

Jer.31:3 I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee

Rom.8:38,39 I am persuaded, that [nothing] shall be able to separate us from the love of God

Eph.2:4-6 God...for His great love wherewith He loved us...hath raised us up

1Jn.3:1 What manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us

1Jn.4:10 Love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us

(See also Zeph.3:17)

B. How God showed us His love:

Jn.3:16 God so loved the world, that He gave His only...Son

Rom.5:7,8 God commendeth His love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us

1Jn.4:9In this was manifested the love of God...God sent His Son into the world, that we might live through Him

C. Jesus' love for us:

Jn.10:11I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep

Jn.15:13Greater love hath no man...that (he) lay down his life 2Cor.8:9 Though He (Jesus) was rich, yet for your sakes He became poor, that ye...might be rich

Eph.3:19Know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge

Rev.1:5Jesus Christ...loved us, & washed us from our sins in His Own blood

D. Dwelling & abiding in God's love:

Jn.14:21He that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, & I will love him, & will manifest Myself to him

Jn.14:23If a man love Me...My Father will love him, & we will come unto him, & make Our **abode** with him

Jn.17:26That the **love**...may be in them, & **I** in them

1Jn.2:5Whoso keepeth...Word, in him is love of God perfected

1Jn.4:19We love him, because He first loved us

Jude 21bKeep yourselves in the love of God

2. The first great commandment—to love God:

Deut.6:5Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, & with all thy soul, & with all thy might

Deut.10:12What doth the Lord require of thee, but to love Him...with all thy heart & with all thy soul

Deut.30:20Love God, &...cleave unto Him: for He is thy life

Josh.22:5Take diligent heed to...to love the Lord your God, & to cleave unto Him

Josh.23:11Take good heed unto yourselves, that ye love the Lord

Mat.22:37,38Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart...this is the **first & great** commandment

(See also Deut.30:6; Mk.12:30.)

3. The second great commandment—to love thy neighbour:

Lev.19:18Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself

Mat.22:39The second (commandment) is **like** unto it (the first), Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself

Jn.13:34Love one another; as I have loved you

Jn.15:12This is My commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you

Jn.15:17These things I command you, that ye love one another

1Jn.3:11This is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another

1Jn.3:23His commandment, That we should...love one another

4. Love one another:

A. God loves us so we should love one another:

Jn.13:34As I have loved you...ye [ought to] love one another

Eph.5:2aWalk in love [one to another], as Christ also hath loved us, & hath given Himself for us

1Jn.4:7aBeloved, let us love one another: for love is of God

1Jn.4:11If God so loved us, we ought also to love one another 1Jn.5:1b Every one that loveth Him that begat loveth him also that is begotten **of** Him

B. God gives us love to love others:

Rom.5:5The love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us

Gal.5:22The fruit of the Spirit is love...longsuffering

1Thes.3:12The Lord make you to increase & abound in love one toward another, & toward all men

1Thes.4:9Ye yourselves are taught of God to love one another

2Thes.3:5The Lord direct your hearts into the love of God

2Tim.1:7God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of love

(See also Eph.6:23)

C. To love is the greatest law of God:

Mk.12:33 To love (God)... & to love his neighbour as himself, is **more** than **all**...offerings & sacrifices

Lk.10:25,27,28 To inherit eternal life...love God with all thy heart... neighbour as thyself. This do, & thou shalt live

Gal.5:14 **All** the law is fulfilled in...**this**; Thou shalt **love** thy neighbour as thyself

D. Love is the most important virtue:

1Cor.13:13 Faith, hope & love...the **greatest** of these is **love**

1Cor.13:2b Though I have faith...& have not love, I am nothing

Gal.5:6 Faith...worketh by love

Eph.3:17 (Be) rooted & grounded in love

Eph.3:19 The love of Christ...passeth knowledge

Col.3:14 Above **all** these things put on love

Rev.2:3,4 For My name's sake hast laboured...(but) I have somewhat against thee...thou hast left thy first love

(See also Eph.1:15,16; Col.1:3,4; Phlm.5.)

E. Love one another fervently:

1Thes.3:12 Increase & abound in love one toward another

1Pet.1:22b Love one another with a pure heart **fervently**

1Pet.4:8 Above all things have **fervent** love among yourselves

F. Love sincerely & genuinely:

Judg.16:15a How canst thou say, I love thee, when thine heart is not with me?

Rom.12:9 Let love be without dissimulation (hypocrisy)

1Pet.1:22a Obeying the truth...to unfeigned love of the brethren (See also 2Cor.6:6; 8:8.)

Phi.1:9,10 That your love may abound yet more & more...that ye may be sincere & without offence

G. The benefits that loving others brings us:

Jn.13:35 By this shall all men know that ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another

2Cor.13:11 Live in peace; & the God of love shall be with you

Eph.3:17-19 Ye, being rooted & grounded in love...might be filled with all the fulness of God

1Jn.2:10 He that loveth his brother abideth in the light

1Jn.3:14 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren

1Jn.4:7b Every one that loveth is born of God, & knoweth God

1Jn.4:12 If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, & His love is perfected in us (See also 1Jn.2:5)

1Jn.4:16 God is love; & he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, & God in him

5. Real, genuine love:

A. Whatever you do, do it in love:

1Cor.16:14 Let **all** your things be done with love

2Cor.5:14 The love of Christ constraineth (compels) us

B. The qualities that genuine love will have:

1Cor.8:1b Love edifieth (builds up, strengthens)

1Cor.13:4 Love envieth not; vaunteth (exalts) not itself, is not puffed up (proud)

1Cor.13:5 Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil

1Cor.13:6 Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth Col.3:14 Love...is the bond of perfectness

1Jn.4:18 There is no fear in love...love casteth out fear

C. Genuine love results in unity of believers:

Col.2:2a That their hearts might be...knit together in love

(See also 1Sam.18:1; Eph.4:15,16; Phi.2:1,2.)

D. Real love will not give up or fail:

Song 8:7Many waters [troubles] cannot quench love...drown it

1Cor.13:4Love suffereth long

1Cor.13:7Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things

1Cor.13:8Love never faileth

Heb.13:1Let brotherly love **continue** (keep up, not fail)

E. Love is not pushy:

Rom.12:10With brotherly love; in honour preferring one another

Phlm.8,9aThough I might be bold...to (command, impose upon) thee...yet for love's sake I rather beseech thee

F. Love is considerate of others' weaknesses:

Rom.14:21It is good [not to do] any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak

Rom.15:1We...ought to bear the infirmities of the weak

Rom.15:2Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good

Gal.5:13By love serve one another

Eph.4:2With longsuffering, forbearing one another in love

G. Love will not hurt or do wrong to others:

Rom.13:9,10Love worketh no ill to his neighbour

H. If we have love, we will be kind & courteous:

1Cor.13:4aLove suffereth long, & is **kind**

Eph.4:15Speaking the truth in **love** [not inconsiderately blunt]

Eph.4:32Be ye kind...tenderhearted, forgiving one another

1Pet.3:8(Have) compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous

6. Real love results in good deeds:

A. Putting love into action:

Mat.14:14Jesus...was **moved** with compassion toward them, & He healed their sick

Mat.25:35I was an hungered...I was thirsty, & ye **gave**

Lk.6:31As ye would that men should do to you, do ye to them

Lk.10:30-35[The good Samaritan took loving action & helped]

Gal.6:10Let us **do** good [deeds] unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith

1Jn.3:18Let us not love in word [only]...but in **deed** & truth

2Jn.6This is love, that we walk after His commandments

B. Sacrificial love, giving our lives for others:

Jn.15:13Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends

1Jn.3:16He (Jesus) laid down His life for us: & we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren

Acts 15:25,26Barnabas & Paul...hazarded their lives for the name of Jesus (See also Acts 20:24)

Phi.2:30For the work of Christ he was nigh unto death

C. Be concerned about others' welfare; not just your own:

1Cor.13:5(Love) seeketh not her own

Phi.2:4Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others

1Thes.4:9As touching brotherly love...love one another

D. Selfishness shows a lack of love:

1Jn.3:17Whoso...seeth his brother have need, & shutteth up his ...compassion, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

Jam.4:17To him that knoweth to do good, & doeth it not, to him it is **sin**

E. Doing good to our brethren is doing it to Jesus:

Mat.25:35-40 Inasmuch as ye have **done** it unto one of the least of My brethren, ye have done it unto **Me**

Heb.6:10 Love, which ye have shewed toward **His** name, in that ye have ministered to the **saints**

(See also Eph.6:5-8; Col.3:22-24.)

F. Failing to do good to our brethren is failing to do it to Jesus:

Mat.25:41-45 Inasmuch as ye did it **not** to one of the **least** of these, ye did it not to Me

7. Love vs. hate:

A. We do not truly love God if we don't love our fellow man:

1Jn.4:20 He that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God Whom he hath not seen?

Tit.3:3-5 [**Before** we were saved] we...(lived) in malice & envy, hate ful, & hating one another

Jam.3:9-12 Bless we God...& curse men. My brethren, these things ought **not** so to be (See also Jam.3:14; 1Jn.3:17.)

1Jn.4:21 This commandment have we from Him, That he who loveth God love his brother also

(See also Mat.5:23,24)

B. We are commanded not to be hateful:

Lev.19:17,18 Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thine heart...but thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself

C. When we don't love one another:

1Jn.2:9,11 He that hateth his brother is in darkness...blinded

1Jn.3:10 He that loveth not his brother...is not of God

1Jn.3:14b He that loveth not his brother abideth in **death**

1Jn.3:15 Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer

1Jn.4:20a If a man say, I love God, & hateth his brother...**liar**

1Jn.4:8 He that loveth not knoweth **not** God; for God is love

D. The bad fruit of hatred:

Gen.37:4 They hated him, & could not speak peaceably unto him

Pro.10:12a Hatred stirreth up stifes

1Jn.3:15 Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer

(See also Gen.4:3-8; Pro.26:26; Ezk.25:15.)

8. Special categories of love:

A. We are to love all men:

Mat.5:46,47 If ye [only] love them which love you...what do ye more than others? (See also Lk.6:32,33)

1Thes.3:12 Increase & abound in love...toward **all** men

Heb.12:14a Follow peace with all men

B. We are to especially love brothers & sisters in the Lord:

Jn.13:35 By this shall all men know that ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another

Gal.6:10 Especially unto them who are of the household of faith

1Pet.2:17 Honour all men. Love the brotherhood

(See also Heb.13:1; 1Pet.4:8. Also compare Tit.3:15; 2Jn.1; 3Jn.1 re: "loving in the faith".)

C. Examples of unusually great love &/or admiration:

1Sam.18:1 The soul of Jonathan was knit with the soul of David, (he) loved him as his own soul (See also 20:17)

2Sam.1:26 [David declared his deep love for Jonathan]

Mk.10:17-21 [Jesus was moved with love for the rich young ruler]

Jn.11:3,5 [Jesus' special love for Mary, Martha & Lazarus]

Jn.13:23 [Jesus had a special love for the apostle John] (See also Jn.19:26; 21:7,20.)

1Thes.5:13 Esteem them very highly in love for their [good] work's sake

D. We are even to demonstrate God's love to our foes:

Pro.25:21,22If thine enemy be hungry, give him bread...& if he be thirsty, give water...& the Lord shall reward thee

Mat.5:43-47Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good ...that ye may be the children of your Father

Lk.6:27-30Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you, bless them that curse you, & pray for them

Lk.6:32-35If ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? Sinners also love those that love them

Lk.10:30-37A Samaritan [adversary of the Jews]...when he saw him [a wounded Jew], he had compassion on him

9. Love, forgiveness & mercy:

A. To love means to be forgiving:

Pro.10:12bLove covereth **all** sins

1Pet.4:8bLove shall cover the **multitude** of sins

B. God is merciful to us:

Num.14:18aThe Lord is longsuffering, & of great mercy, forgiving iniquity & transgression

Num.14:19Pardon...the iniquity of this people according unto the greatness of Thy mercy

Psa.103:8The Lord is merciful & gracious, slow to anger, & plenteous in mercy

Psa.103:10,11He hath not dealt with us after our sins...great is His mercy toward them that fear Him

Lam.3:22,23It is of the Lord's mercies that we are not consumed, because His compassions fail not...new every morning

Isa.63:7The great goodness...He bestowed on them according to His mercies, &...multitude of His lovingkindnesses (See also 2Sam.24:14 ; Isa.54:7,8 .)

(Re: God's lovingkindness, see Psa.25:6; 36:7; 40:11; 69:16; 103:2-4;

119:149; Jer.9:24.)

C. God loves mercy more than "justice" & retribution:

Mic.7:18God...pardoneth iniquity...He delighteth in mercy

Mat.9:13I will have (desire) mercy, & not sacrifice (See also Hos.6:6)

Jam.2:13bMercy rejoiceth against judgment

Rom.5:20Where sin abounded, grace did much more abound

Pro.16:6By mercy & truth iniquity is purged

D. He often refrains from justly punishing us:

Exo.32:14The Lord repented of the evil which He thought to do unto His people

Psa.103:9,10He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities

Psa.130:3,4If Thou...shouldst mark iniquities, O Lord, who shall stand? But there is forgiveness with Thee

2Sam.24:16The Lord repented of the evil, & said to the angel that destroyed the people, Stay now thine hand

(See also Gen.18:20,23-26; Jon.1:1,2; 3:10; 4:11.)

E. God mercifully forgives our sins:

Psa.103:12As far as the east is from the west, so far hath He removed our transgressions from us

Isa.1:18Though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow...as wool

Mic.7:19He will have compassion upon us...& cast all their sins into the depths of the sea

Isa.43:25I, even I, am He that blotteth out thy transgressions

Isa.44:22I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy...sins

Heb.8:12I will be merciful...& their sins...remember no more

(See also Psa.32:1,2; Isa.38:17.)

F. God is especially merciful to those who love & fear Him:

Exo.20:6Showing mercy unto...them that love Me, & keep My commandments

Deut.7:9God...keepeth covenant & mercy with them that love Him

Psa.103:11As the heaven is high above the earth, so great is His mercy toward them that fear Him

Psa.103:13Like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear Him

Psa.103:17The mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear Him

Lk.7:47,48Her (many) sins, are forgiven; for she loved much

Acts 26:18Turn...from darkness to light...that they may receive forgiveness of sins

10. We are to be merciful & forgiving:

Mic.6:8What doth Lord require of thee, but to...love mercy

A. We should forgive others as God has forgiven us:

Mat.18:33Shouldst not thou also have...had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee?

Lk.6:36Be ye merciful, as your Father also is merciful

Eph.4:32(Forgive) one another, even as God...hath forgiven you

Col.3:13Forbearing one another, & forgiving one another... even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye

B. Have longsuffering & great mercy & keep forgiving:

Lk.17:4If he trespass against thee 7 times in a day, & 7 times... repent; thou shalt **forgive** him

Mat.18:21,22Lord, how **oft** shall my brother sin against me, & I forgive him? Until 70 times 7 (times)

Pro.17:9He that covereth (passes over) a transgression seeketh love

C. Make mercy a rule in your heart:

Pro.3:3,4Let not mercy & truth forsake thee: write them upon the table of thine heart

D. Forgive sincerely; don't harbour grudges or hatred:

Lev.19:17,18Thou shalt not bear any grudge...but thou shalt love

Mat.18:35From your **hearts** forgive...every one his brother

Eph.4:31,32Let **all** bitterness...be put away from you, with all malice: forgive one another (See Heb.12:15)

Jam.5:9Grudge **not** against another, brethren

E. God shows mercy to us if we are merciful & forgiving:

Psa.18:25With the merciful Thou wilt show Thyself merciful

Mat.5:7Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy

Mat.6:12Forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors

Mat.6:14If ye forgive men their trespasses, your Heavenly Father will also forgive you

Mk.11:25Forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father... may forgive you your trespasses

Lk.6:37Condemn not, & ye shall not be condemned: forgive, & ye shall be forgiven

F. But woe to the unmerciful:

Mat.6:15If ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will (God) forgive your trespasses (See also Mk.11:26)

Mat.18:23-35So...shall (God) do also unto you, if ye...forgive not every one his brother their trespasses

Jam.2:13He shall have judgment without mercy, that hath showed no mercy

G. The self-righteous feel they don't sin & don't need forgiveness; therefore they are unloving & unforgiving to others:

Lk.7:47bTo whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little

Lk.15:25-30[The faithful older brother was angry that his father forgave the penitent prodigal son]

Lk.18:9Certain trusted in themselves that they were righteous, & [therefore] despised others

11. The limits of forgiveness:

2Pet.3:9The Lord...is **longsuffering** to us, not willing that any should perish, but that all should (repent)

A. Even God's forgiveness is balanced with justice:

Num.14:1-3,11-23[Although God **pardoned** them (vs.19,20), the Jews weren't allowed to enter the promised land]

2Sam.12:7-14[God forgave David, but because his sin was so serious, he was still punished & his child died]

1Chr.21:1-14,17[David sinned, then repented & begged forgiveness, but the Lord still sent a severe punishment]

2Chr.36:15,16He had compassion...but they mocked, despised...wrath of the Lord arose...till there was no remedy

Pro.29:1[Hardened rebels] destroyed, & that without remedy

Mat.21:33-41[After showing mercy & patience, God destroyed the unrepentant wicked] (See also Mk.12:1-9)

(Compare 2Chr.33:1-19; Jer.15:1-4 & compare Mat. 5:44,45; Heb.6:7,8.)

B. He does not forgive wicked or unrepentant offenders:

Isa.22:12-14This iniquity not...purged from you till you die

Mat.12:31,32[Blasphemy against the Holy Spirit—rejecting Jesus, Jn.15:26—**not** forgiven now or ever]

Rom.1:29-32They which commit such things are worthy of death (See also Rom.2:2,3 ; Heb.10:26-31.)

C. Sometimes interceding prayer will not make Him forgive:

(See Jer.7:16; 14:7-12; 16:5; Compare Jer.15:1 & Ezk.14:14,18,20.)

D. It is right and godly to hate the anti-God wicked:

Eccl.3:8A time to love, & a time to hate

2Chr.19:2bShouldest thou help the ungodly, & love them that hate the Lord? Therefore is wrath upon thee

Psa.26:5I have hated the congregation of evildoers

Psa.97:10Ye that love the Lord, hate evil

Psa.139:21,22Do not I hate them, O Lord, that hate Thee? I hate them with perfect hatred: I count them mine enemies

E. The unrepentant wicked are not forgiven & must pay for their evil-doing:

2Thes.1:6-9It is a **righteous** thing with God to (pay back) tribulation to them that trouble you

Rev.6:9-11[Saints in Heaven pray for God to avenge their blood on the wicked who killed them]

Rev.16:5,6Thou art **righteous**, O Lord...because Thou hast **judged** ...for they have shed the blood of saints

(Caution: Pro.25:21,22; Rom.12:19,20; Deut.32:35.)

(See also Gen.6:5-7,11-13; 7:21-23; 2Pet.2:4-6; Jude 6, 7,14,15.)

12. Even erring Christians must repent to be forgiven:

A. No obligation to forgive unrepentant brethren:

Lk.17:3If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; & **if** he repent, forgive him (See also Mat.18:15)

(See also Rom.16:17; 1Cor.5:11,13; 2Thes.3:6,14; Tit. 3:10; 2Jn.10,11 re: not forgiving those who wilfully sin against the truth)

B. There is a time to be firm:

1Cor.4:18,21What will ye? Shall I come unto you with a **rod**, or **love**

Tit.1:13Rebuke them **sharply**, that they may be sound in the faith

C. Show mercy & patience in order to help them repent, & do not pardon them until they do:

Lk.13:6-9[Parable of patiently tending the unfruitful tree, warning it will be cut down if it doesn't respond]

Rom.2:3-6[Don't mistake God's patience for forgiveness; "the goodness of God" is to "lead thee to **repentance**"]

(See also Gal.6:1)

D. Serious offenders must change, not merely be "sorry":

Isa.55:7Let the wicked **forsake** his way...& let him return unto the Lord, & [then] He will have mercy...& pardon

Mat.3:8Bring forth **fruits** meet for (worthy of) **repentance**

Mat.3:10Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down [judged] (See also Mat.7:19; Lk.3:8,9.)

(See also Psa.51:10; 101:3; Jer.3:10b; Hos.6:4.)

E. They must confess their sin & ask for forgiveness:

Psa.32:5I **acknowledged** my sin unto thee...& Thou forgavest

Psa.86:5Thou, Lord, art good, & **ready** to forgive; & plenteous in mercy unto all them that **call** upon Thee

Acts 3:19**Repent** ye...that your sins may be blotted out

1Jn.1:9**If** we confess our sins, He is faithful...to forgive

2Cor.2:6-8[After punishment] ye ought to forgive him, lest [he] be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow

F. Don't use this as an excuse to be unforgiving:

Mat.5:22Whosoever is angry with his brother **without** a [legitimate] **cause** shall be in danger of the judgment

G. God still loves the wayward, & you should too:

Psa.89:30-33I will visit their transgression with the rod...[but] My lovingkindness will I not utterly take from him

2Thes.3:15Count him not as an enemy, but admonish as a brother

(See also Jam.5:19,20)

H. When they repent, He will love them freely:

Hos.14:4I will love them freely: for Mine anger is turned away from him

Special chapters:

1Cor.13; 1Jn.4.

Our Relationship with the Lord

--Includes dedication, devotion & loving & reverencing the Lord

1. We worship the Lord by loving Him:

A. We are to love the Lord with all our heart:

Deut.6:5 Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, & with all thy soul, & with all thy might

Deut.10:12 What doth the Lord require of thee, but...to love Him... with all thy heart & with all thy soul

Mat.22:37,38 This is the **first & great** commandment

(See also Deut.30:6,20; Josh.22:5; 23:11.)

B. Our souls should thirst for God:

Psa.42:1,2 As the hart panteth after the water brooks, so panteth my soul after Thee, O God. My soul thirsteth for God

Psa.63:1b My soul thirsteth for Thee...in a dry & thirsty land

(See also Psa.143:6; Mat.5:6; Jn.4:10,14.)

C. We should greatly desire Him:

Psa.27:4 One thing have I desired...that will I seek after; that I may...behold the beauty of the Lord

Psa.16:8 I have set the Lord always before me...at my right hand

Psa.63:8 My soul followeth hard after Thee

Psa.84:2 My soul longeth, even fainteth for courts of the Lord

Isa.26:9a With my soul have I desired Thee in the night

D. We are to desire Him above all else:

Psa.73:25 Whom have I in Heaven but Thee? And there is none upon earth that I desire beside Thee

Isa.26:8b The desire of our soul is to Thy name

E. We are to worship Jesus as we worship God:

Jn.5:23 All men should honour the Son even **as...**the Father

Phi.2:9-11 At the name of Jesus every knee should bow...every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord

Col.1:18b(He) is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things He might have the preeminence

1Jn.5:1Every one that loveth Him (God) that begat loveth Him (Jesus) also that is begotten of Him

F. Why we love & worship Jesus:

1Jn.3:16Hereby perceive we the love of God, because He (Jesus) laid down His life for us

1Jn.4:19We love Him, because He first loved us

Rev.5:8-13Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive...honour, & glory, & blessing

(See also 1Jn.2:23; 4:15.)

2. How we show our love for the Lord:

A. By loving & obeying His Word:

Jn.14:21He that [keepeth] My commandments, **he** it is that **loveth** Me

Deut.11:1Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, & keep His...statutes, & His judgments, & His commandments, alway

Job 23:12I esteemed (God's) Words...more than my necessary food

Psa.119:20My soul breaketh for the longing that it hath unto Thy judgements (Word) (See also Psa.119:40)

Psa.119:131I...panted: for I longed for Thy commandments

1Jn.3:22We keep His commandments, & do things that are pleasing in His sight

1Jn.5:3This is the love of God...keep His commandments

2Jn.6This is love, that we walk after His commandments

(See also Psa.119:47,48,97,113,127,140,159,163,167.)

B. By worshipping Him in prayer:

Psa.18:1,3aI will love Thee, O Lord...I will call upon the Lord

Psa.63:1-4Thou art my God; early will I seek Thee...to see Thy power & Thy glory

Psa.91:14,15Because he hath set his love upon Me...he shall call upon Me, & I will answer him

Psa.116:1,2I love the Lord...therefore will I call upon Him

C. By loving one another:

Mat.25:40Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My brethren, ye have done it unto Me

1Jn.4:20,21Commandment...he who loveth God love his brother also

D. By listening to His voice:

1Sam.3:9,10If He call thee...say, "Speak, Lord; for Thy servant heareth"

Psa.143:8aCause me to hear Thy lovingkindness

Isa.50:5The Lord hath opened mine ear, & I was not rebellious

E. By obeying, following & serving Him:

Jn.10:27My sheep hear My voice...& they **follow** Me

Jn.12:26Follow Me; where I am, there shall also My servant be

Jn.15:10If ye keep My commandments, ye shall abide in My love

Deut.10:12,13What doth the Lord thy God require of thee, but to... serve (Him)...keep the commandments of the Lord

Josh.24:14Fear the Lord, & serve Him in sincerity & truth

1Sam.12:24Fear the Lord, & serve Him in truth with all your heart

Eph.6:7Doing service, as to the Lord, & not to men

Heb.12:28Serve God acceptably with reverence & godly fear

F. By self-sacrifice & giving our lives in love:

Mat.10:38He that taketh not his cross, & followeth after Me, is not worthy of Me

Jn.10:17My Father (doth) love me, because I lay down My life

1Cor.15:31I die daily (See also 2Cor.11:23-28)

Gal.2:20I am crucified with Christ

Phi.3:7,8I count all things but loss...that I may win Christ

Rev.12:11They loved not their lives unto the death

G. By honouring & obeying Him more than man:

Acts 5:29We ought to obey God rather than men

(See also Acts 4:19)

H. By giving to Him & supporting His work:

Pro.3:9Honour the Lord with...the firstfruits of all thine increase

(See also Lev.27:30; 1Cor.9:6-11.)

3. We are to love God above all else:

Mat.22:37Love...God with all thy heart...& soul...& mind

A. We are not to love—or put—anything before Him:

Exo.20:3Thou shalt have **no** other gods before Me (See also Psa.96:4)

B. God is jealous of your love for Him; don't provoke Him:

Exo.20:3,5Thou shalt **not** serve them (other gods): for I the Lord... am a jealous God

(See also Exo.34:14; Deut.32:16; 32:21; Isa.42:8; 1Cor.10:22.)

C. We are not even to love our loved ones more than God:

Gen.22:12Now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from Me

Mat.10:37He that loveth father or mother [or] son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me (See Lk.14:26)

D. We are not even to seek our physical needs above God:

Mat.4:4Not live by bread alone, but by every Word...of God

Mat.6:24No man can serve two masters: for he will hate one, & love the other...Ye cannot serve God & mammon

Mat.6:33Seek ye **first** the Kingdom of God, & His righteousness

(See also Psa.84:10,11; Mat.6:25-32.)

E. Seek Heavenly things, don't be overly attached to earthly things:

Mat.6:20,21 Lay up for yourselves treasure in Heaven...for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also

Lk.12:15 A man's life consisteth not in abundance of things

Col.3:1 Seek those things which are **above**, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God

Col.3:2 Set...affection on things above, not things on earth

(See also Heb.10:34)

F. Don't even put God's service above loving God:

Lk.11:42 Ye tithe...[but] pass over judgment & the love of God

Rev.2:3-5 For My name's sake hast **laboured**...nevertheless...thou hast left thy **first love**...thou art **fallen**

Lk.10:38-42 [The story of Martha busy serving, Mary listening to Jesus]

4. We are to fear & reverence the Lord:

A. Fearing God:

Deut.10:12 What doth the Lord require of thee, but to fear the Lord thy God

2Ki.17:35,36 The Lord...Him shall ye fear, & Him shall ye worship

Eccl.12:13 Fear God, & keep His commandments

Isa.8:12,13 Let Him (God) be your fear, & let Him be your dread Lk.12:4,5 Be not afraid of them (men)...I will forewarn you Whom ye shall fear: Fear Him (God)...yea, I say, Fear Him

(See also Mat.10:28)

B. Fearing (reverencing) God is healthy:

Psa.19:9 The fear of the Lord is clean (Compare with Pro.29:25)

C. The benefits of fearing God:

Psa.111:10 The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom (See also Pro.9:10)

Pro.1:7The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge

Pro.14:26In the fear of the Lord is strong confidence

Pro.14:27The fear of the Lord is a fountain of life, to depart from the snares of death

Pro.16:6bBy the fear of the Lord men depart from evil

D. God's blessings on us for fearing Him:

Psa.25:12He that feareth the Lord...shall He teach in the way

Psa.31:19How great is Thy goodness...for them that fear Thee

Psa.103:13Lord pitieth (has compassion on) them that fear Him

Psa.147:11The Lord taketh pleasure in them that fear Him

Lk.1:50His mercy is on them that fear Him

Acts 10:35He that feareth Him...is accepted with Him

5. Resting in the Lord:

A. The Bible instructs us to "rest in the Lord":

Psa.37:7Rest in the Lord, & wait patiently for Him

Heb.4:3aWe which have believed do enter into rest

Heb.4:9There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God

B. Take time to sit at Jesus' feet:

Lk.10:38-42Mary...sat at Jesus' feet & heard His Word. But Martha was cumbered...serving. Mary hath chosen good part

C. Cast your burdens & worries on the Lord:

Psa.55:22Cast thy burden upon the Lord, & He shall sustain thee

Mat.11:28-30Come unto Me, all ye that labour & are heavy laden, & I will give you rest...unto your souls

1Pet.5:7Casting all your care upon Him; for He careth for you

D. Quietly meditate on God's power:

Gen.24:63 Isaac went out to meditate in the field at eventide

Job 37:14 Stand still, & consider the wondrous works of God

Psa.46:10 Be still & know that I am God

1Thes.4:11 Study to be quiet

E. Be humble before Him:

1Ki.3:7 [King Solomon prayed to God:] I am but a little child

Isa.57:15 The high & lofty One that inhabiteth eternity...I dwell with him that is of a contrite & humble spirit

Mic.6:8 What doth the Lord require of thee, but to...walk humbly with thy God

6. Drawing close & resting in the "Secret Place":

Heb.4:11 Let us labour...to enter into that rest

Jam.4:8a Draw nigh to God & He will draw nigh to you

A. The "secret place" of God's presence:

Psa.91:1 He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty

Psa.17:8 **Hide** me under the shadow of Thy wings

Psa.31:19,20a Thou shalt hide them in the secret of Thy presence

Psa.61:4I will trust in the covert (secret place) of Thy wings

(See also Psa.27:5; 32:7; 119:114.)

B. Rest in "the shadow of His wings":

Deut.32:11,12 As an eagle stirreth up her nest, fluttereth over her young...so the Lord [watches over His people]

Mat.23:37b [Jesus longs to gather us to Him] even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings
(See also Lk.13:34)

Psa.91:4He shall cover thee with His feathers, & under His wings shalt thou trust

Psa.57:1My soul trusteth in Thee...in the shadow of Thy wings

(See also Psa.36:7b; 63:7b; Ruth 2:12)

7. The benefits of taking quiet time with the Lord:

A. God heals & restores our souls:

Psa.23:2,3aHe leadeth me beside still waters...restoreth my soul

Mal.4:2Unto you that fear My name shall the Sun of righteousness [Jesus] arise with healing in His wings

2Cor.4:16We faint not; though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day
(See also Eph.4:23)

B. He gives us joy:

Psa.5:11Let all those that put their trust in Thee rejoice...Let them that love Thy name be joyful in Thee

Psa.16:11In Thy presence is fulness of joy

Psa.40:16Let those that seek Thee rejoice & be glad in Thee

Psa.51:12Restore unto me the joy of Thy salvation

(See also Neh. 8:10b; 1Pet.1:8.)

C. He gives us spiritual strength:

Isa.40:29-31They that wait on the Lord shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings...& not be weary

Isa.41:1Keep silence before Me...renew their strength

Isa.30:7Their strength is to sit still

Isa.30:15In quietness & in confidence shall be your strength

Dan.11:32bThe people that do **know** their God shall be strong

Judg.5:31Let them that love Him be as the sun when he goeth forth in his might

Eph.3:16 That He would grant you...to be strengthened with might by His Spirit in the inner man
(See Psa.138:3)

Col.1:9,11 Strengthened with all might, according to His...power

D. He gives us rest in the Spirit:

Exo.33:14 My presence shall go with thee, & I will give thee rest

1Ki.8:56 The Lord...hath given rest unto His people

Mat.11:28-30 Come unto Me...I will give you rest...unto your souls

E. When we take time to love Him, He loves us:

Pro.8:17 I love them that love Me

Jn.14:21,23 He that loveth Me (Jesus) shall be loved of My Father

Jn.16:27 The Father...loveth you, because ye have loved Me

F. Other benefits of loving the Lord:

Deut.30:16 Love the Lord...walk in His ways...that thou mayest live ...& the Lord shall bless thee

Psa.91:14 Because he set his love upon Me, I will deliver him; I will set him on high, because he hath known My name

Psa.119:132 Be merciful...unto those that love Thy name

Psa.145:20 The Lord preserveth all them that love Him

Pro.8:21 I...cause those that love Me to inherit substance

Eph.6:24 Grace be with them that love Jesus Christ in sincerity 1Cor.8:3 If any man love God, the same is known of Him

Jam.1:12 The crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love Him (See also 2Tim.4:8)

(See also Deut.11:13-15,22,23; Psa.36:10.)

8. Hindrances to our relationship with the Lord:

A. Being "too busy" to take time with Him:

Isa.28:12 This is the refreshing wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest: yet they would not hear

Mat.23:37bHow often would I have gathered [thee], as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, & ye would not

Lk.10:39,40Mary sat at Jesus' feet, & heard His Word. But Martha was cumbered about with much serving

Jn.5:40Ye will not come to Me, that ye might have life

B. Becoming caught up with the world & its cares:

Mat.13:22The care of this world, & the deceitfulness of riches... choke the Word (See also Lk.8:14)

2Tim.2:4[To please God, don't become entangled with the affairs of this life]

1Jn.2:15If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him

C. Cooling off & losing our "first love":

Jer.2:2-5The kindness of thy youth, the love...when thou wentest after Me...[now] gone far from Me...become vain

Mat.24:12The love of many shall wax (grow) cold

Rev.2:4,5I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast **left thy first love**

D. Doubting the Lord's love for you:

Mal.1:2I have loved you, saith the Lord. Yet ye say, Wherein hast Thou loved us?

E. Harboursing unrepented sin in our hearts:

Psa.66:18If I regard iniquity in my heart, Lord will not hear me

Isa.59:2Your iniquities have separated between you & your God

F. Being too full of our own thoughts:

Isa.65:2I have spread out My hands all the day unto a rebellious people, which walk...after their own thoughts

(See also Psa.10:4; 119:113; Isa.55:7.)

9. Our special relationship with the Lord:

A. Obedient believers are a blessed & chosen people:

1Pet.2:9Ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar (special) people

Exo.19:5If ye will obey My voice...ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto Me above all people

Deut.7:6God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto Himself, above all people...on the face of the earth

Deut.14:2Thou art an holy people...a peculiar people

Isa.43:4Thou wast precious in My sight...& I have loved thee

Mat.22:14Many are called, but few are chosen

Jn.15:16I have chosen you, & ordained you

(See also Eph.1:4b; Rev.17:14b.)

B. Jesus bought us; we belong to Him:

1Cor.3:23Ye are Christ's

1Cor.6:20Ye are **bought** with a **price**...your body & your spirit...are God's (See also 1Cor.7:23)

Rev.5:9Thou wast slain, & hast **redeemed** us...by Thy **blood**

1Pet.1:18,19Ye were...redeemed...with the precious blood of Christ

(See also Mat.20:28; Lk.10:45; Gal.3:13; 1Tim.2:5b,6.)

C. Instead of making us slaves, He adopted us as children & heirs:

Gal.4:5To **redeem** (us)...that we might receive the **adoption** of sons (See also Eph.1:5-7)

Rom.8:14-16Ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father

Mat.12:50Whosoever shall do the will of (God)...the same is My brother, & sister, & mother

Gal.4:6Because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father

Gal.4:7Thou art no more a servant, but a son; &...an **heir**

Rom.8:17If children...then heirs of God & joint-heirs with Christ

(See also Jn.15:15; 2Cor.6:18; Heb.2:11; 1Jn.3:1)

D. We are spiritually married to the Lord:

Isa.54:5Thy Maker is thine husband; the Lord of hosts

Isa.62:5As the bridegroom rejoiceth over the bride, so shall thy God rejoice over thee

Jer.3:14Turn...saith the Lord; for I am married unto you

Hos.2:19,20I will betroth thee unto Me for ever

Rom.7:4Ye should be married to another, even to Him (Jesus)

2Cor.11:2I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ

Rev.19:7-9The **marriage** of the Lamb (**Jesus**) is come, & His **wife** (us, the church) hath made herself ready

(See also Ezk.16:8; Eph.5:28-32.)

E. We live & abide in Him, & He lives in us:

Jn.14:23We will come unto him, & make Our **abode** with him

Jn.15:1-5[We are to abide in Jesus as a branch joined to a vine]

Jn.17:26That the **Love**...may be in them, & **I** in them

2Cor.5:17If any man be **in Christ**, he is a new creature

2Cor.6:16bI will dwell in them, & walk in them; &...be their God

1Jn.4:13Hereby know we that we dwell in Him, & He in us

1Jn.4:16He that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, & God in him (See also Acts 17:28)

F. We are Jesus' body:

Eph.1:22,23(Jesus is) the head over all things to the church, which is His body

Eph.5:30We are members of His body, of His flesh...His bones

Col.1:18aHe is the head of the body, the church

(See also 1Cor.12:12-27)

G. We are God's temple:

1Cor.6:19 Your body is temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you

2Cor.6:16 Ye are the temple of the living God

Eph.2:19-22 An holy temple...ye are builded together for an habitation of God

Heb.3:6 Christ...a Son over His Own house; whose house are we

H. Jesus is our shepherd, we are His sheep:

Jn.10:1-29 I am the good shepherd (See also Heb.13:20a)

Psa.23:1-4 The Lord is my shepherd...He leadeth me

Psa.95:7 He is our God; & we are...the sheep of His hand

Psa.100:3 We are His people, & the sheep of His pasture

(See also Psa.78:52; 79:13; Isa.40:11; Mat.25:32,33; Jn.21:15-17.)

I. He loved & rescued us when we were lost & gone astray:

1Pet.2:25 Ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd...of your souls

(See also Isa.53:6; Ezk.34:1-12; Mat.9:36; Lk.15:3-7; Jn.10:11.)

Fellowship

"The assembling of ourselves together." (Heb.10:25)

1. The Bible instructs us to fellowship:

A. The importance of fellowship:

Heb.10:25 Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together...but so much the **more** as ye see the day approaching

Psa.133:1-3 How good...for brethren to dwell together in unity

Mat.18:19,20 Where 2 or 3 are gathered...there am I in the midst

1Jn.1:7 If we walk in the light...have fellowship one with another

(See also 1Jn.1:3; Psa.119:63.)

B. We are one body in Jesus:

Rom.12:5 So we, being many, are one body in Christ, & every one members one of another (See also 1Cor.12:12-28.)

C. There is strength in united fellowship:

Deut.32:30 One chase a thousand, two put ten thousand to flight (See also Lev.26:8)

Eccl.4:9,10 Two are better than one...if they fall, one will lift up

Eccl.4:12 A threefold cord is not quickly broken

Acts 28:15 The brethren...came to meet us as far as Appi forum...whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, took courage

D. It's hard to be alone, without fellowship:

Eccl.4:10 Woe to him that is alone when he falleth; he hath not

2Tim.4:16 At my first answer no man stood with me

2. The reasons for fellowship:

A. Edification & inspiration:

Acts 2:42 They continued steadfastly in...doctrine & fellowship

1Cor.14:3,4 [Prophesying & doctrine edify the church]

1Cor.14:26 When ye come together...let all things be...edifying

B. Reading the Word together:

Neh.8:1-4a,8 The people gathered themselves together...Ezra read

Acts 15:30,31 Gathered multitude together...delivered the epistle

1Tim.4:13 Give attendance to reading, to exhortation...doctrine (See also Acts 16:4; Col.4:16; 1Thes.5:27.)

C. Exhortation & instruction:

Acts 15:32 Exhorted brethren with many words & confirmed them

Acts 20:7 When the disciples came together... Paul preached

Heb. 10:25 Assembling ourselves together... exhorting one another

(See also Acts 11:22,23; 15:36,41.)

D. Gathering for special prayer:

1 Tim. 4:14 The gift... which was given thee... with the laying on of hands of the presbytery (assembly of elders)

Jam. 5:14 Call for the elders of the church; & pray over him

E. United prayer:

Acts 1:13-15 [120 disciples gathered to pray in the upper room]

Acts 12:5,12 House... where many were gathered together praying

F. Having communion:

Acts 20:7a The disciples came together to break bread

G. Meeting to discuss important matters:

Acts 15:2,4 [Went] unto apostles & elders about this question

Acts 20:17,18 He called elders of the church... when they were come

Acts 21:17-19 All the elders were present... (Paul) declared what

H. Making a point to seek for fellowship:

(See Acts 21:3,4a; 27:2,3; 28:13,14.)

3. Holding meetings:

A. Everyone can contribute something:

1 Cor. 14:26 When ye come together... one of you hath a psalm, a doctrine, a tongue, a revelation, an interpretation

B. Be united & orderly during fellowship meetings:

Acts 4:32 The multitude of them which believed were of one heart & of one soul

1Cor.14:33,40In all the churches of the saints...let all things be done decently & in order
(See also 1Cor.11:17-34; 14:23-31; Jam.2:2-4.)

C. United singing during fellowship:

Ezra 3:11They sang together...praising & giving thanks

Mat.26:30And when they had sung an hymn, they went out

Heb.2:12In the midst of the church will I sing praise

D. End meetings with prayer:

Acts 20:36When he had thus spoken...he prayed with them all

Acts 21:5,6We departed...& we kneeled down & prayed

E. Fellowshiping together constantly:

Acts 2:46Continuing **daily** with one accord from house to house

4. Being "of one mind" & working together in unity:

1Cor.1:10No divisions among you...be perfectly joined together

1Cor.12:25Should be no schism in body... have the same care

Phi.2:2Be likeminded...being of one accord, of one mind

(See also Gal.2:9; 1Pet.3:8.)

5. Fellowship with the world:

A. Avoid intimate fellowship with the worldly:

Eph.5:11Have no fellowship with unfruitful works of darkness

2Cor.6:14-17Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers

(See also Jn.15:19; 1Cor.10:20,21; 1Jn.5:19.)

B. We cannot avoid some dealings with unbelievers:

Jn.17:15Not take them out of world...but keep them from evil

1Cor.5:9,10Not altogether [separate]...for then ye must go out

C. Use fellowship with unbelievers to win them:

Mat.9:9-13Why eateth your Master with publicans & sinners? I am come to call...sinners to repentance

1Cor.10:27,31If any that believe not bid you to a feast, & ye be disposed to go...do all to the glory of God

Witnessing

1. It is your duty, as a Christian, to witness:

A. Jesus gave "the Great Commission" to all His disciples:

Mat.4:19Follow Me, & I will make you fishers of men

Mk.16:15Go ye into all the world, & preach the gospel

Acts 1:8Ye shall be witnesses...unto uttermost part of earth

Mat.28:19,20Go ye therefore, & teach all nations

Mk.13:10The gospel must...be published among all nations

Lk.24:47Repentance & remission of sins should be preached in His name among all nations

Jn.15:16Ordained you, that ye should go & bring forth fruit (See also Mat.24:14)

B. Jesus sends you as His labourer & witness:

Isa.6:8Whom shall I send? Here am **I**; send **me**

Mat.9:37,38Labourers are few... Pray the Lord...that He will send forth labourers into His harvest

Lk.9:2(Jesus) **sent** them to preach...the Kingdom of God

Jn.20:21As My Father hath sent Me, even so send I **you**

Rom.10:14,15How shall they hear without a preacher? And how shall they preach, except they be sent?

2Cor.5:20We are **ambassadors** for Christ

2. Why you need to witness:

A. You talk about what you believe in:

Psa.107:2Let the redeemed (saved) of the Lord **say** so

Jn.3:11We speak that we do know, & testify that we have seen

Acts 4:20We...speak the things which we have seen & heard

2Cor.4:13I believed, therefore have I spoken (See Psa.116:10a)

B. To save souls from death:

Pro.14:25A true witness delivereth souls

Acts 26:18To open their eyes, turn from power of Satan unto God

Jam.5:20He which converteth sinner...save a soul from death

C. If you don't, you & they will suffer:

Ezk.3:17-19Nor speakest to warn the wicked...his blood will I require at **thine** hand (See also Acts 20:26,27)

Mk.8:38Of him shall Son of man be ashamed when He cometh

Lk.12:8,9He that denieth Me before men shall be denied

1Cor.9:16Woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel

2Cor.4:3If our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost

(See also Jer.8:20; Jon.1:1-17.)

3. Don't be shy or ashamed to witness:

Psa.119:46I will speak of Thy testimonies...& **not** be ashamed

Isa.40:9Lift up thy voice with strength; be not afraid

Isa.62:6bYe that make mention of the Lord, keep not silence

Mat.5:14-16Ye are the light of the world...cannot be hid...let (it) shine before men (See also Mk.4:21; Lk.8:16.)

Mk.8:38Whosoever shall be ashamed of Me & of My Words...of him shall the Son of man be ashamed

Acts 18:9bBe not afraid, but speak, & hold not thy peace

Rom.1:16I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ

Eph.6:18-20(Pray)...that I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak

1Thes.2:2We were bold...to speak the gospel of God

2Tim.1:8aBe not thou ashamed of the testimony of our Lord

(See also Jer.1:6-9)

4. Pointers on how to be a good witness:

Pro.18:13[Ask questions] He that answereth a matter before he

Jam.1:19[Listen] Let every man be swift to **hear**, slow to speak

Pro.20:5[Get them to speak their heart] Draw it out

Mat.12:34bOut of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh

Acts 26:27[Ask what they believe] Believest thou the prophets?

Acts 17:23-28[Find points of agreement] Your own poets have said

1Cor.9:19-22I (became) all things to all men, that I might save

Acts 26:1-20[Give your own personal testimony. Example of Paul's]

Mk.4:2[Illustrate your point with true stories] (Jesus) taught them many things by parables

Lk.13:1-5[Use current events: Pilate; tower of Siloam falling]

Acts 2:40[Patiently explain] And with many other words did He

Psa.126:5,6[Have a broken heart] **Sow** in tears...**reap** in joy

Mat.9:36He was **moved** with **compassion** on them (lost sheep)

1Cor.13:1[Speak in **love**, or it's just empty words like sound ing brass or a tinkling cymbal]

1Sam.16:23[Music has spiritual power: Example of David playing the harp for King Saul]

Lk.14:23[Be zealous & determined] **Compel** them to come in

1Ki.18:21a[Bring them to a decision] How long halt ye between two opinions? (See Josh.24:15; Heb.3:7,8a; 2Cor.6:2.)

5. Use the Word in your witnessing:

A. The Word is powerful & convinces people:

2Chr.17:9They had the book of the law of the Lord with them... & went about...& taught the people

Lk.8:5,11Sower sowed seed...the **seed** is the Word of God

Jn.4:41,42Many more believed because of His Own Word...Now we believe, not because of (the woman's) saying

Jn.5:39Search the Scriptures...they testify of Me (Jesus)

Jn.20:31These written that ye might believe Jesus is Christ

Acts 17:2,3Paul...reasoned with them out of the Scriptures

Acts 18:28He mightily convinced...showing by the Scriptures

Tit.1:9The Word, sound doctrine...convince the gainsayers

B. Scripture memorisation is important to witnessing:

Psa.119:42Wherewith to answer him...for I trust in Thy Word

Pro.22:17-21Answer words of truth to them that send unto thee

Mal.2:6The law of truth was in his mouth...he did turn many away from iniquity

Mat.12:34b,35aA good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things

Acts 13:32-35[Quote the Word:] As it is written in the second Psalm

2Tim.4:2Preach the Word...exhort with all...doctrine

1Pet.3:15Be ready always to give an answer to every man

6. Keeping your witness simple:

Jn.12:32And **I**, (Jesus) if **I** be lifted up...will draw all men unto Me

1Cor.1:17Preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words

1Cor.2:1,2I came not with excellency of speech or of wisdom 1Cor.2:4 My preaching not with enticing words of man's wisdom

1Cor.14:9Except ye utter words easy to be understood...how shall it be known what is spoken?

2Cor.1:12In simplicity & sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom

2Cor.3:12We use great plainness of speech

7. What you should preach (witness about):

A. Preach the gospel; preach Jesus:

Isa.58:1Show My people their transgression &...sins

Mat.28:19,20Teach...**all** things whatsoever I have commanded you

Mk.16:15Preach the **gospel** [good news of salvation in Jesus]

Lk.9:2(Jesus) sent them to preach the Kingdom of God

Jn.3:16[That they can have eternal life by believing in Jesus]

Acts 4:2bThey taught...the resurrection from the dead

Acts 5:42They ceased not to teach & preach **Jesus Christ**

Acts 13:32-35[Jesus fulfilled Old Testament Messianic prophecies]

Acts 13:38Through (Jesus) is preached forgiveness of sins

Acts 20:21Testifying...repentance toward God, faith toward Jesus

Rom.5:8God commendeth His love toward us...while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us

1Cor.1:23We preach Christ crucified

1Cor.15:3I delivered unto you, that Christ died for our sins

1Cor.15:4And that He was buried & rose again (from the dead)

2Cor.4:5 We preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord

2Cor.5:20 We pray you...Be ye reconciled to God

1Tim.1:15 That Jesus came into the world to save sinners

1Jn.4:14 We testify...the Father sent the Son to be the saviour (See also Acts 10:42; 24:25a; Eph.3:8.)

B. What not to talk about:

1Cor.3:2 Not with meat (strong doctrines)...ye were not able to bear it

1Thes.2:3-6 Our exhortation was not of deceit, nor in guile. Neither at any time used we flattering words

2Tim.2:23 Foolish & unlearned questions avoid

Tit.3:9 Avoid foolish questions...& contentions & strivings

Heb.5:14 Strong meat (doctrine) belongeth to (the mature)

8. Who to witness to:

A. Jesus commanded us to witness to the whole world:

Mk.16:15 Preach the gospel to every creature (person)

Mat.28:19 Go ye therefore, & teach all nations

Lk.8:39 Return to thine own house...show how great things

Mk.5:19 Go home to thy friends, & tell them

Mat.11:5b The poor have the gospel preached to them

Isa.61:1 Preach good tidings unto the meek

Acts 26:22a Witnessing both to small & great

Rom.15:20,21 I strived to preach...to they that have not heard

Acts 22:21 Unto the Gentiles [people of faraway nations]

Acts 28:28 Salvation sent unto Gentiles [receptive heathen]

Acts 17:18-21 [To curious philosophers & intellectuals]

Ezk.2:7[Give everyone a chance, even the rebellious]

Ezk.3:17,18Warn the wicked to turn from his wicked way

B. Who not to witness to:

Mat.9:13I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners

Pro.23:9Speak not in the ears of a fool: for he will despise

Acts 13:45,46[Don't continue witnessing to unreceptive rejectors] Mat.7:6 Give not that which is holy unto dogs [unreceptive people], neither cast your pearls before swine

Acts 18:6When they opposed & blasphemed...he said, I will go

Mat.10:14Whosoever shall...not hear your words...**depart**

Tit.3:10,11Heretic after the first & second admonition reject

Pro.14:7Go from the presence of a foolish man

9. A winning personal example:

A. Your personal example is part of your witness:

Mat.5:16Let your light so shine...men may **see** your **works**

Phi.2:15,16aBe blameless & harmless...shine as lights in the world; holding forth the Word of life

1Tim.4:12bBe thou an **example** of the believers

2Cor.3:2**Ye** are our epistle (letter)...known and read of all men

Tit.2:7,8In all things showing a pattern of good works

1Pet.3:1,2[Unbelieving mates to be won by believer's sample] (See also 1Tim.5:14b)

Jn.13:35By this shall all men **know** that ye are My disciples, if ye have **love** one to another

B. Sample of happiness is appealing:

Psa.51:12,13Restore unto me the **joy** of Thy salvation. **Then** sinners shall be converted unto Thee

C. Lovingly win others, not by arguing:

1Thes.1:7,8We were gentle...affectionately desirous of you

2Tim.2:23,24The servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle

(See also 1Cor.13:1,2,8)

D. Personal example must back up your witness:

Jn.13:15I (Jesus) have given an example, ye should do as I

Rom.2:21-24Thou which teachest another, teachest thou not thy self? Thou that sayest man should not...dost thou?

(See also 1Cor.11:1; 1Tim.6:1; Tit.2:4,5.)

10. When to witness:

A. We are to constantly witness:

Eccl.11:6In the morning sow thy seed, & in the evening

Jn.4:35Look on the fields; they are white **already** to harvest

Acts 5:42**Daily** in the temple, & in every house, they ceased not

2Tim.4:2**In** season, **out** of season [even when "not convenient"]

1Pet.3:15Be ready **always** to give an answer to every man

(See also Acts 20:31)

B. Pray for God to "open up" witnessing opportunities:

Col.4:3Praying...that God would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ

C. Wait until it's God's time to witness to certain people:

Mat.10:5-7Go not into the way of the Gentiles...but go rather... [But later said,] Go into **all** the world"—Mk.16:15

Acts 16:6,7(Paul) forbidden...to preach...in **Asia** [but **did** with great success a couple years later—Acts 19:1,10]

11. Where to witness:

In your own house (Acts 28:30,31); In every house (Acts 5:42); From house to house (Acts 20:20); In schools & lecture halls (Acts 19:9,10); In church (Heb.2:12); In marketplaces (Acts 17:17); In different racial neighbourhoods (Jn.4:1-42); In the streets, lanes, highways, hedges (Lk.14:21b,23); All

over the city (Lk.8:39b); In cars [chariots] (Acts 8:29-35); On boats (Acts 27:22-25); In prison (Phi.1:12,13); In court (Mat.10:18-20); In the wilderness (Mat.3:1,2); Everywhere (Acts 8:4).

12. The "fruit" Christians should bear is other Christians, new saved souls:

Lk.8:5-15["The Parable of the Sower"] (See also Mat.13:3-8, 18-23; Mk.4:2-8,14-20.)

Lk.8:11The seed is the Word of God [which we sow in hearts]

Mk.4:14The sower (witnesser) soweth the Word

Pro.11:30He that winneth souls is wise

Jn.12:24But if it die (to self), it bringeth forth much fruit

Jn.15:5He that abideth in Me...bringeth forth much fruit

Jn.15:8Herein is (God) glorified, that ye bear much fruit

Rom.7:4Married to (Jesus)...bring forth fruit unto God

13. The Holy Spirit & witnessing:

A. The Holy Spirit anoints you to witness about Jesus:

Isa.61:1Spirit of the Lord upon me...anointed me to preach

Acts 1:8Ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: & ye shall be **witnesses**

Acts 4:29-31They were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and spake the Word of God with boldness

1Thes.1:5Our gospel came...in power, & in the Holy Ghost

(See also Col.1:27-29)

B. Only God & His Holy Spirit can really win people:

Jn.6:44No man can come to Me, except the Father...draw him

Zech.4:6bNot by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit

Mat.10:20It is not ye, but the Spirit...which speaketh in you

Jn.15:5Without Me ye can do nothing

1Cor.3:6,7I have planted...but **God** gave the increase

14. Witnessing, the greatest work on earth:

A. Witnessing is a job worth giving all for:

Mat.4:19-22 Follow Me, & I will make you fishers of **men**...they left their nets (See also Lk.5:9-11)

Mk.8:35 Lose his life for My sake & the gospel's

Mk.10:29 [Leave house, family, wife, lands for gospel's sake]

Lk.9:59,60 Let the dead bury the dead: but go thou & preach

B. Heavenly reward for witnessing:

Pro.11:30 He that winneth souls is wise

Dan.12:3 They that be wise shall shine...and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars (See Mat.13:43)

Lk.12:8 Him shall the Son of man confess before the angels

1Cor.3:8b Every man receive...reward according to his labours

1Cor.9:16,17a If I (preach the gospel) willingly, I have a **reward**

15. Reactions to the gospel:

A. The receptive believe the Word:

Jon.3:1-9 [Jonah preached in Ninevah, & entire city repented]

Jn.4:39-42 [Samaritans at Sychar received Jesus & believed]

Acts 8:5,6,8,14 [Philip preached in Samaria]...people with one accord gave heed...Samaria received the Word of God

Acts 16:14 Lydia...whose heart the Lord opened...she (listened)

Acts 16:32-34 They spake unto him the Word...he rejoiced, believing

B. The unreceptive reject the Word:

Lk.8:5,12 Devil taketh away Word, lest they believe

1Cor.1:18 Preaching...is to them that perish foolishness

2Cor.4:4The god of this world blinded minds of (unbelieving)

(See also Jer.36:all)

C. Unpopularity & persecution because of witnessing:

Lk.6:22Men shall cast out your name as evil, for (Jesus') sake

Jn.7:7The world...hateth (Me), because I testify it (is) evil

Acts 16:20,21These men do exceedingly trouble our city, & teach customs which are not lawful

D. Our witness a testimony against the unrepentant:

Mat.10:18Brought before kings...for a testimony against them

Mk.6:11Shake off dust...for a testimony against them

Jn.12:48The Word that I have spoken...shall judge him

16. Witnessing boldly despite opposition:

A. Neither threats, persecution nor martyrdom should stop us:

Lk.21:12-15They shall persecute you...I will give you wisdom

Act 4:29,31,33Behold their threatenings...spake Word with boldness Act 14:1-3a Long time abode they speaking boldly in the Lord

Act 20:24None of these things move me, neither count life dear

1Thes.2:2Even after we suffered...we were bold to speak

Rev.6:9Them that were slain for Word of God & testimony

Rev.12:11They overcame him by the Word...loved not their lives Rev.20:4 Them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus

B. Witness even if man's laws forbid it:

Amos 7:12-15[Evil priest said:] Prophecy **not** at Bethel...The **Lord** said unto me (Amos), Go, prophesy

Mat.10:16Be ye wise as serpents, harmless as doves

Lk.10:3I send you forth as lambs among wolves: be wise

Acts 4:17-20 We cannot but speak the things we have seen & heard

Acts 5:27-29 We ought to obey **God** rather than men

Acts 5:40-42 Commanded they should not speak. They ceased not

17. More verses about witnessing & testifying:

A. From the Old Testament:

Deut.32:3 (I will publish the name of the Lord); 1Chr.16:8 (Make known His deeds among the people); Psa.9:11 (Declare among the people His doings); Psa.18:49 (I give thanks unto Thee among the heathen); Psa.26:7 (Publish...tell of all Thy wondrous works); Psa.66:16 (I will declare what He hath done for my soul); Psa.71:15 (My mouth shall show forth...Thy salvation all the day); Psa.89:1 (With my mouth will I make known Thy faithfulness to all); Psa.96:3 (Declare His...wonders among all people); Psa.96:10 (Say among the heathen that the Lord reigneth); Psa.119:13 (With my lips have I declared judgments of Thy mouth); Psa.119:27 (So shall I talk of Thy wondrous works); Psa.145:4-7 (I will speak of glorious honour of Thy majesty); Psa.145:11,12 (Make known to the sons of men His mighty acts); Isa.43:10a (Ye are My witnesses, saith the Lord); Isa.52:7 (How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace).

B. From the New Testament:

Mk.16:20 (They went forth, & preached everywhere); Lk.8:1 (Preaching & showing glad tidings of the Kingdom); Jn.4:39 (Many believed on Him for the saying of the woman); Jn.21:17 (Lovest thou Me? Feed My sheep); Acts 5:20 (Go, speak to the people...all the words of this life); Acts 5:32 (And we are His witnesses of these things); Acts 10:42 (He commanded us to preach unto the people, & to testify); Acts 13:49 (Word of the Lord published throughout all the region); Acts 18:25 (Being fervent in spirit, he spake & taught diligently); Acts 22:15 (Thou shalt be His witness unto all men); Rom.10:15b (How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel); 2Tim.2:2 (The things which thou hast heard...commit to faithful men, who shall...teach others); 2Tim.4:2 (Preach the Word; be instant in season, out of season).

Giving

1. The Bible commands believers to give:

Deut.15:7,8 Thou shalt not harden thine heart, nor shut thine hand ...thou shalt open thine hand wide

Pro.3:27 Withhold not good from them to whom it is due

Pro.3:28 Say not, tomorrow I will give; when thou hast it by thee

Mat.5:42 Give to him that asketh thee, &...would borrow

Lk.3:11 He that hath two coats...impart to him that hath none

Rom.12:13 Distributing to the necessity of saints...hospitality

2. God blesses us when we give:

Mat.6:4 Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly

A. Spiritual blessings:

Pro.11:25 The liberal soul...he that watereth shall be watered

Pro.13:7b (He) maketh himself poor [gives], yet hath great riches

Pro.14:21 He that hath mercy on the poor, **happy** is he

Mk.10:21 Give to the poor, & thou shalt have treasure in Heaven

Acts 20:35 It is more blessed to give than to receive

B. Material blessings:

Deut.15:10 For this the Lord shall bless thee in all thy works

Pro.11:24a There is that scattereth, & yet increaseth

Isa.58:10,11 If thou draw out thy soul to the hungry...the Lord... shall satisfy thy soul in drought

Lk.6:38a Give, & it shall be given unto you; good measure

Lk.6:38b With the same measure ye mete it shall be measured

3. Giving to God's work:

A. When we give, we are giving to Jesus:

Mat.25:40 Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My brethren, ye have done it unto Me

B. When we give to God's work, we are investing:

Pro.19:17 He...**lendeth** unto the Lord; &...He will pay him again

Lk.10:30-37 Whatsoever thou spendest...when I come, I will repay

Phi.4:17Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit (saved souls) that may abound to **your account**

C. God will pay us back for sacrificial giving:

Pro.22:9He...shall be blessed; for he giveth...to poor

Pro.28:27aHe that giveth unto the poor shall not lack

Eccl.11:1Cast thy bread upon the waters: thou shalt find it

2Cor.9:6bHe which soweth bountifully shall reap bountifully

4. Christian duty regarding giving & sharing:

2Cor.8:4,5,7As ye abound in every thing, in faith...in love...see that ye abound in this grace (giving) also

Heb.13:16To do good & communicate (share w/ others) forget not

A. Obligation to support fulltime workers & missionaries:

Rom.15:27Their **debtors** they are...their **duty** is to minister unto them in carnal things

1Cor.9:6-11If we have sown unto you spiritual things...we shall reap your carnal (material & financial) things

Gal.6:6Let him that is taught communicate (share materially) to him that teacheth

1Tim.5:17,18They who labour in the Word...the labourer is worthy of his reward (wages)

(See also 3Jn.7,8.)

B. Examples of giving to needy fellow Christians:

Rom.15:26Pleased them...to make a contribution for the poor saints

Gal.6:10Do good...unto them who are of the household of faith

Phi.4:15,16[Paul said:] Concerning giving & receiving...ye sent once & again to my necessity (See also 1Cor.16:1; 2Cor.9:12.)

C. Everyone to give according to their ability:

Deut.16:17Every man shall give as he is able, according to the blessing of the Lord...which He hath given thee

Acts 11:29 The disciples, every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren

1Cor.16:2 Let every one of you lay in store [set aside to give], as God hath prospered him

2Cor.8:12 It is accepted according to that a man **hath**, & not

D. Wealthy Christians especially obligated to give:

Lk.8:3 Joanna, wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, & **many** others ministered unto (Jesus) of their substance

2Cor.8:14,15 That...your abundance may be a supply for their want As it is written, He that had gathered **much**

1Tim.6:17-19 Charge them that are rich...that they be...ready to distribute, willing to communicate (share)

(See examples in 2Tim.1:16-18; Phlm.7.)

E. Giving to the church, which redistributes:

Acts 2:44,45 (They) parted them to all men, as every man had need

Acts 4:34,35 Distribution was made unto every man...as he had need

Acts 6:1 [The early church had a "daily ministration" to widows]

1Tim.5:4,16 [Church's duty to "relieve them that are widows"]

F. Even poor believers encouraged to give:

1Ki.17:9-16 [Poor widow of Zarephath gave sacrificially, & God blessed her with unending supply of food in famine]

Mk.12:43,44 Poor widow hath cast more in...For they did cast in of their abundance; but she of her want cast in **all**

2Cor.8:1-4 In...their deep poverty...they were willing...praying us that we would receive the gift

5. Giving with the right motives:

A. Give cheerfully:

2Cor.9:7 Not grudgingly...for God loveth a cheerful giver

Deut.15:10aThou shalt give...& thine heart shall not be grieved

Exo.25:2Bring Me an offering: of every man that giveth it willingly with his heart ye shall take My offering

Exo.35:21Every one whose heart stirred him up, &...spirit made willing, brought the Lord's offering to the work

1Chr.29:9People rejoiced...because with perfect heart they offered willingly to the Lord

Heb.10:34Ye took joyfully the spoiling of your goods

B. Give generously:

Pro.21:26bThe righteous giveth & spareth not

C. Give till it hurts; not just what we can spare:

2Sam.24:24Neither will I offer unto the Lord of that which doth cost me nothing [Give even when it "costs"]

Lk.21:4All these have of their abundance cast in...but she of her penury hath cast in all the living she had

D. Give with pure motives:

1Cor.13:3Though I bestow all my goods to feed poor, & have not **love**, it profiteth me nothing

Mat.5:24Leave thy gift before the altar...first be reconciled

Mat.6:1Do not your alms before men...otherwise ye have no reward of your Father

Mat.6:2The hypocrites do (alms)...that they may have glory of men. They have their reward

Mat.6:3When thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what

Lk.6:34,35Lend, hoping for nothing again; your reward...great

6. What happens when we withhold & don't give:

A. It puts extra strain on others:

Phi.2:30He was nigh to death...to supply your **lack** of service

B. God will see to it that we become poor:

Pro.11:24bThere is that withholdeth...but it tendeth to poverty

Pro.13:7aThere is that maketh himself rich, yet hath nothing

Pro.28:27But he that hideth his eyes shall have many a curse

C. It shows we lack Christian love:

Jam.2:15,16If a brother or sister be naked, & destitute of daily food... & ye give not...what doth it profit?

1Jn.3:17,18Whoso hath...& seeth his brother have need, & [doesn't give], how dwelleth the love of God in him?

D. When we give stingily or dishonestly:

2Cor.9:6aHe which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly

Mal.1:7-10Ye offer polluted bread...I have no pleasure in you, neither will I accept an offering at your hand

Mal.1:13,14Ye brought...torn, lame, sick. Should I accept this?

(See also Mal.1:8; Acts 5:1,2,9,10.)

E. Beware of covetousness & greed:

Lk.12:15Beware of covetousness: a man's life consisteth not

1Tim.6:10The love of money is the root of all evil

Pro.28:16bHe that hateth covetousness shall prolong his days

Eccl.5:10He that loveth silver...not be satisfied with silver

Jam.5:1-5Your gold & silver is cankered; & the **rust** of them shall be a witness against you

(See also Eccl.5:13,15; Acts 5:1-10.)

7. Tithing:

A. Giving 10% of our income to God's work:

Lev.27:30All the tithe of the land...is the **Lord's**: it is holy

Num.18:21Behold, I have given the (Levites) all the tenth...for their service (work) which they serve

Num.18:24The tithes...which they offer unto the Lord, I have given to the Levites [God's fulltime workers]

Deut.14:22Thou shalt truly tithes all the increase [income]

(See also Deut.12:19; Neh.10:37-39.)

B. God will bless us for tithing:

Deut.14:28,29Thou shalt bring forth all the tithes...that the Lord may bless thee in all the work of thine hand

Pro.3:9,10Honour the Lord with...all thine increase: So shall thy barns be filled with plenty

Mal.3:10Bring ye all the tithes...& I will open the windows of Heaven, & pour you out a blessing

Mal.3:8-11[God grants protection & freedom from curses]

C. Setting aside our tithes on a frequent basis:

1Cor.16:2Upon the first day of the week let everyone lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him

D. Freewill offerings above our 10% tithes—Believers encouraged to give for special projects:

Exo.35:5Take...an offering unto the Lord: whosoever is of a willing heart, let him bring it (See vs.21,22)

2Ki.12:4,5, 9-12[Freewill offerings encouraged for the work of God]

8. Other aspects of giving:

A. Gifts can help obtain a man's favour or forgiveness:

Pro.19:6Every man is a friend to him that giveth gifts

Pro.21:14A gift in secret pacifieth anger...& strong wrath

(Warning: see Pro.17:23)

B. When not to accept gifts:

Exo.23:8Take no gift [with "strings attached"]: for the gift blindeth the wise, & perverteth the... righteous

Num.22:18If Balak would give me his house full of...gold, I cannot go beyond the Word of the Lord

1Ki.13:7-10[Young prophet refused gifts from disobedient king]

2Ki.5:15,16[Elisha refused Naaman's money, but Gehazi coveted it —vs.20-27] Is it a time to receive money?

(Re: bribes, see Deut.16:19; Pro.29:4; Eccl.7:7.)

How to Find the Will of God

1. The prerequisite: Submit your will to the Lord:

A. Seek His will, not your own:

Lk.22:42Not My will, but Thine, be done

Jn.5:30I seek not Mine Own will, but the will of the Father

Jn.6:38I came...not to do Mine Own will, but the will of (God)

B. Seek & trust the Lord:

Psa.37:5Commit thy way unto the Lord; trust also in Him

Pro.3:6In all thy ways acknowledge Him, & He shall direct

Psa.143:10[Pray:] Teach me to do Thy will...lead me

Col.1:9Pray...that ye be filled with the knowledge of His will

C. Sincerely desire to do God's will:

Psa.40:8I delight to do Thy will, O my God

Mat.6:10bThy will be done in earth, as it is in Heaven

Jn.4:34My meat is to do the will of Him (God) that sent Me

Eph.6:6Doing the will of God from the **heart**

D. As you obey Him, He will reveal His will to you:

Hos.6:3aThen shall we know, if we follow on to know the Lord

Mk.4:24,25Unto you that **hear** shall **more** be given

Jn.7:17If any man will **do** His will, he shall know whether

Rom.12:1,2Present your bodies a living sacrifice...that ye may prove what is that good...& perfect will of God

2. The Holy Spirit guides us to find God's will:

Jn.16:13,14The Spirit...will guide you into all truth...& show you

1Cor.2:11The things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God

Jam.1:5If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God

(See also Phi.3:15b)

1Jn.2:27The same anointing teacheth you of all things

3. The first place to look for God's will is in His Word:

A. The Bible is His written, revealed will:

Psa.119:105Word is a lamp unto my feet, & a light unto my path

Rom.2:18(Thou) knowest His will...being instructed out of law

2Tim.3:16All Scripture is given by...God...for instruction

(See also Deut.29:29; Psa.119:128; Jn.5:39; Acts 17:11; 1Tim.3:14a,15a.)

B. Warning against not obeying the Word:

Pro.28:9He that turneth away his ear from hearing the law

Isa.8:20If they speak not according to **this** Word...no light

C. Beware of interpreting it as you please:

2Pet.1:20No...Scripture is of any **private** interpretation

2Pet.3:16Unlearned wrest Scriptures to their own destruction

Isa.28:10For precept must be (balanced) upon precept...line upon line; here a little, & there a little

(See also Lk.10:25,26)

D. Read & study the Word carefully:

Neh.8:8They read in the...law of God distinctly, & gave the sense (meaning), & caused them to understand

Mat.9:13Go ye & learn what that [Scripture] **meaneth**

2Tim.2:15Study...rightly dividing the Word of truth

E. When a verse speaks specifically, directly to you:

Psa.103:20bYe...that do His commandments, hearkening unto the voice of His Word

Psa.119:130The entrance of Thy Words...giveth understanding

Psa.119:133aOrder my steps in Thy Word

Pro.6:22,23When thou goest, it (the Word) shall lead thee...when thou awakest, it shall talk with thee

Lk.24:32Did not our heart **burn** within us...while He (Jesus) opened to us the Scriptures?

Acts 2:37aWhen they heard this...were **pricked** in their heart

F. Pray & ask the Lord to help you understand:

Psa.119:18Open Thou mine eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of Thy law

Psa.119:34,35Give me understanding, & I shall keep Thy law

Pro.2:3-11If thou...liftest up thy voice for understanding...seekest... then shalt thou find knowledge

Lk.24:45Then opened He (Jesus) their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures

G. Ask mature Christians to explain difficult passages to you:

Acts 8:30-35Understandest thou what thou readest? How can I, except some man should guide me?

4. God sometimes reveals His will through dreams:

A. Revelatory dreams given to His people:

Num.12:6I the Lord...will speak unto him in a dream

Job 33:15-17In a dream, He (God)...sealeth their instruction

Jer.23:28The prophet that hath a dream, let him tell

Joel 2:28b Your old men shall dream dreams (See Acts 2:17b)

B. Old Testament examples:

God gave Abraham a prophetic message in a dream (Gen.15:12-16); God's warning dream to Abimelech, the Philistine king (Gen.20:2-7); God promised Jacob that He was with him (Gen.28:10-16); Jacob's dream warned him to depart (Gen.31:10-13); Laban warned not to harm Jacob (Gen.31:22-24); Joseph's two prophetic dreams (Gen.37:5-9); Prophetic dreams of Pharaoh's baker & butler (Gen.40:1-13,16-22); Pharaoh's dream of coming famine (Gen.41:17-32); Israel instructed to go to Egypt (Gen.46:1-4); Gideon encouraged to do God's will by hearing dream of barleycake (Judg.7:9-15); Solomon's dream (1Ki.3:5-15); Eliphaz's dream (Job 4:12-21); Nebuchadnezzar's dream of coming world kingdoms (Dan.2:1,28,29,31-45); King's dream & its interpretation given to Daniel (Dan.2:16-19); Daniel's dream of coming world kingdoms (Dan.7:1-28).

C. New Testament examples:

Joseph's four dreams of instruction & warning (Mat.1:20,21; 2:13, 19,20,22.); Wise men warned in a dream (Mat.2:12); Pilate's wife's dream warned them concerning Jesus (Mat.27:19).

D. Caution regarding determining God's will by dreams:

Eccl.5:3a A dream [often] cometh through multitude of business

Eccl.5:7 In the multitude of dreams...are also diverse vanities

Jer.23:25-27a "I have dreamed"...deceit of their own heart

Jer.23:32 I am against them that prophesy false dreams

Jer.29:8b Neither hearken to dreams **ye cause** to be dreamed

5. God sometimes reveals His will through visions:

A. A vision is when God flashes a picture in your mind's eye:

Num.12:6 I the Lord will make Myself known unto him in a vision

Num.24:4 Falling into a trance, but having his eyes open

Ezk.1:1 The heavens were opened, & I saw visions of God

Hos.12:10 I (God) have multiplied visions [to instruct people]

Joel 2:28 I will pour out My Spirit...young men shall see visions

Acts 10:9b-11 Peter...fell into a trance, & saw Heaven opened

B. Some Old Testament examples:

Abraham received prophecy in a vision (Gen.15:1-5); Micaiah's vision of the defeat of Israel (1Ki.22:17,35,36) & of the council around the Lord's throne (1Ki.22:19-23); Ezekiel's visions (Ezk.1:1-4; 8:1,2, 10:1.); Daniel's visions of future events (Dan.8:1,2; 10:4-7); Zechariah's visions (Zech.1:7,8).

C. New Testament examples:

Archangel Gabriel prophesied to Zacharias (Lk.1:11-13,22); Paul's vision of Jesus (Acts 9:1-7; 26:13-19); The Lord instructed Ananias in a vision (Acts 9:10,11); Paul's vision of Ananias (Acts 9:12); An angel instructed Cornelius (Acts 10:1-6); The Lord instructed Peter with vision of unclean animals (Acts 10:9b-16); Paul's vision of Macedonian man (Acts 16:9); God encouraged Paul in a vision (Acts 18:9,10).

D. Beware of false visions:

Jer.14:14They prophesy a false vision...deceit of own heart

Jer.23:16They speak a vision of their own heart, & not out of the mouth of the Lord

Lam.2:14Thy prophets have seen vain & foolish things

6. The Lord sometimes reveals His will through prophecy & revelations:

A. Prophecy: The Lord speaking through you, or to your heart:

1Ki.19:12[God spoke to Elijah in] a still small voice

Jer.1:9Behold, I have put My Words in thy mouth

Ezk.3:10,11All My Words that I shall speak unto thee receive in thine heart, and hear with thine ears

Ezk.3:27I will open thy mouth, & thou shalt say

Lk.2:26aIt was revealed unto him (Simeon) by the Holy Ghost

Acts 2:17aIn last days...your sons & your daughters shall prophesy

Acts 10:19,20While Peter thought...the Spirit said unto him

Acts 13:1,2There were certain prophets...the Holy Ghost said

1Cor.12:28God hath set some (prophets) in the church

(See also Acts 8:26; 1Cor.14:31; Eph.3:3 ,5.)

B. Warnings about false prophecy:

Deut.13:1-3[Don't heed prophets which try to turn you astray]

Deut.18:22If the thing follow not, nor come to pass...the prophet hath spoken it presumptuously

Jer.23:21I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied

Jer.23:26They are prophets of the deceit of their own heart

Ezk.13:6,7Ye say, The Lord saith it; albeit I have not spoken

Gal.1:8Though we, or an angel...preach any other gospel...let him be accursed

(See also Mat.24:4,5,11,23-26)

7. Seeking counsel:

A. Counselling with others who know the Lord & His Word well:

Exo.18:25,26Able men...judged the people

Deut.17:8-11If there arise a matter too hard for thee...matters of controversy...come unto the judge

Pro.11:14In the multitude of counsellors there is safety

Pro.15:22In multitude of counsellors (purposes) are established

Pro.20:18Every purpose is established by counsel: & good advice

2Cor.13:1bIn the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established

(See also Acts 11:22,23; 15:22,32.)

B. Coming to a reasonable agreement:

Acts 15:25It seemed good to us, being assembled with one accord

Acts 15:28For it seemed good to the Holy Ghost, & to us

C. Warnings about not seeking (or not heeding) godly counsel:

Pro.15:22aWithout counsel purposes are disappointed

2Chr.10:1-15Rehoboam...forsook the counsel which the [wiser] **old** men gave him, & took counsel with the **young** men

Acts 27:9-15,21,41[The sailors rejected Paul's counsel, based their decision on natural reasoning (vs.12,13) & were shipwrecked]

D. Be willing to change plans if God leads otherwise:

2Sam.7:1-13[Nathan agreed to David's plan to build a temple, but changed his mind after God showed him otherwise]

8. God often reveals His will by obvious circumstances:

A. God often sets up special circumstances to show His will:

2Sam.5:22-25[God gave David a specific sign as to when to rise & attack the Philistines]

Mk.14:12-16Go into the city, & there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher...follow him (See also Lk.22:7-13)

B. Sometimes obvious circumstances indicate God's leading:

1Cor.16:9A great door & effectual is opened unto me

2Cor.2:12When I came to Troas...door opened to me of the Lord

Rev.3:8I have set before thee an open door...for thou hast kept My Word

Lk.10:8,9Into whatsoever city ye enter, & they receive you, eat

(See also Mat.10:11)

C. Examples of obvious circumstances:

Acts 8:30-35[Ethiopian eunuch requested an explanation of Isa.53]

Acts 13:7Sergius Paulus [governor of Cyprus]...called Barnabas & Saul, & desired to hear the Word of God

Acts 13:14-16If ye have any word of exhortation...say on (speak)

Acts 17:18-22May we know what this new doctrine...is?

Jn.2:1-11There was a marriage...Jesus was called, & His disciples [His miracle there caused many to believe]

D. Gauging circumstances & conditions, & acting accordingly:

1Ki.17:1-9[When the brook Cherith dried, Elijah knew it was time to move on, & God told him where to go]

Mat.12:14,15aPharisees...held a council...how they might destroy Him. When Jesus knew it, He withdrew from thence

Lk.10:10In whatsoever city they receive you not, go your ways (See also Mat.10:14)

Jn.7:1He would not walk in Jewry...Jews sought to kill Him

Jn.11:53,54(He) walked no more openly among the Jews; but went

Acts 8:1,4[God uses persecution & adverse circumstances to **make** you obey if you won't otherwise—See Acts 1:8]

Acts 14:5,6There was an assault...they were ware of it, & fled

Acts 20:3,6[About to sail from Greece, Paul learned of an ambush & travelled another route instead]

Acts 27:9,10,When sailing was dangerous, Paul admonished them

Acts 27:12-15[Warning regarding wrongly judging conditions]

E. Circumstances are not always an indication of God's will:

—**Sometimes you just need to have faith:**

Exo.14:9-16[The Red Sea seemed to be an impassable closed door]

2Ki.7:1,2,18[Even] if the Lord would make windows in Heaven [to provide food], might this... **be**? And it **came** to pass

Eccl.11:4He that regardeth the clouds shall not reap

Jer.1:6,7[Youthful Jeremiah knew the elders might not listen to him, but was commanded to prophesy anyway]

Mat.14:15-21This is a desert...& the time is now [late]; send the multitude away [But Jesus fed them miraculously]

Mat.15:32-38Whence should we have so much bread [to feed them]?

F. Have faith & don't "look at the waves" & conditions:

Mat.14:30,31When (Peter) saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid... Jesus said, Wherefore didst thou doubt?

Mk.2:2-5 When they could not come nigh to Him for the (crowds), they (broke up) the roof...& let down the bed

Lk.5:5 Master, we have toiled all night, & have taken nothing: nevertheless at Thy Word I will

Lk.8:49,50 Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master. Jesus (said), Fear not: believe only

Jn.11:39,40 By this time he stinketh. Jesus saith, If thou wouldst believe, thou shouldst see the glory of God

2Cor.5:7 For we walk by faith, not by sight

Heb.11:23-27 By faith Moses [obeyed God]...not fearing the...king

9. Knowing by faith, the "witness of the Spirit":

A. Sometimes God leads you by giving you a strong desire:

—Or you just "feel" led in a certain direction:

Psa.37:4 Delight thyself also in the Lord; & He shall give thee the desires of thine heart

Pro.16:1 The preparations of the heart in man...from the Lord

Pro.21:1 The king's heart is in the hand of the Lord...He turneth it whithersoever He will

Judg.14:1-4 [Samson desired a Philistine woman] It was of the Lord

B. Beware about insisting on something you want:

Psa.106:14,15 He gave their request; but sent leanness into their soul

Num.22:12-22,32 [Baalim—greedy for gain—went with wicked king Balak's messengers]

2Ki.5:15,16,20-27 [Elisha refused to accept gifts from Naaman, but Gehazi covetously took some & was struck leprous]

Acts 21:4,10-14,27,33 [Paul determined to go to Jerusalem despite the Holy Spirit's warning, & was imprisoned]

Jam.4:3 Ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts

10. Determining God's will by confirming signs:

A. Setting a condition for a specific confirming sign:

Judg.6:36-40[Gideon & the "sign" of the wet & dry fleeces]

Gen.24:14[Abraham's servant set a specific requirement to let him know who was to be Isaac's wife]

1Sam.14:8-10But if they say thus...this shall be a sign unto us

B. Fleeces can be inaccurate if options are too restricted:

Acts 1:23-26[The apostles cast lots between Matthias & Joseph, but **God's** choice was Paul—See Gal.1:1]

C. Requiring a "sign" often indicates unbelief:

Jn.4:48Except ye see signs & wonders, ye will not believe

D. "Confirming signs" sometimes not given:

Mat.12:39aAn evil & adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall **no** sign be given to it

Lk.23:8,9Herod...hoped to have seen some miracle done by (Jesus)...nothing

11. Sometimes God's will & plans are conditional:

A. What God does often depends upon man's actions & reactions:

1Ki.21:17-29[Judgment delayed because Ahab repented]

2Chr.7:13,14[If the people repented, God's judgments turned away]

2Chr.34:24-28[Judgment delayed because Josiah repented]

Jer.26:2,3,13If they turn from evil ways...I will repent of the evil which I purpose to do unto them

Mat.10:13**If** the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it

Heb.4:6**Some** must enter therein, & they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief

(See also Heb.3:10-12,18,19)

B. Examples of God changing His mind:

Exo.32:9-14Moses besought the Lord...& the Lord repented of the evil which He [had] thought to do

(See also Gen.19:17-21; 2Ki.20:1-6; Amos 7:1-6; Jon. 3:4-10 .)

12. God often gives Christians alternative choices:

A. He lets us choose within the boundary of His overall will:

1Sam.10:7 Do as occasion serve thee; for God is with thee

2Sam.24:11-15 [David allowed to choose his punishment]

1Ki.3:5,9,10 [Solomon told to ask God for whatever he wanted]

1Cor.7:36 Let him do what he will, he sinneth not

1Cor.10:27 If any...bid you to a feast, & ye be disposed to go

B. Our plans should be subject to the will of God:

Jam.4:13-15 Ye ought to say, **If** the Lord will...we shall

Acts 18:21 I will return again unto you, if God will

Rom.1:10 Making request, if...I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God to come unto you

(See also 1Cor.4:19a; 1Cor.16:7 ; Heb.6:3 .)

C. Be sure you're right before going ahead:

Rom.14:22b Whatsoever is not of faith is sin (See also vs.23)

D. In love, consider the effect of your actions on others:

Rom.14:15 If thy brother be grieved...walkest thou not (in love) 1Cor.8:9 Lest...this liberty of yours become a stumblingblock

1Cor.8:13 If meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh

13. When God does not reveal His will:

A. God's will concealed from the unyielded & disobedient:

1Sam.28:6,15,16 [When rebellious Saul prayed & enquired of the Lord, He didn't answer him]

1Ki.22:5-7,19-23 [God sent a lying spirit to deceive wicked King Ahab and hide His true plans from him]

Jer.4:10Thou hast greatly deceived this people...saying, Ye shall have peace; whereas the sword [comes]

Mic.3:4,6,7He will not hear them...there is no answer of God

Lk.10:21Thou hast hid these things from the [worldly] wise

2Thes.2:10b-12Because they received not the love of the truth...God shall send them strong delusion (Also Isa.66:4)

B. How not to try to find God's will:

[**Avoid** divination, seances & all occult-related mediums: See Lev.20:6; Deut.18:10,11,14; 2Ki.21:6; 1Chr.10:13,14; Isa.8:19; Ezk.21:21; Dan.2:27,28a.]

14. When you desperately require specific directions:

Psa.73:24Thou shalt guide me with Thy counsel (See Psa.16:7)

Pro.4:11I have taught thee...I have led thee in right paths

A. God promises to tell you exactly where to go:

Psa.32:8I will instruct thee & teach thee in the way which thou shalt go: I will guide thee with Mine eye

Psa.37:23The steps of a good man are ordered by the Lord

Isa.30:21Thine ears shall hear a word behind thee, saying, **This** is the way, walk ye in it

B. You must depend upon God to lead you:

Jer.10:23The way of man is not in himself: it is not in man that walketh to direct his steps

Psa.25:4,5Shew me Thy ways, O Lord; teach me Thy paths

Psa.31:3bFor Thy name's sake, lead me, & guide me

Pro.4:26Ponder the path of thy feet, & let all thy ways be established

C. The Lord sends His angels to guide you:

Exo.23:20I send an angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, & to bring thee into the place which I have prepared

Exo.32:34Go...behold, Mine angel shall go before thee

(See also Gen.24:7)

D. You must seek & pray for His leading:

Psa.25:4 Shew me Thy ways, O Lord; teach me Thy paths

Psa.143:8b Cause me to know the way wherein I should walk; for I lift up my soul unto Thee

Pro.3:5,6 In all thy ways acknowledge Him, & He shall direct

E. Let God lead, even if you don't know where you're going:

Heb.11:8 Abraham, when he was called to go...obeyed; & he went out, not knowing whither he went
(See Gen.12:1)

15. You can count on God's leadings even when—

A. You're discouraged & at wit's end:

Psa.23:4 Though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death ...Thou art with me

Psa.142:3 My heart was overwhelmed...Thou knewest my path

B. You feel lost:

Isa.42:16 I will bring the blind by a way that they knew not; I will lead them in paths they that have not known

C. You desperately need guidance in time of danger:

2Ki.6:8-12 [Elisha warned the king of Israel of the enemies' plans]

Psa.27:11 Teach me Thy way...lead me in a plain path, because of mine enemies

Psa.78:43-52 [Though Egypt suffered plagues, God] made His Own people to go forth like sheep, & guided them

D. You need a place to stay or eat:

Psa.107:6,7 They cried unto the Lord...& He led them forth by the right way...to a city of habitation

Mk.14:12-16 Go into the city, & there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him (See Lk.22:9-13)

E. You're in a faraway, strange land:

Psa.139:9,10In the uttermost parts of the sea; even there shall Thy hand lead me

16. The will of God is supreme:

A. God is omnipotent & does whatever He wills:

Psa.75:6,7God is judge: He putteth down one, & setteth up another

Dan.4:17The most High ruleth in the kingdom of men

Dan.4:35He doeth according to His will in the army of Heaven

Acts 5:38,39If this counsel...be of God, ye cannot overthrow it

Rom.9:15-18Not of him that willeth...but of God that sheweth mercy

Eph.1:11b(God) worketh all things after counsel of His Own will

B. Even seeming "bad" things happen only by God's will:

Job 2:3-6[In order to test & purge Job] the Lord said unto Satan, He is in thine hand

Acts 2:23(Jesus), delivered by the...foreknowledge of **God**

1Pet.4:19Let them that **suffer** according to the will of God commit the keeping of their souls to Him

(See also Acts 4:28)

17. Rewards for doing God's will:

Mat.7:21He that doeth will of My Father...shall enter Kingdom

Mat.12:50Whosoever shall do the will of (God)...is My brother

Jn.9:31If any man...doeth His (God's) will, him He heareth

Jn.15:14Ye are My **friends**, if ye do whatsoever I command you

Heb.10:36After ye have done will of God...receive the promise

1Jn.2:17bHe that doeth the will of God abideth forever

1Jn.5:14If we ask any thing according to His will, He heareth us

18. God's will on specific subjects:

A. God's will regarding salvation:

(See Mat.18:14; Jn.1:13; 6:39,40; Eph.1:5; 1Tim.2:4 ; Jam.1:18a; 2Pet.3:9b.)

B. Verses on different aspects of God's will in a Christian's life:

(See 1Cor.12:11; Gal.1:4; Eph.5:17; 1Thes.4:3; Heb.2:4; 10:10; 1Pet.2:15; 3:17; 4:2,19.)

C. The will of God is the path of life:

(See Psa.16:11; 23:3; 25:10; Pro.2:8,13,20; 4:11,18; 12:28; Mic.4:2.)

Obedience to God

1. Obeying the Lord:

A. Obedience to God is our duty:

Ecl.12:13 Keep His commandments: for this is whole duty of man

Deut.13:4 Walk after the Lord...& keep His commandments, & obey His voice, & serve Him

Deut.27:9b,10 Thou art the people of God...therefore obey the...Lord

Jer.11:7 I earnestly protested... saying, Obey My voice

Jn.2:5 Whatsoever He (Jesus) saith unto you, **do** it

(See also Lk.17:10.)

B. Obey wholeheartedly:

Rom.6:17 Ye have obeyed from the heart that doctrine

Deut.26:16 The Lord hath commanded thee to do these statutes... keep & do them with all thine heart, & all thy soul

Psa.119:34 I shall keep Thy law...with my whole heart

(See also Psa.119:69b)

C. Obey in all things:

Deut.5:32Observe to do as the Lord...commanded you: ye shall not turn aside to the right hand or to the left

2Ki.22:2He did that which was right in the sight of the Lord...& turned not aside to the right hand or to the left

(See also 2Cor.2:9)

2. If you love & know the Lord, you will obey Him:

Jn.14:15,21If ye love Me, keep My commandments (See also vs.23)

1Jn.2:3We know we know Him, if we keep His commandments

1Jn.3:24He that keepeth His commandments dwelleth in Him

1Jn.2:4He that saith, I know Him, & keepeth not His commandments, is a liar

2Jn.6aThis is love, that we walk after His commandments

3. Blessings for obeying the Lord:

Deut.11:26,27I set before you...a blessing, if ye obey the commandments of the Lord your God

Josh.1:8Meditate therein (the Word)...observe to **do** all that is written therein: **then** shalt thou have success

A. Souls are saved:

Rom.5:19By the obedience of one shall many be made righteous

1Tim.4:16bHeed the doctrine...in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, & them that hear thee

B. Spiritual blessings:

Exo.19:5If ye will obey My voice...ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto Me above all people

Jer.7:23Obey My voice, & I will be your God, & ye...My people

Jn.13:17If ye know these things, **happy** are ye if ye do them

Jn.15:10If ye keep My commandments, ye shall abide in My Love

Jn.15:14Ye are My friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you

Acts 5:32The Holy Ghost...given to them that obey (God)

1Pet.1:22Ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth

(See also Jam.1:25)

C. Material blessings:

Deut.28:2All these blessings shall come on thee, & overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the Lord

Deut.32:46,47Set your hearts unto all the Words...& through this ye shall prolong your days in the land

Job 36:11If they obey & serve Him, they shall spend their days in prosperity, & their years in pleasures

Isa.1:19If ye be willing & obedient, ye shall eat good of land

Jer.38:20Obey...voice of the Lord: so it shall be well unto thee, & thy soul shall live

Heb.11:8Abraham, when he was called to go into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed

(See also Deut.28:1-14; Jer.35:18,19.)

D. Protection:

Exo.23:22If thou shalt obey & do all that I speak; then I will be an enemy unto thine enemies

Lev.25:18Do My statutes...& shall dwell in the land in safety

4. Submission to godly pastors & leaders in the Lord:

A. Exhortations to submit to pastors & spiritual brethren:

Heb.13:17Obey them that...rule over you, & submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls

Heb.13:7Remember them which have rule...whose faith follow

1Cor.11:1Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ

Phi.3:17Be followers of me &...them which walk so, as ye have us for an (example)

(See also 1Cor.16:16; 2Cor.2:9.)

B. Obeying wholeheartedly, "as unto the Lord & not unto men":

Eph.6:5Be obedient...in singleness of heart, as unto Christ

Eph.6:6 Not with eyeservice, as menpleasers; but as servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart

Col.3:22 Not...menpleasers; singleness of heart, fearing God

Col.3:23,24 Whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, & not unto men...for ye serve Christ

Phlm.21 I wrote...knowing that thou wilt do **more** than I say

5. Jesus' example of obedience:

Lk.22:42 Nevertheless, not My will, but Thine, be done (See also Mat.26:39,42)

Jn.5:30 I seek not Mine Own will, but the will of the Father

Jn.14:31 As the Father gave Me commandment, even so I do

Phi.2:7,8 (Jesus) took upon Him the form of a servant...& became obedient unto death

Heb.5:8 Though He were a Son, yet learned He obedience

6. Yieldedness to God:

A. Let the Lord have His way in your life:

Job 1:21 Lord gave, &...hath taken away; blessed be the Lord

Isa.64:8 Lord...we are the clay, & Thou our potter

Mat.6:10 Thy Kingdom come. Thy Will be done

Jn.3:30 He must increase, but I must decrease

Rom.12:1 Present your bodies a living sacrifice...unto God

Jam.4:7 Submit yourselves therefore to God

(See also Mat.26:39; Lk.1:38; Rom.6:13,16.)

B. Submit your plans to God:

Heb.6:3 This will we do, if God permit

Jam.4:15 Ye ought to say, If the **Lord** will, we shall do this

C. Obeying God even when it hurts:

Gen.22:2,12Take thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest, & offer him for a burnt offering (See also Heb.11:17-19)

Jer.42:6Whether it be good, or whether it be evil [hard to do] we will obey the voice of the Lord our God

Mat.26:38-54[Jesus **agonised** in prayer, knowing the cost, but then yielded to God's will.—See also Lk.22:44; Jn.18:11.]

D. Yield to God & pray for His leading:

Psa.27:11Teach me Thy way, O Lord, & lead me in a plain path

Psa.139:23,24Search me, O God, & know my heart...know my thoughts: & lead me in the way everlasting

Psa.143:10Teach me to do Thy will; for Thou art my God: lead me

E. Yielding to God spares you from judgments:

2Chr.30:8Yield yourselves unto the Lord...that His wrath may turn away from you

Mat.21:44Whosoever shall fall on this Stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him

7. Obeying God rather than ungodly men:

Acts 4:13-20Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you (Pharisees) more than unto God, judge ye

Acts 5:29We ought to obey God rather than men

(See also 1Sam.22:17; 1Ki.18:3,13; Ezra 4:21; 5:1-5; Dan.3:1-25; 6:1-13; Heb.11:23.)

8. Disobedience to God—how the Lord views it:

1Sam.15:23Rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, & stubbornness is as iniquity & idolatry

Mat.7:26,27Hearer these sayings of Mine, & doeth them **not**...a **foolish** man, which built his house upon the sand

Jam.1:23,24A hearer of the Word, & not a doer, is like a man beholding his face...& straightway forgetteth

9. Various categories of disobedience:

A. Merely "agreeing" is not enough:

Ezk.33:30-33 They sit before thee as My people & they hear thy words, but they will do them not

Mat.21:28-31b He answered & said, "I go, sir": & went not

Mat.23:2,3 Do not after their works: for they **say**, & do not

Lk.6:46 Why call ye Me, Lord, Lord, & do not the things I **say**?

Tit.1:16 They **profess** that they know God; but in **works** they deny Him, being...disobedient

(See also Jer.42:1-22; 43:1-4.)

B. "Good works" not a substitute for obedience:

1Sam.15:22 Hath the Lord as great delight in... sacrifices, as in obeying? To obey is better than sacrifice

Jer.7:22,23 I spake not...concerning sacrifices. But this thing commanded I them, Obey My voice

Mat.7:22,23 Have we not...in Thy name done many **wonderful** works? Depart from Me (Jesus), ye that work **iniquity**

Lk.11:42 Ye tithe...& pass over judgment & love. These ought ye to have done, & not to leave the other undone

C. Half-hearted obedience:

2Chr.25:2 He did that which was right in the sight of the Lord, but not with a perfect heart

Jer.3:10 (She) hath not turned unto Me with her whole heart, but feignedly

Acts 5:1-11 [Ananias & Sapphira pretended to give all, but kept back part of the money from the sale of their land]

10. Reasons for disobedience:

A. Being deceived:

Gen.3:13 [Eve said:], "The serpent beguiled me, & I did eat" (See also 2Cor.11:3)

1Ki.13:1-26 [The young prophet was deceived by the old prophet & disobeyed the Lord's original instructions]

Gal.3:1 Who bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth?

Gal.5:7 Who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth?

B. Having a "better idea":

1Sam.15:2-15 Thus saith the Lord, "Utterly destroy **all** they have!" (Saul) spared the best...to sacrifice to the Lord

Pro.3:5,6 Lean not unto thine own understanding

Act 21:4,10-14 [Paul was warned by the Spirit to **not** go to Jerusalem, but his heart was set on it]

C. Lack of love for others:

Jon.1:1-3; 4:2 [Jonah disobeyed & fled from God, knowing God would be merciful to the Ninevites, his enemies]

1Jn.3:16,17 Whoso hath this world's good [& doesn't help a needy brother], how dwelleth the love of God in him?

D. Fear of man:

1Sam.15:24 I transgressed the commandment of the Lord...because I feared the people, & obeyed their voice

Pro.29:25 The fear of man bringeth a snare

Jer.38:17-20 [Zedekiah disobeyed God out of fear of his opponents]

Jn.12:42,43 Many believed on Him, but because of the Pharisees they did not confess Him

E. Lack of faith in the Word:

Gen.3:1-6 [Eve believed the devil's lies & doubted God's Word]

Gen.19:14 [Lot's sons-in-law thought his warning to flee Sodom was merely a joke]

Num.20:7-12 [Moses hit the rock twice instead of speaking to it]

1Sam.13:8-14 [Saul, doubting that Samuel would come, sinned by impatiently offering the sacrifice himself]

1Pet.2:7,8 Them which stumble at the Word, being disobedient

2Thes.2:12 Believed not the truth, but had pleasure in (sin)

F. Being distracted by less important things:

1Ki.20:39,40"Keep this man." As thy servant was busy here & there, he was gone

Lk.14:15-24[The Lord invited men to His supper, but they all made excuses, saying they had **other** things to do]

G. For material gain:

1Ki.20:29-34,[Captured king promised king Ahab cities & markets, so

42Ahab let him go, instead of slaying him]

2Ki.5:14-16,[Elisha **refused** to receive any reward, but his servant,

20-27Gehazi, disobeyed & accepted it & was judged]

H. Pride:

2Chr.26:14-20[King Uzziah, lifted up in pride, broke the law]

3Jn.9,10[An exalted pastor refused to obey the apostle John]

I. Allowing disobedience to become a habit:

Jer.22:21This hath been thy manner from thy youth, that thou obeyedst not My voice

Jer.3:25From our youth even unto this day, (we) have not obeyed the Lord (See also Eccl.8:11)

11. How to relate to the disobedient:

A. Use the Word to teach & warn them:

Ezk.2:3-7Speak My Words unto them...they are most rebellious

Ezk.3:17,18Hear the Word...& give them warning from Me

B. Win them with your example, not just your words:

1Cor.9:19I made myself servant to all, that I might [win them]

2Tim.2:24-26Servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle... patient...instructing...to acknowledging of the truth

1Pet.3:1-4That, if any obey not the Word, they may without the Word be won by the [way of life]

(See also Jam.5:19,20.)

C. Try to get them to change:

Lk.1:17 Turn the...disobedient to the wisdom of the just

D. Keep an eye on them:

Pro.29:15 A child left to himself bringeth his mother to shame

E. Do not keep company with them:

Eph.5:11 Have no fellowship with [them], but rather reprove them

2Thes.3:6 Withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, & not after the (instructions)

2Thes.3:14 If any man obey not our word...have no company with him

1Tim.6:3-5 If any man...consent not...from such withdraw thyself

F. If the offence isn't serious, don't give up on them:

2Thes.3:14,15 If any man obey not our word by this epistle...count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother

12. God's punishments for disobedience:

Deut.11:26,28 I set before you...a curse, if ye will not obey the commandments of the Lord (See also Jer.11:3)

Josh.5:6 (They) walked 40 years in the wilderness, till all the people...were consumed, because they obeyed not

Judg.2:2,3 Ye have not obeyed...I will not drive (enemies) out

1Sam.12:15 If ye will not obey...the Lord (will) be against you

1Sam.15:23b Because thou hast rejected the Word of the Lord, He hath also rejected thee from being king

1Ki.13:all [Young prophet disobeyed God by heeding the old prophet, & was slain by a lion]

Psa.68:6 The rebellious dwell in a dry land

Isa.1:20 If ye refuse & rebel, ye shall be devoured with sword

Jer.3:25 Confusion covereth us: for we have...not obeyed

Jer.18:10If (they) obey not...then I will repent of the good, wherewith I said I would benefit them

Dan.9:11(Did) not obey Thy voice; therefore curse is poured

Dan.9:14The Lord watched upon the evil, & brought it upon us: for we obeyed not His voice

Mat.7:26,27Every one that heareth (My) sayings & doeth not...foolish...house on sand...great was the fall of it

Lk.12:47(He) which knew his Lord's will, & [did not] according to His will, shall be beaten with many stripes

(See also Gen.3:6,16-19; Deut.28:15-67; Jer.9:13-16; 12:17; 32:23; Eph.5:6.)

13. Obedience is building on a sure foundation:

Mat.7:24,25Whosoever heareth these sayings of Mine, & **doeth** them ...wise man, which built his house upon a **rock**

1Cor.3:11-14[**Jesus** is the foundation; build with gold of obedience not with wood, hay & stubble of disobedience]

1Cor.15:58Be steadfast, unmoveable...in the work of the Lord

Strength & Power

1. God's strength vs. your strength:

A. God is infinitely more powerful than weak man:

Psa.8:3,4When I consider Thy heavens... the moon & the stars, which Thou hast [made]...what is man?

Isa.40:15,17, 22All nations before **Him** are as nothing...as a drop of a bucket...**less** than nothing

Dan.4:35All the inhabitants of earth are reputed as **nothing**, none can stay **His** hand

1Cor.1:25[Even] the weakness of God is stronger than men

(See also 2Chr.20:6; Psa.89:6.)

B. An honest view of man & his strength:

Job 14:1,2Man...is of few days...he cometh forth like a **flower**, & is cut down (See also Job 7:1)

Isa.40:6-8All flesh is **grass**...the grass withereth (See also Psa.90:5b,6; 103:15,16; Jam.1:10,11; 1Pet.1:24,25.)

Job 8:9We know nothing...our days upon earth are a **shadow**

Psa.39:5,6Every man at his **best** state is altogether **vanity**

Psa.144:3,4What is man? Man is vanity: his days are as a shadow (See also 1Chr.29:15; Psa.62:9; 90:10; Eccl.6:12.)

Psa.78:39He remembered they were but flesh; a wind that passeth away (See also Isa.2:22; Jam.4:14,15 .)

Psa.103:14He knoweth our frame...remembereth that we are **dust** (See also Gen.18:27; Isa.29:5,6 .)

Job 25:6Man is a **worm**

Isa.40:22The inhabitants of the earth are as **grasshoppers**

(See also Job 4:18-20; Rom.7:18.)

C. God is able to do absolutely anything:

Jer.32:27I am the Lord, the God of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for Me? (See also Gen.18:14)

Job 42:2I know that Thou canst do everything

Psa.62:11**Power** belongeth unto **God**

Mat.19:26With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible

Mat.28:18All power is given unto Me in Heaven & in earth

D. God has total power over man:

Job 12:10In (His) hand is the soul of **every** living thing, & the breath of all mankind (See also Dan.5:23)

Job 12:13-25With **Him** is strength...He increaseth the nations, & destroyeth them(See Psa.75:6,7; 107:33-40.)

Isa.43:13There is **none** that can deliver out of **My** hand

Psa.115:3God...hath done whatsoever He hath pleased

Isa.64:8 We are the clay, & Thou our potter; we all are the work of Thy hand (See also Isa.45:9)
(See also 1Chr.29:12; 2Chr.20:6; Job 9:4; Psa.104:29, 30; Isa.40:23,25.)

2. Trust in the Lord, not your own strength:

A. Let God strengthen you with His strength:

Eph.6:10 Be strong in the **Lord**, & in the power of **His** might

2Chr.20:12 We have no might against this great company...neither know we what to do: our eyes are upon **Thee**

Psa.20:7,8 Some trust in chariots, & some in horses: but we will remember the name of the Lord our God

Psa.84:5 Blessed is the man whose strength is in Thee

Psa.105:4 Seek the Lord & **His** strength: seek His face evermore Isa.26:4 Trust in the Lord, in the Lord is everlasting strength

2Cor.3:4,5 Not that we are sufficient of ourselves...but our sufficiency is of God

Phi.3:3 We worship God...& have no confidence in the flesh

(See also Exo.15:2; 2Sam.22:33; Psa.27:1; 68:28,35; 118:8; 147:10,11.)

B. He can do what you can't do:

Zech.4:6 **Not** by (your) might, **nor** by power, but by My Spirit

1Sam.2:9b By [your own] strength shall no man prevail

Psa.60:11 Give us help from trouble: **vain** is the help of man

Psa.127:1 Except the Lord build the house, they labour in vain that build it

Jn.15:5 Without Me ye can do nothing

(See also Job 9:19a; Psa.33:16,17.)

C. Do what you can, but success depends on God:

Pro.21:31 The horse is prepared against the day of battle: but safety is of the **Lord**

Neh.4:14 Be not ye afraid of them: [but] remember the Lord great & terrible, & fight for your brethren

3. Our weakness causes us to depend upon God:

A. God's strength is manifest in our weakness:

2Cor.4:7 We have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the ... power may be of **God**, & **not** of **us**

Isa.40:29 He giveth power to the **faint**; & to them that have no might **He** increaseth strength

Psa.8:2 Out of mouth of babes...hast Thou ordained strength

Psa.37:39 The Lord...is their strength in the time of trouble

Psa.73:26 My flesh & my heart faileth: but God is [my] strength

Isa.25:4 Thou (art) a strength to...the needy in his distress

Isa.41:10 I will strengthen thee; yea, I will help thee

2Cor.1:8,9 We were pressed out of measure, above strength...but we (do) not trust in ourselves, but in God

2Cor.12:9,10 "My strength is made perfect in (your) weakness"... When I am weak, then am I strong

2Cor.13:4 We are weak in Him, but we shall live...by power of God

Heb.11:34 [Bible saints:] Out of weakness were made strong

(See Psa.94:17,18)

B. When you have no other help, He'll strengthen you:

Psa.72:12 He shall deliver the needy when he crieth; the poor also, & him that hath no helper

Lk.22:43,45 [Jesus' disciples slept, but] an angel (came) from Heaven, strengthening Him

2Tim.4:16,17 No man stood with me, but all men forsook me... the Lord stood with me, & strengthened me

(See also Psa.27:10)

C. He will give strength day by day to keep you going:

Deut.33:25b As thy days, so shall thy strength be

Mat.6:34Take no thought for the morrow...sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof

D. When you have only little strength, the Lord will help you:

Psa.37:24Though he fall...the Lord upholdeth him with His hand

Isa.35:4Say to them that are of a fearful heart, "Be strong"

Dan.11:34When they fall, they shall be holpen with a little help

Rev.3:8Thou hast a little strength, & hast kept My Word

4. God can strengthen & use you:

A. How to receive God's power:

Josh.1:5-9Only be thou strong & very courageous...observe the (Word)...**then** thou shalt have good success

2Chr.16:9The Lord (shews) Himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward Him

Neh.8:10The joy of the Lord is your strength

Psa.138:3When I cried Thou...strengthenedst me with strength

Isa.27:5Let him take **hold** of My strength

Isa.30:15In **quietness** & in **confidence** (faith) shall be your strength

Isa.40:31They that wait on the Lord shall renew their strength Dan.11:32 People that do **know** God shall be strong, & do exploits

Mic.3:8I am full of power by the Spirit of the Lord...& of might

Acts 1:8Ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you

Eph.3:16Strengthened with might by His Spirit in the inner man

1Jn.2:14aYe are strong [because] the Word of God abideth in you

B. He strengthens you with His power:

Psa.18:29-34It is **God** that girdeth me with strength

Psa.68:28Thy **God** hath commanded thy strength

Psa.68:35 God...giveth strength & power unto His people

Psa.71:16a I will go in the strength of the Lord God

Psa.80:17 Let Thy hand be upon the man...whom Thou madest strong for Thyself

Psa.84:5,7 Blessed is the man whose strength is in **Thee**...they go from strength to strength

Phi.4:13 I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me

Col.1:11 Strengthened with all might, (by) His glorious power

Mat.10:1,8 He gave (His disciples) power against unclean spirits

(See also Judg.14:6,19; 15:14,15; Psa.8:2; Lk.10:19.)

C. Praise God for strengthening you:

Psa.28:7,8 The Lord is my strength...I am helped...with my song will I praise Him

D. Give God the glory for working through you:

Phi.2:13 For it is **God** which worketh **in** you

1Pet.4:11 Let him do it as of the ability which **God** giveth: that God in all things may be glorified

Isa.10:13,15 [Proud] saith, "By (my) strength...I have done it." Shall the **axe** boast itself against him that **heweth**?

Jer.9:23,24 Let not...the mighty man glory in his might...but glory in this, that he knoweth **Me**

Acts 12:21-23 The angel of the Lord smote (Herod), because he gave not God the glory

E. Sometimes the Lord Himself wants to do the whole thing:

Exo.14:13,14 Stand still, & see the salvation of the Lord...Lord shall fight for you, & ye shall hold your peace

Judg.7:all [Gideon & his 300 let God fight the battle His way]

2Chr.20:15 Be not afraid...the battle is not yours, but God's

2Chr.20:17 Ye shall not need to fight in this battle: stand ye still, & see the salvation of the Lord

Neh.4:20 Our God shall fight for us

Psa.18:17He delivered me from my strong enemy...for they were too strong for me

Isa.30:7Their strength is to sit still

5. Don't trust in yourself:

A. Warnings against trusting in your own strength:

Psa.52:5-7aGod shall destroy...the man that made not God his strength

Psa.118:8,9It is better to trust in the Lord than...in man

Psa.146:3Put not your trust in...princes, nor in...men, in whom there is no help

Jer.9:23,24Let not...the mighty man glory in his might...but glory... that he knoweth Me, that I am the **Lord**

Jer.17:5Cursed be man that trusteth in man, & maketh flesh his arm, & whose heart departeth from the Lord

Jn.15:4,5Without Me ye can do nothing

(See also Isa.31:3)

B. What happens when you rely on your own strength & plans:

2Chr.26:16When he was strong, his heart was lifted up to his destruction: for he transgressed against the Lord

Hos.10:13Ye have reaped iniquity...because thou didst trust in thy way, in the multitude of thy mighty men

1Cor.10:12Him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall

(See also 1Sam.15:1-28; 28:4-25 & 31:1-8 re: Saul.)

C. He will deliberately let you fail:

Lev.26:18-20If ye will not...hearken...I will break your power...your strength shall be spent in vain

Num.14:41-45Go not up, for the Lord is not among you...but they presumed to go up [to battle, & were smitten]

2Chr.16:7Because thou relied on the king of Syria, & not on the Lord...the host (is) escaped out of thine hand

(See also 2Chr.25:7,8)

D. Lack of strength often due to sin:

Psa.31:10 My strength faileth because of mine iniquity

Lev.26:27,36, I will send a faintness into (your) hearts...& ye shall

37 have no power to stand before your enemies

Josh.7:12 (They) could not stand before their enemies...because they were accursed

Judg.2:13-15 They forsook the Lord...(His) anger was against Israel ...they could not stand before their enemies

(See also Amos 2:13-15)

6. Power when witnessing:

A. Power comes from the Holy Spirit:

Acts 1:8 Ye shall receive power (when) the Holy Ghost is come upon you: & ye shall be witnesses

Mic.3:8 I am full of power by the Spirit of the Lord...to declare to Israel his sin

Jn.6:63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing

Acts 4:8,13 Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost...they saw the boldness of Peter

Acts 4:31,33 They were filled with the Holy Ghost...& with great power gave the apostles witness

1Thes.1:5 For our gospel came unto you...in power

2Tim.1:7 God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power

B. No man can stand up to the power of God's Spirit:

Lk.21:15 I will give you a mouth...which all your adversaries shall not be **able** to gainsay (contradict) nor resist

Jer.5:14 I will make My Words in thy mouth fire, & people wood

Acts 6:10 They were not able to resist the wisdom & the spirit by which he (Stephen) spake

2Cor.10:4 The weapons of our warfare are...**mighty** through God to the pulling down of strong holds

C. It has to be by God's power:

1Cor.1:18The preaching of the cross...is the power of God

1Cor.2:4,5My preaching was...in...the Spirit & power: That your faith should...stand...in the power of God

1Cor.4:20The Kingdom of God is not in word, but in power

(See also Lk.4:14)

D. God can use you even when you're weak:

Gal.4:13,14[Paul witnessed to & won the Galatians even though suffering infirmity in the flesh]

E. God can take over & powerfully use you:

Exo.4:10-12I am not eloquent...I am slow of speech. The Lord said, "I will be with thy mouth, & teach thee"

Jer.1:6-9I cannot speak. Lord said, "Whatsoever I command thee ...speak. I have put My Words in thy mouth"

Mat.10:20For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit...which speaketh in you (See also Mk.13:11; Lk.12:12.)

Acts 4:13They...perceived (Peter & John) were...ignorant men, they took knowledge...that they had been with Jesus

(See also 1Sam.10:6)

7. God's power vs. your adversaries' physical power:

A. For your spiritual battles, defending the faith:

Jude 3bYe should earnestly contend for the faith

2Cor.10:3-5We do not war after (in) the flesh: For the weapons of **our** warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God

(See also 1Cor.10:11)

B. If you must physically defend your loved ones or country:

Lk.11:21When a strong man **armed** keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace

Jn.10:11The good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep

C. Fleshly "might" is no match for the power of God:

1Sam.17:45Thou (Goliath) comest to me with a sword, & with a spear...but I come to thee in the name of the Lord

2Chr.32:8With him is an arm of flesh; but with us is the Lord to help us, & to fight our battles

Psa.9:19,20Lord, let not man prevail...put them in fear: that (they) may know themselves to be but men

Isa.31:3The Egyptians are men & not God...when the Lord shall stretch out His hand...they all shall fail

(See also Hos.1:7)

D. They may seem strong, but their strength has departed:

Num.14:9Neither fear the people...for they are bread for us: their defence is departed from them

Jer.46:17Pharaoh king of Egypt is but a noise; he hath passed the time appointed [his time is up]

E. God decides the outcome, not physical, carnal might:

1Sam.2:4The bows of the mighty men are broken, [whereas] they that stumbled are girded with strength

2Chr.25:8God hath power to help, & to cast down

Psa.33:16There is no king saved by the multitude of an host: a mighty man is not delivered by much strength

Psa.33:17An horse is a vain thing for safety: neither shall he deliver any by his great strength

Psa.35:10The Lord deliverest the poor from him that is too strong for him

Psa.44:3-7They got not the land...by their own sword, neither did their own arm save them: but **Thy** arm

F. You are not to trust in fleshly might to fight your foes:

2Ki.18:21Thou trusteth upon...this bruised reed...on which if a man lean, it will (pierce) his hand

Psa.44:5,6Through **Thee** will we push down our enemies: I will not trust in...my sword (to) save me

Isa.31:1 Woe to them that go to Egypt for help...because they are very strong; but look not unto...the Lord

G. You are not to fear the power of man:

Deut.3:22 Ye shall not fear them: the Lord shall fight for you

Psa.27:1-3 Of whom shall I be afraid? Though an host should encamp against me, my heart shall not fear

Psa.118:6 The Lord is on my side; I will not fear: what can man do unto me?

Pro.29:25 The fear of man bringeth a snare

Isa.2:22 Cease (fearing) man, whose breath is in his nostrils

Isa.51:12,13 (Why) art thou...afraid of a man that shall die...as grass; & forgettest the Lord thy Maker

Jer.1:8 Be not afraid of their faces: for I am with thee to deliver thee, saith the Lord

Lk.12:4,5 Be not afraid of them that kill the body

H. God is on your side & you shall win:

Deut.20:1 When thou goest out to battle against thine enemies, be not afraid...for the Lord thy God is with thee

Deut.20:4 Lord [will] fight...against your enemies, to save you

Deut.31:8 The Lord...doth go before thee; He will be with thee

1Sam.17:47 Battle is the Lord's, He will give you into our hands

Psa.108:13 Through God we shall do valiantly: for He it is that shall tread down our enemies

Rom.8:31 If God be for us, who can be against us?

(See also 2Chr.14:11,12; 20:12-25; Zeph.3:17.)

I. The armies of Heaven are on your side:

2Ki.6:14-17 [Elisha said,] They that be with us are more than they that be with them

2Chr.32:7,8,21 [Hezekiah said,] There be more with us than with him

Mat.26:52,53 [God would] give Me more than 12 legions of angels

(See also Josh.5:13,14; Psa.68:17; 91:11; Isa.37:33-36.)

J. You become far more powerful than your adversaries:

1Jn.4:4 Greater is He that is in you, than he...in the world

Josh.1:5 There shall not any man be able to stand before thee

Josh.23:9,10 One shall chase a thousand, for God fighteth for you

(See also Deut.11:25; 28:7.)

K. God can help you win against overwhelming odds:

1Sam.14:6 No restraint to the Lord to save by many or by few

2Chr.14:11 Lord, it is nothing with Thee to help, whether with many, or with them that have no power

2Chr.16:8,9a A huge host...because thou didst rely on the Lord, He delivered them into thine hand

Protection

1. Trusting in the Lord is your only sure refuge:

A. Safety & protection are of the Lord:

Psa.127:1b Except the Lord keep the city, the watchman waketh but in vain

Pro.21:31 The horse is prepared...but safety is of the **Lord**

B. The Lord is able to protect you:

Exo.6:6,7 I will redeem you with a stretched out arm, & with great judgments

Zeph.3:17 The Lord in the midst of thee is mighty; He will save

Isa.59:1 The Lord's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save

Rom.4:21 What He [has] promised, He [is] able also to perform

Eph.3:20 He is able to do exceeding abundantly above all...we ask

C. The Lord is your defence & protective shield:

Deut.33:27aThe eternal God is thy refuge

Psa.3:3Thou, O Lord, art a shield for me

Psa.5:12With favour wilt Thou compass him as with a shield

Psa.89:18aFor the Lord is our defence

Psa.115:11Trust in the Lord: He is their help & their shield

Isa.33:16He shall dwell on high: place of defence...the rocks (See also Psa.18:35; 107:41a.)

D. He is your tower & fortress, your high rock:

2Sam.22:2,3The Lord is my rock, & my fortress, & my deliverer

Psa.9:9The Lord will be a refuge...in times of trouble

Psa.61:3Thou hast been a shelter for me, & a strong tower from the enemy

Psa.62:6He only is my rock & my salvation: He is my defence

Psa.71:2-4Be Thou my strong habitation...deliver me, O my God, out of the hand of the wicked

Psa.91:2He is my refuge & my fortress, in Him will I trust

Pro.18:10The name of the Lord is a strong tower: the righteous runneth into it, & is safe

E. He is your protection in times of great danger:

Isa.25:4A refuge from the storm...when the blast of the terrible ones is as a storm against the wall

Nah.1:6,7The Lord is...a strong hold in the day of trouble; & He knoweth them that trust in Him

Zeph.2:3Seek ye the Lord, all ye meek of the earth...ye shall be hid in the day of the Lord's anger

(See also Psa.46:1-5)

F. The Lord is your hiding place:

Psa.27:5aIn the time of trouble He shall hide me

Psa.32:7Thou art my hiding place; Thou shalt preserve me from trouble; Thou shalt compass me about

Psa.119:114Thou art my hiding place & shield: I hope in Thy Word

Psa.143:9bI flee unto Thee to hide me

2. God will protect you because He loves you:

A. The Lord delivers His saved children who trust Him:

2Sam.8:6bThe Lord preserved David whithersoever he went

Psa.37:28The Lord forsaketh not His saints; they are preserved

Psa.37:40The Lord...shall deliver them from the wicked, & save them, because they trust in Him

Psa.91:9,10Because thou hast made the Lord...thy habitation; there shall no evil befall thee

2Tim.4:18The Lord shall deliver me from every evil work

B. The Lord loves, favours & will protect you:

Deut.33:12aThe beloved of the Lord shall dwell in safety by Him

2Sam.22:20bHe delivered me, because He delighted in me

Job 1:10Hast not Thou made an hedge about him (Job), & about his house, & all that he hath on every side

Psa.17:8,9Keep me as the apple of the eye, hide me under the shadow of Thy wings...from my deadly enemies

Psa.41:11By this I know that Thou favourest me, because mine enemy doth not triumph over me

Psa.56:9When I cry unto Thee, then shall mine enemies turn back...for God is with me

Psa.91:7A thousand shall fall at thy side, & ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee

Psa.105:12-15He reprov'd kings for their sakes; saying, Touch not Mine anointed, & do My prophets no harm

Mat.10:29-31[God even watches over sparrows, &] **ye** are of more value than **many** sparrows

(See also Psa.4:3; 40:17; 125:2.)

C. He is always close by to protect you:

Gen.28:15I am with thee, & will keep thee in all places whither thou goest

Deut.33:12bThe Lord shall cover him all the day long, & he shall dwell between His shoulders

Deut.33:27The eternal God is thy refuge, & underneath are the everlasting arms

Psa.46:1God is our refuge...a very present help in trouble

Psa.109:31He shall stand at [his] right hand...to save him

D. The Lord's guardian angels protect you:

Psa.34:7The angel of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear Him, & delivereth them

Psa.91:11,12He shall give His angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways

Isa.63:9In affliction...angel of His presence saved them

Dan.3:28God...hath sent his angel, & delivered His servants that trusted in Him

Dan.6:20,22God hath sent His angel, & shut the lions' mouths

(See also Exo.14:19,20; 23:20; 2Ki.6:15-18; 2Chr.32:20, 21 & 2Ki.19:35; Acts 5:19; 12:6-10.)

E. Rest in the Lord, trusting God to protect you:

Exo.14:14Lord shall fight for you, & ye shall hold your peace

Exo.33:14My presence shall go with thee, I will give thee rest

Psa.112:7,8He shall not be afraid of evil tidings: his heart is fixed (steadfast), trusting in the Lord

Psa.118:6,7The Lord is on my side; what can man do unto me?

F. Thank the Lord for protecting you:

Psa.5:11Let them shout for joy, because Thou defendest them

Psa.28:7I am helped...with my song will I praise Him

Psa.59:16,17I will sing of Thy power...for Thou hast been my defence & refuge in the day of my trouble

Psa.98:1Sing unto the Lord...His right hand, & His holy arm, hath gotten Him the victory

3. The Lord can protect you from:

A. The enemy's traps & snares:

Psa.91:3He shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler

Psa.124:6,7Blessed be the Lord, Who hath not given us as a prey ...(we are) escaped as a bird out of the snare

Psa.141:10Let wicked fall into their own nets, whilst I escape

B. Disease & epidemics:

Exo.15:26I will put none of these diseases upon thee

Deut.7:15The Lord will take away from thee all...evil diseases... but will lay them upon all them that hate thee

Psa.91:3He shall deliver thee from...the (perilous) pestilence

Psa.91:10There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling

C. Injury:

Psa.34:20He keepeth all his bones: not one of them is broken

Psa.91:11,12Angels...bear thee up...lest thou dash thy foot

Mk.16:18aIf they drink any deadly thing, shall not hurt them

D. Fire & burning:

Psa.29:7The voice of the Lord divideth the flames of fire

Isa.43:2bWhen thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee

Dan.3:25,27These men, upon whose bodies the fire had no power, nor was an hair of their head singed

E. Drowning:

Psa.107:23-30[The Lord can save you from terrible storms at sea]

Isa.43:2aWhen thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee...they shall not overflow thee

Mat.8:23-27There arose a great tempest...He rebuked the winds & sea...was a great calm (See also Mat.14:23-32)

Acts 27:14-44 Exceedingly tossed with a tempest...all hope taken away ...it came to pass, they all escaped safe to land

(See also Jon.1:4,11-17; 2:3,10; 1Pet.3:20; Gen.7:23.)

F. Death:

Psa.41:2 The Lord will preserve him, & keep him alive

Dan.6:27 He delivereth & rescueth, & He...hath delivered Daniel from the power of the lions

G. Dangers while travelling:

Gen.28:15 I will keep thee in all places whither thou goest, & will bring thee again into this land

Exo.23:20 I send an Angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, & to bring thee into the place which I have prepared

Deut.28:6 Blessed shalt thou be when thou comest in, & blessed shalt thou be when thou goest out

Psa.105:13-15 When they went from one nation to another...He suffered no man to do them wrong

Psa.121:8 The Lord shall preserve thy going out & thy coming in

Psa.139:9,10 If I take the wings of the morning...Thy right hand shall hold me

Pro.2:8 He keepeth...the way of His saints

Jn.10:4 When He putteth forth His sheep, He goeth before them

(See also Exo.33:14,15; Psa.37:23; Isa.55:12a; 63:9.)

H. Every kind of evil:

Job 5:19-22 He shall deliver thee in six troubles: yea, in seven there shall no evil touch thee

Psa.46:1-3 God is our refuge...therefore will not we fear, though ...the mountains be carried into the...sea

Psa.121:7 The Lord shall preserve thee from **all** evil

Lk.10:19 I give you power...nothing shall by any means hurt you

2Thes.3:3 The Lord is faithful, who shall...keep you from evil

2Tim.4:18 The Lord shall deliver me from every evil work

4. Protection from your enemies:

A. The Lord will protect the obedient from their enemies:

Exo.14:14The Lord shall fight for you

Exo.23:22I will be an enemy unto thine enemies

2Sam.22:49Thou hast lifted me above them that rose up against me: Thou hast delivered me from the violent man

2Ki.17:39The Lord your God ye shall fear; & He shall deliver you out of the hand of all your enemies

2Chr.32:8With us is the Lord our God...to fight our battles

Psa.18:16,17He delivered me from my strong enemy...for they were too strong for me

Psa.35:1-6Fight against them that fight against me...draw out the spear, & stop the way...let them be turned back

Psa.41:2bThou wilt not deliver him unto the will of his enemies

Psa.97:10He delivereth them out of the hand of the wicked

Psa.138:7Thou shalt stretch forth Thine hand against the wrath of mine enemies, & Thy right hand shall save me

Jer.39:17I will deliver thee...thou shalt not be given into the hand of the men of whom thou art afraid

B. Even though they fight you, you will be safe:

Deut.3:22Ye shall not fear them...God shall fight for you

Deut.20:1,3,4When thou goest out to battle...the Lord...goeth with you, to fight for you against your enemies

Psa.3:6I will not be afraid of 10,000's of people...against me

Psa.21:8,11They intended evil...which they are not able to perform

Psa.37:32,33The wicked...seeketh to slay (the righteous). The Lord will not leave him in his hand

Psa.118:13Thou hast thrust sore at me...but the Lord helped me

Isa.54:17No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper

Jer.1:19They shall fight against thee; but they shall not prevail ...for I am with thee to deliver thee
(See also Psa.2:1-5)

C. God can cause your enemies to fall & fail:

2Chr.20:12-22[Moab, Ammon & Edom attacked Judah, but the Lord
confounded them, & they were utterly destroyed]

Job 5:12,13He disappointeth the devices of the crafty, so that their hands cannot perform their
enterprise

Isa.8:10Take counsel together, & it shall come to nought...it shall not stand: for God is with us (See
also Isa.7:7)

Isa.41:11-13They that strive with thee shall perish...they that war against thee shall be as nothing

Isa.54:15Whoever shall gather together against thee shall fall

Isa.54:17No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper

D. He can warn your enemies to not hurt you:

Gen.31:22-24, 29[God warned Laban in a dream to do no harm to Jacob]

Mat.27:19[Though Pilate gave Jesus up to be crucified, God was faithful to warn him through his
wife]

(See also Gen.12:14-20; 20:1-8.)

E. The Lord can protect you while judging your enemies:

Gen.19:22-25[Angel told Lot:] Escape thither; for I cannot do any thing till thou be come thither

Exo.8:22Land...in which My people dwell, no swarms of flies

Exo.9:26The land...where children of Israel were...no hail

Exo.11:7Lord doth put a difference between Egyptians & Israel

Josh.6:20-22[The walls of Jericho fell down, except for the part where Rahab's house was] (See also
Josh.2:12-15)

Psa.78:43-53[Hebrews delivered safely while Egyptians plagued]

Psa.91:7A thousand shall fall at thy side, & ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee

5. Special protection promised in the last days:

Lk.21:17,18Ye shall be hated of all nations...but there shall not an hair of your head perish

Rev.7:3Hurt not the earth...till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads

Rev.9:3,4[Locusts will] hurt...only those men which have **not** the seal of God in their foreheads

Rev.11:3,5,6If any man will [try to] hurt them (two witnesses), fire ...devoureth their enemies

6. Conditions for having God's protection:

A. Faith in God is essential:

Psa.37:40The Lord shall...deliver them from the wicked...because they trust in Him

Dan.6:23No manner of hurt was found upon him (Daniel), because he believed in his God

1Pet.1:5Who are kept by the power of God through faith

(See also Psa.33:22)

B. You must pray in time of need:

Gen.32:1-12[Jacob's earnest prayer for protection from Esau & his 400 men] (See also vs.24-30)

2Sam.22:4I will call on Lord, so shall I be saved from enemies

Psa.34:17The righteous cry, & the Lord...delivereth them

Psa.50:15Call upon Me in the day of trouble: I will deliver

(See also Psa.18:6; 59:1-3a.)

C. You must love & fear the Lord:

2Chr.16:9a[The Lord shows] Himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward Him

Psa.31:23Love the Lord...for the Lord preserveth the faithful

Psa.33:18,19The eye of the Lord is upon them that fear Him...to deliver their soul from death

Psa.34:7Angel of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear Him, & delivereth them

Psa.91:14,15 Because he hath set his love upon Me, I will deliver

Psa.145:20 The Lord preserveth all them that love Him

(See also Pro.16:7)

D. You must stay very close to the Lord:

Psa.57:1b In the shadow of Thy wings will I make my refuge, until these calamities be overpast

Psa.91:1 He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty

E. You must be obedient & do good:

Exo.23:22 If thou indeed obey His voice...[the Lord will protect]

Psa.34:17 The righteous cry, & the Lord...delivereth them

Psa.41:1,2 Blessed is he that considereth the poor: the Lord will deliver him in time of trouble

Psa.81:13,14 Oh that My people had hearkened unto Me...I should have...turned My hand against their adversaries

Pro.1:33 Whoso hearkeneth unto Me shall dwell safely

Dan.6:16 God Whom thou servest continually...will deliver thee

1Pet.3:12 The eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, & His ears are open unto their prayers

(See also Psa.7:10; 1Pet.3:13.)

F. The importance of doing your part & obeying:

Heb.11:7 Noah...prepared an ark to the saving of his house (See also Gen.6:12-14,22; 7:1,11,17-23.)

Heb.11:31 The harlot Rahab perished not...when she [hid the spies & hung down the red cord] (See also Josh.2:4-21)

Exo.12:21-23 [The Hebrews were required to paint blood on their doorpost so that the destroyer would pass over]

G. Don't be reckless, foolhardy or disobedient:

1Ki.22:1-4, [King warned **not** to go to battle; he went, disguised as a common soldier, & was killed by a stray arrow]

29-37

2Chr.35:20-24[King Josiah rashly went out to fight the Egyptians, who didn't **want** to battle with him, & he was killed]

Pro.16:5Though hand join in hand (join forces for strength), he (the proud in heart) shall not be unpunished

Hos.8:3Israel hath cast off the thing that is good: the enemy shall pursue him

Mat.4:5-7The devil...saith unto Him, Cast Thyself down...Jesus saith, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God

Acts 19:29-31[The disciples & Paul's friends advise him not to "adventure himself" into the bloodthirsty mob]

Acts 21:17-30[Paul went to Jerusalem despite God's warnings—See Acts 20:22,23; 21:4,10-14.]

7. Some examples of divine protection:

Gen.19:15-17[The angels of the Lord helped Lot & his family to escape the doomed city of Sodom]

Gen.35:5[God made Canaanites afraid to pursue His people]

Gen.45:5-7[Jacob's brothers sold him as a slave into Egypt, but God preserved him, & turned the situation to good]

Exo.12:21-23[The angel of the Lord smote the Egyptians, but passed over the Hebrews' houses]

Exo.14:9,10[The angel of the Lord & pillar of fire went between the Hebrews & the pursuing Egyptian army]

19,20

Josh.3:10-17[God held back the swollen, flooded Jordan river, so that millions of Hebrews could cross it safely]

Josh.10:11-14[The Lord sent hailstones to smite Joshua's enemies, as well as delaying the sun's setting for him]

1Sa.17:34-39[The Lord delivered David from a lion, a bear & Goliath]

2Ki.6:24;[Syrians besieged Samaria, but] the Lord made (them)

7:5b,6,7to hear a noise of chariots...& they fled

Dan.6:16-22[The Lord protected Daniel in the lion's den]

Jon.1:15,17;The Lord prepared a great fish to swallow up Jonah [It kept him from drowning, & took him to his destination]

2:10

Mat.2:13-16[The Lord warned Joseph in a dream to flee with Mary & baby Jesus into Egypt]

Special chapters:

Psa.91The "Protection Psalm"

(See also Psa.121; 124.)

Supply

1. God can supply all our needs:

A. He has promised to supply our needs:

Phi.4:19God shall supply **all** your need according to His riches

Mat.6:33Seek ye first the Kingdom of God...& all these things shall be added unto you

Psa.23:1The Lord is my shepherd; I shall not want (lack)

Psa.34:10They that seek Lord shall not (lack) any good thing

Psa.37:25I (have) not seen righteous forsaken...begging bread

Mat.7:7-11Every one that asketh receiveth...your Father (shall) give good things to them that ask Him

Rom.8:32He that spared not His Own Son...shall He not also freely give us all things?

(See also Deut.2:7; Psa.68:19; 81:10; Mal.3:10; Mat. 6:8,25-34.)

B. God is the source of all supply:

Psa.145:15,16Thou openest Thine hand, & satisfiest the desire of every living thing

1Chr.29:14All things come of Thee, & of Thine Own have we given Thee

Psa.104:13-15He causeth...herb (to grow) for man: that he may bring forth food out of the earth

Jam.1:17Every good gift...is from above, & cometh from (God)

(See also Psa.65:9-13; Gen.1:29; 9:3.)

C. He owns the entire world:

Exo.19:5All the earth is Mine

Psa.24:1The earth is the Lord's, & the fulness thereof

Psa.50:10,11Every beast is Mine...& the cattle upon a thousand hills

Psa.89:11The earth is Thine: the world & the fulness thereof

2. God can do miracles to supply:

Num.11:21-23[God promised meat for a month, Moses doubted it, so] the Lord said, 'Is the Lord's hand waxed short?'

2Ki.4:1-6[The prophet's widow borrowed vessels & they miraculously filled with enough oil to pay her debts]

A. Food:

Exo.16:12-15[God miraculously supplied quail & manna in desert]

Num.11:18-20[God sent a month's supply of quail] (See vs.31,32)

Psa.78:23-29He opened the doors of Heaven, & rained down manna ...corn of Heaven...angel's food...meat to the full (See also Psa.105:40)

Psa.132:15I will abundantly bless her provision: I will satisfy her poor with bread

1Ki.17:4I have commanded the ravens to feed thee there

1Ki.17:16The barrel of meal wasted not, neither did the cruse of oil fail [during the 3-1/2 year famine]

1Ki.19:5-8An angel said unto (Elijah), "Arise & eat"...& behold, a cake baked on the coals, & a cruse of water

2Ki.4:42,43[Elisha fed 100, multiplying 20 loaves & some corn]

Mk.6:34-44[Jesus fed 5,000, multiplying 5 loaves & 2 fishes. 5,000 **men, besides** women & children—Mat.14:21]

Mk.8:1-9[Jesus fed 4,000, multiplying 7 loaves]

Rev.12:6,14[Church "fed, nourished" 3-1/2 years in wilderness]

(See also Psa.23:5; Lk.5:4-7; Jn.21:5,6,11.)

B. Water:

Gen.21:14-19[Hagar dying of thirst, God showed her a well]

Exo.17:1-6[At Horeb, the Lord brought water out of a rock]

Num.20:2,7-11[At Meribah, God again brought water from a rock]

Judg.15:15-19[God supplied water from a jawbone for Samson]

2Ki.3:9,17,20[God miraculously supplied water for an army]

(See also Psa.78:15,16; 105:41; Isa.41:17,18.)

C. God can even purify impure food & water:

Exo.15:23-25[Bitter waters of Marah miraculously made sweet]

2Ki.2:19-22[Undrinkable waters of Jericho healed]

2Ki.4:38-41[Poisonous gourd in the pottage rendered harmless]

(See also Mk.16:18a)

D. Clothing & other necessities:

Deut.29:5I have led you 40 years...your **clothes** are not waxen old...thy **shoe** is not waxen old upon thy foot

Mat.6:25,26, 30If God clothe the grass...shall He not...clothe you?

(See also Gen.3:21)

3. Supply during famine:

A. Sore famines predicted in the last days:

Mat.24:3,7[In] the end of the world...there shall be famines...in diverse places

Mk.13:8bThere shall be famines & troubles

B. The Lord promises to feed us during famines:

Job 5:19,20In famine He (God) shall redeem thee from death

Psa.33:18,19The eye of the Lord is upon them that fear Him...to keep them alive in famine

Psa.37:18,19The Lord knoweth the days of the upright...in the days of famine they shall be satisfied

Pro.10:3The Lord will not suffer (allow)...the righteous to famish

Ezk.36:29b,30I will increase (the corn), & lay no famine upon you. I will multiply the fruit of the tree, &...of the field

C. He usually warns His people so they can make preparations:

Gen.41:25-36, 47-49[God showed Joseph & Pharaoh that a famine was coming & they prepared for it by storing away food

Acts 11:27-30[God warned that a dearth was coming, & believers sent relief money to their affected brethren]

(See also Amos 3:7)

4. Conditions to God's supply:

A. We must please God & be obedient:

Mat.6:33**Seek first**...& all things shall be added unto you

2Chr.1:7-12[God gave King Solomon fabulous riches & wealth when he sought the good of the kingdom first]

Psa.34:9There is no want (lack) to them that **fear** Him

Psa.34:10They that **seek** Lord shall not (lack) any good thing

Psa.37:3Do good...& verily thou shalt be fed

Psa.37:18,19The Lord knoweth...the upright...in the days of famine they shall be satisfied

Psa.37:25I have been young, & now am old; yet have I not seen the **righteous** forsaken...begging bread

Psa.84:11No good thing will He withhold from them that **walk uprightly**

Pro.13:25Righteous eateth to satisfying... wicked shall (lack)

Isa.1:19If ye be willing & obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land

1Jn.3:22Whatsoever we ask, we receive...because we keep His commandments, & do...things...pleasing in His sight

(See also Deut.11:10-15; 29:9; Psa.111:5.)

B. Examples of obeying & doing our part first:

1Ki.17:2-5Get thee hence...& hide by the brook Cherith...ravens feed thee there. So he went

1Ki.17:9,10Arise, get thee to Zarephath. So he arose & went

2Ki.4:1-6Go borrow...of all thy neighbours empty vessels, borrow not a few. So she went & (did)

Mat.17:27Go cast an hook, & take up the fish...thou shalt find a piece of money (in his mouth)

Lk.5:4-6Launch out into the deep, & let down your nets

Jn.2:1-10Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them

Jn.11:39Take (roll) **ye** away the stone

Jn.21:5,6Cast the net on right side of the ship...They cast

C. Pray, believe God's Word & depend on Him to supply:

Mat.7:7Ask, & it shall be given; knock, & it shall be opened

Mat.21:22All things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive

Heb.11:6He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him

(See also 2Chr.26:5; Isa.45:11; Mat.9:29.)

D. Remember to thank Him for supplying:

Psa.68:19Blessed be the Lord, Who daily loadeth us with benefits

Psa.116:12-14,17,18What shall I render unto the Lord for all His benefits? I will offer to Thee the sacrifice of thanksgiving

5. Reasons why we sometimes lack:

A. Because of sin or disobedience:

Jer.5:25 Your sins have withholden good things from you

(See also Psa.81:15,16; Jam.4:3.)

B. Lack of faith or failure to ask the Lord:

Jam.4:2 Ye have not, because ye ask not

Jam.1:6,7 [Wavering & not asking in faith]

C. Laziness:

2Thes.3:10 If any would not **work**, neither should he eat

Pro.13:4 The soul of the sluggard desireth, & hath nothing

Pro.20:4 Sluggard will not plow...therefore shall have nothing

Pro.21:25 The desire of the slothful killeth him; for his hands refuse to labour (See also Pro.23:21)

D. To keep us dependent upon God & His supply:

Deut.31:20 When they...have eaten & filled themselves, & waxen fat; then will they turn to other gods

Pro.30:8,9 Give me (not) riches...lest I be full & deny Thee

(See also 1Tim.6:10,17; Rev.3:17-19.)

E. To show us that it's time to move:

1Ki.17:7-9 [When the brook dried, it was time for Elijah to move]

(See also Gen.26:1-3; 45:6-11; Ruth 1:1-6,16-18; 2Ki.8:1,2.)

6. God loves you & wants to supply:

A. He knows what you need & is looking after you:

Mat.6:8 Your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask Him

Mat.6:25,31, 32Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or drink ...(God) knoweth that ye need all these things

B. If God provides for the unbelieving World...

(See Mat.5:45; Acts 14:15b-17.)

C. If He even provides the needs of animals...

(See Gen.1:30; 6:14-22; Psa.104:21,26-28; 147:8,9.)

D. ...Won't He much more care for you?

(See Mat.6:26,30; Psa.34:10; 145:15,16; 2Cor.9:8.)

7. Doing what we can do to supply:

A. Our responsibility to provide:

1Tim.5:8If any provide not for...those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, & is worse than an infidel

B. Working for our needs:

Acts 20:35How that labouring ye ought to support the weak

Eph.4:28Let him labour, working w/ his hands thing which is good

1Thes.4:11,12Work with your own hands...that ye may lack nothing

2Thes.3:10-12Some work not at all...If any would not work, neither should he eat

Tit.3:14Let ours learn to maintain good works (profess honest trades) for necessary uses

(See also Gen.41:39-44; Dan.2:48,49; 6:1-3; 8:27.)

C. Missionaries occasionally take on secular jobs:

Acts 18:1-3[Paul temporarily made tents to support himself] (See also Acts 20:34; 1Cor.4:12 .)

D. God blesses diligent, hard work:

Gen.31:38-40[Jacob's sample of diligent shepherding]

Gen.39:1-6[God blessed Joseph's hard work] (See also vs.20-23)

Pro.10:4The hand of the diligent maketh rich(See also Pro.13:4; 22:29; 21:25; Eccl.5:18.)

Pro.28:19He that tilleth his land shall have plenty of bread, but he that followeth vain persons...poverty

Mat.25:14-30[The reward of the diligent servants who increased their talents]

8. When God uses others to supply His workers' needs:

A. Well-off supporters often helped God's messengers:

Gen.47:1-6[Pharaoh gave the best land in Egypt, Goshen, to Joseph's father & brothers]

1Ki.18:3,13[Governor Obadiah risked his life to save & feed 100 of the Lord's prophets]

2Ki.4:8-11[Rich woman of Shunem supplied food & lodging for Elisha & his servant]

Neh.2:7,8[King Artaxerxes gave Nehemiah permission to take as much timber as he needed from the king's forest]

Jer.37:15-21[King Zedekiah defied Jeremiah's enemies & commanded Jeremiah be given bread continually]

Dan.2:48,49[King Nebuchadnezzar gives Daniel power & "many great gifts", & gave his friends high positions]

Lk.8:1-3[Joanna & other wealthy women helped support Jesus]

(See also Rom.16:23; Phlm.1,2,7,22.)

B. Don't abuse others' generosity:

1Cor.7:31They that use this world, as **not** abusing it

C. God's workers to be supported by those to whom they minister:

Mat.10:9,10Provide neither gold, nor silver in your purses...for the workman is worthy of his meat

1Cor.9:7-14The Lord ordained that they which preach the gospel should live **of** the gospel

2Ki.4:42A man...brought (Elisha) bread of the firstfruits, 20 loaves & corn [to feed his 100 disciples]

Lk.22:35When I sent you without purse...lacked ye any thing? And they said, "Nothing."

1Tim.5:18Shalt not muzzle ox that treadeth the corn. The labourer is worthy of his hire (See Deut.25:4; Lk.10:7.)

(See also Acts 28:7-10)

D. Staying as a guest at someone's house:

Mat.10:11 In whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who is worthy; & there abide

Lk.10:7,8 In the same house remain, eating (what) they give

(See also 1Ki.17:8-16,24; Acts 10:5,6; 16:14,15; 17:5,7; 18:2,3,7; Rom.16:23a; Phlm.22.)

E. But don't overstay your welcome:

Pro.25:17 Withdraw thy foot from thy neighbour's house; lest he be weary of thee; & so hate thee

F. Accepting invitations to a meal:

Mat.9:9,10 [Jesus & disciples ate with Matthew] (See also Lk.5:29)

Lk.7:36 One of the Pharisees desired that He would eat with him

Lk.19:1-6 [Jesus invited Himself to eat at Zacchaeus' house]

1Cor.10:27 If any (unbelievers) bid you to a feast, & ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat

G. Refusing invitations to a meal:

1Ki.13:7-9,15-17 [Young prophet ordered by God to refuse invitations] (See also vs.18-24)

Pro.15:17 Better is a dinner of herbs where love is, than (steak) & hatred therewith (See also Dan.1:5,8,12-16)

Pro.23:6-8 Eat not the bread of him that hath an evil eye

H. Share amongst yourselves what God has already given you:

Acts 2:44,45 (They) parted them to all men, as every man had need

Acts 4:32 They had all things common

Acts 4:34,35 Distribution was made unto every man...as he had need

Acts 11:29 Every man according to his ability...(sent) relief

2Cor.8:12-14 That...your abundance may be a supply for their want (lack)...that there may be equality

2Cor.8:15He that gathered much had nothing over; & he that gathered little had no lack (See Exo.16:18)

9. Giving to God's work:

A. God can even use unbelievers to give to His people:

Job 27:16,17Though he heap up silver...innocent shall divide (it) ...prepare raiment...but the just shall put it on

Psa.2:8Ask...I shall give the heathen for thine inheritance

Pro.21:1King's heart is in hand of the Lord...He turneth it

Psa.105:44(He) gave them lands of the heathen: & they inherited the labour of the people (heathen)

Pro.13:22The wealth of the sinner is laid up for the just

Eccl.2:26To the sinner He giveth travail, to gather & to heap up, that he may give to him that is good before God

Isa.23:18Her merchandise shall be...for [servants of] the Lord, to eat sufficiently, & for durable clothing

B. Examples of the need to ask:

1Sam.25:2-8[David sent men to ask Nabal, a great & rich—but wicked—man, to donate food to him & his men]

1Sam.25:7,8[David explained the good work his men have done]

1Sam.27:5-7[David asked for place to stay for 16 months]

Mk.11:1-7[Jesus' disciples requested a donkey for Him to ride]

Mk.14:12-16[Jesus' disciples asked for the use of an upper room, already furnished & prepared]

Lk.5:1-3[Jesus asked for the use of a boat to preach from]

Jn.4:6,7[Jesus asked for a drink of water]

10. God promises to prosper our work & businesses:

A. Financially:

Deut.28:1-13[Mighty promises of **prosperity** to the faithful]

Psa.112:1,3Blessed is the man...that delighteth greatly in His commandments...wealth shall be in his house

Pro.10:22Blessing of the Lord maketh rich, He addeth no sorrow

B. Other ways God prospers His people:

(See Gen.39:2; Lev.26:3-13; Deut.29:9; 30:9; 2Chr.26:5; Psa.107:35-38; 127:3-5; Isa.3:10; Ezk.34:26; Acts 14:17.)

11. God supplies our needs, not always our wants:

A. Be content & do not desire more than you need:

Lk.12:15Beware of covetousness, for a man's life consisteth not in abundance of things which he possesseth

1Tim.6:6-8Godliness with contentment is great gain...having food & raiment let us be therewith content

Phi.4:11I have learned, in whatever state I am...to be content

Heb.13:5Let your (life) be without covetousness; & be content with such things as ye have

Psa.37:16A little that a righteous man hath is better than the riches of many wicked

Pro.15:16Better is little with the fear of the Lord than great treasure & trouble therewith

Pro.30:8Give me neither poverty nor riches; feed me with food convenient for me

2Cor.6:10As poor...having nothing, & yet possessing all things

(See also Psa.62:10b; Psa.119:36 ; Pro.17:1 ; 23:5.)

B. Dangers of discontent & murmuring:

Exo.16:3[Longing for fleshpots of Egypt, & complaining that God will let them die of hunger]

Num.21:5,6[The people complained against & loathe the manna & were attacked by fiery serpents]

1Sam.15:3,9,[Saul disobeyed God's orders to utterly destroy, saving the best of the goods. God rejected Saul as king]

22,23

Psa.73:3-20[Warning not to envy the prosperity of worldly wicked]

Psa.78:15-21[Israelites miraculously received water, then doubtingly murmured for meat. God angrily judged them]

Trials, Temptations & Tribulations

1. Trials & tests are to be expected:

Psa.34:19**Many** are the afflictions of the righteous: but the Lord delivereth him out of them all

Acts 14:22We must through much tribulation enter the Kingdom

1Cor.10:13aNo temptation taken you but such as is common to man

1Thes.3:3No man should be moved by these afflictions: for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto

Heb.12:7What son is he whom the father chasteneth not?

1Pet.4:12Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try (test) you

1Pet.4:17Judgment must begin at the house of God...at **us**

1Pet.5:9Knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren

(See also Psa.26:2; 139:23,24.)

2. Trials often result when things don't go our way:

Jam.4:2Ye lust, & have not...desire to have, & cannot obtain

A. Often God will grant your heart's desire:

Psa.37:4Delight thyself in the Lord; & He shall give thee the desires of thine heart

Psa.84:11No good thing will He withhold from them (the upright) Psa.145:19a He will fulfil the desire of them that fear Him

Pro.10:24bThe desire of the righteous shall be granted

(See also Psa.21:2; 145:16.)

B. But sometimes He withholds it because it's not His time:

Eccl.3:1-8 There is...a **time** to every purpose under the heaven

(See also Psa.37:34; Eccl.8:5,6.)

C. Or because it would choke out your fruitfulness:

Mk.4:7,19 The lusts of other things entering in, **choke** the Word, & it becometh unfruitful (See Mat.13:22; Lk.8:14.)

D. Or seriously stumble or offend others:

1Thes.5:22 Abstain [even] from all appearance of evil

Rom.14:14-16, 21 Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died (See also 1Cor.8:8-13)

E. Or bring reproach on the Lord's work or ministry:

2Sam.12:14 By this deed [murdering Uriah] thou hast given great occasion to the enemies of the Lord to blaspheme

2Cor.6:3 Giving no offence...that the ministry be not blamed

(See also 2Pet.2:2)

F. Or because of unrepented sin in your heart:

Jer.5:25 Your iniquities have turned away these things, & your sins have withholden good things from you

(See also Psa.66:18; Isa.59:1,2.)

G. Or because you're asking with the wrong motives:

Jam.4:2,3 Ye ask & receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts

H. It's not always good to get the desire of your heart:

Psa.73:3,7,16-22 I was envious at...prosperity...they have more than heart could wish...then understood I their **end**

1Tim.6:9,10 They that will (**desire** to) be **rich** fall into temptation...& many hurtful lusts...erred from the faith

I. You may miss something better God had planned for you:

Psa.81:10-13,16 He **would** have fed them the finest of wheat...honey

J. Nonetheless, we have trials when we can't have something:

1Sam.1:6b-8, 10The Lord had shut up her womb...therefore she wept... heart grieved...bitterness of soul

Pro.13:12aHope deferred maketh the heart sick

(See also 2Sam.13:1,2)

K. Warning against stubbornly insisting on getting your way:

Psa.78:27-31He gave them their own desire...their lust. But...the wrath of God came (See also Psa.81:12)

Psa.106:14,15He gave them their request; but sent **leanness** into their **soul** (See also Num.11:4-34)

(See 1Sam.8:4-22; 12:1,13,16-19 re: asking for a king)

L. What you give up for the Lord, He will often return:

Gen.22:1-12[God commands Abraham to sacrifice Isaac, then stops him & lets him keep Isaac](See also Heb.11:17-19)

Heb.6:15After he patiently endured, he obtained the promise

(See also Eccl.11:1; Heb.10:36.)

3. Why the Lord allows you to have trials & tests:

A. To draw you closer to Him:

Psa.107:12,13He brought down their heart with labour...**then** they cried unto the Lord in their trouble

B. To see what's in your heart & if you will remain true:

Exo.20:20God is come to prove (test) you

Deut.8:2The Lord...[tested you] to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep His commandments

Deut.13:3,4God...proveth you, to know whether ye love the Lord

Judg.2:21,22[God kept adversaries in the land to] **prove** Israel, whether they keep the way of the Lord, or not

Jer.12:3aThou knowest me...Thou hast...tried my heart

Jer.17:10I the Lord search the heart...to give every man according to his ways, &...the fruit of his doings

Jn.6:5,6This He said to prove (test) him, for He Himself knew

C. To draw you closer to His Word:

Psa.94:12Blessed is the man whom Thou chastenest, O Lord, & teachest him out of Thy law

Psa.119:71It is good for me that I have been afflicted; that I might learn Thy statutes

D. To prune away dead wood so you can be more fruitful:

Jn.15:2bEvery branch that beareth fruit, He purgeth (**prunes**), that it may bring forth more fruit

E. To teach you obedience:

Heb.5:8Though He were a Son, yet learned He obedience by the things which He suffered (See also Heb.2:10)

1Pet.4:1,2He that...suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin

F. To make you a better & more useful vessel:

Jer.18:4The vessel that he (the potter) made of clay was marred ...so he made it again another vessel

1Cor.5:7Purge out the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump

2Tim.2:21[If purged]...he shall be a vessel...meet for the Master's use, & prepared unto every good work

G. To purify you as precious metal is refined:

Mal.3:3He shall sit as a refiner & purifier of silver

Zech.13:9aI will bring [them] through the fire, & refine them

Psa.66:10Thou, O God, hast...tried us, as silver is tried

Job 23:10When He hath tried me, I shall come forth as gold

Pro.17:3The fining pot is for silver, & the furnace for gold: but the Lord trieth the hearts

Isa.48:10I have refined thee...in the furnace of affliction

Dan.11:35[They] shall fall, to try them...& to make them white

1Pet.1:7The trial of your faith (is) much more precious than gold ...though it be tried with fire

(See also Isa.1:25)

H. To prepare you for future blessings & exalted ministries:

Deut.8:16That He might humble thee...& prove thee, to do thee good at thy latter end

Psa.105:17-22[Joseph imprisoned, abased & tested, then exalted]

Pro.18:12bBefore honour is humility

I. To teach you patience:

Rom.5:3bTribulation worketh (teaches us) patience

Jam.1:3,4The trying of your faith worketh patience

J. To make you wiser through sorrow:

Eccl.7:3,4Sorrow is better than laughter: for by...sadness...the heart is made better

K. To teach you compassion towards others:

Heb.4:15Be touched with the feeling of [others'] infirmities

2Cor.1:4That we may be able to comfort them...in trouble

4. Trials over suffering personal loss:

A. Willingly & joyfully suffer loss of position or possessions:

Job 1:21The Lord gave, & the Lord hath taken away; blessed be the name of the Lord

Acts 20:23,24Bonds & afflictions...none of these things move me, neither count I [even] my **life** dear

Phi.3:8I have suffered the loss of all things, & do count them but dung, that I may win Christ

Heb.10:34Ye...took joyfully the spoiling of your goods

B. Lay aside weights to run the race:

Heb.12:1Let us lay aside every weight...& let us run the race

1Cor.9:24 So run, that ye may obtain (the prize)

Phi.3:13,14 Forgetting those things which are behind...I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling

C. The futility of trying to hang onto things:

Pro.23:5 Wilt thou **set** thine eyes upon that which is **not**? for riches certainly...fly away

Lk.12:15 A man's life consisteth not in...things he possesseth

(See also Eccl.5:13-15; 1Tim.6:7.)

D. Paul's trials in missing loved ones:

(See Phi.1:7,8; 1Thes.2:17,18; 1Thes.3:10 ; 2Tim.1:3,4 .)

E. The Lord wants you to love Him first of all:

Psa.73:25 Whom have I in Heaven but Thee? And there is none upon earth that I desire beside **Thee**

Psa.142:4,5 Refuge failed me; no man cared...**Thou** art my refuge & my portion in the land of the living

Isa.54:1,5,6 Sing...for thy Maker is thine husband...the Lord hath called thee as a woman forsaken

Jn.16:32 Ye...shall leave Me alone: & yet I am **not** alone, because the **Father** is with Me

5. Some Bible examples of trials & tests:

Gen.21:9-11 And the thing was very **grievous** in Abraham's sight [to send away Hagar & his son Ishmael]

Gen.26:34,35 [Esau disobeyed & married pagans] which were a grief of mind to Isaac & Rebekah (Also Gen.27:46; 28:8.)

Exo.4:10-13 [Moses felt incapable to speak to the Hebrew nation]

Num.11:10-12, 14 [Moses said:] I am not able to bear all this people alone, because it is too heavy for me

Judg.6:14,15 [Gideon felt incapable to be the deliverer of Israel]

Ruth 1:12,13 [Naomi, unable to help her daughters-in-law, said:] It grieveth me much for your sakes

1Sam.30:1-6 [David's men grieved at the loss of wives & families]

1Ki.19:1-4,10[Elijah, persecuted & feeling all alone, prayed to die]

Psa.6:6-8[David's tears & grief because his enemies triumphed]

Psa.38:4-9[David's trials about an unhealed affliction]

Psa.102:1-8[David's deep trial because of his enemies' reproach] (See also Psa.69:16-20)

Jer.15:10[Jeremiah's depths of despair over being rejected, despised & mocked—See also Jer.20:7-10,14,18]

Jon.3:4,5,10; 4:1-9[When things didn't work as he'd hoped, Jonah was so angry & displeased, he wished to die]

Lk.10:40[Martha, working alone, felt unfairly over-burdened]

Jn.21:17Peter grieved [because Jesus seemed to be bringing his love & loyalty into question]

2Cor.1:8[Paul's] trouble...we were pressed above strength, so we despaired even of life (See also 2Cor.4:8; 7:5.)

Isa.53:3-9[Jesus' sorrows & trials]

6. Why it's worth it to endure tests & temptations:

A. For the sake of lost souls:

2Tim.2:10I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain...salvation

Isa.53:10-12[God "put Jesus to grief" to save our souls]

B. Because you'll be spiritually stronger as a result:

2Cor.4:16We faint not; (for) though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day

2Cor.12:9,10My (Jesus') strength is made perfect in weakness...that the power of Christ may rest upon me (Paul)

C. Because God will reward you after testing you:

Psa.66:12Thou hast caused [us to go] through fire & water: but Thou broughtest us out into a wealthy place

Heb.12:11No chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward...[good] fruit

Jam.5:11 Endure. Ye have heard of...Job, & have seen the end... the Lord is of tender mercy (See Job 42:10-17)

(See also Psa.118:5; Lam.3:32.)

D. Heavenly rewards:

Rom.8:18 The sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be...in us

2Cor.4:17 Our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us (an)...eternal weight of glory

Jam.1:12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation...he shall receive the crown of life

1Pet.4:13 Ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings...when His glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also

(See also 1Jn.2:17; Rev.21:7.)

7. Be thankful for your trials & temptations:

A. God uses your trials & temptations for good:

Rom.8:28 All things work together for good to...the called

Jam.1:2-4 Count it joy when ye fall into diverse temptations

1Pet.1:6 Rejoice, though now for a season ye are in heaviness

B. Chastenings prove God loves you & that you're His child:

Deut.8:5 As a man chasteneth his son, so the Lord chasteneth

Pro.3:11,12 My son, despise not the chastening of the Lord

Heb.12:5-12 Whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth...every son

Rev.3:19 As many as I love, I rebuke & chasten

(See also Job 5:17; Psa.11:5; 1Cor.11:32.)

C. Remember that sorrow will give way to joy:

Psa.30:5 Weeping may endure for a night, but joy cometh in the morning

Mat.5:4Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted

1Pet.5:10God...**after** that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you

8. Helping others who are going through trials:

A. How to help them:

Job 6:14To him that is afflicted pity should be showed

Job 19:21Have pity upon me...the hand of God hath touched me

Rom.15:1,2We...ought to bear the infirmities of the weak

1Cor.12:25,26Whether one member suffer, all...suffer with it

Gal.6:2Bear ye one another's burdens

Heb.13:3Remember them...which suffer, as being yourselves also in the body

B. Encourage & strengthen them:

Job 16:4,5I would strengthen you with my mouth...assuage grief

Isa.50:4Speak a word in season to him that is weary

Pro.12:25Heaviness in the heart of man maketh it stoop: but a good word maketh it glad

C. Admonish them with hearty counsel:

Pro.27:9Ointment & perfume rejoice the heart: so doth sweetness of a man's friend by hearty counsel

Col.3:16Let the Word of Christ dwell in you...teaching & admonishing one another...singing

9. Temptations: Where they come from:

A. From our own lusts:

Jam.1:13,14Every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his **own** lust, & enticed

1Jn.2:15,16The lust of the flesh &...eyes...is of the world

B. They are also instigated by the devil:

Gen.3:1-6,13[Eve:] The serpent beguiled me, & I did eat

1Chr.21:1,7,8Satan...provoked David to...(sin & do foolishly)

Mat.4:1-7[Jesus was tempted of the devil, "the tempter"]

Lk.22:31Simon, Satan hath desired to...sift you as wheat

(See also 1Thes.3:5; 2Cor.11:3.)

10. Avoiding temptation:

Mat.6:13a[Pray:] Lead us not into temptation

A. Avoid the pathway to temptation:

Pro.4:14Enter not into the path of the wicked, & go not

Pro.4:15**Avoid** it, pass not **by** it, turn from it, & pass away

Mat.7:13,14Enter ye in at the strait (narrow) gate: for wide is the gate, & broad is the way...to destruction

2Tim.2:22aFlee also youthful lusts

B. Beware of those who would entice you:

Psa.1:1,2(Walk) not in the counsel of the ungodly

Pro.1:10If sinners entice thee, consent thou not

Pro.16:29A violent man enticeth his neighbour, & leadeth him into the way that is not good

2Pet.3:17Beware lest ye also being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your steadfastness

(See also Pro.22:24,25; 2Pet.2:18,19.)

C. Know your weaknesses, & be on guard against them:

Rom.13:14Make not provision (forethought, plans) for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof

Gal.6:1bConsidering thyself, lest thou also be tempted

D. Warning re: evil, beguiling influences & "entertainment":

Deut.7:25,26[Do not] bring an abomination into thine house, lest thou be a cursed thing like it: utterly **detest** it

Psa.101:3I will set no wicked thing before mine eyes

Psa.106:35,36They were mingled among the heathen, & learned their works. Their idols...were a **snare** unto them

2Cor.11:3Lest...as the serpent **beguiled** Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be **corrupted**

2Pet.2:7,8Lot...in seeing & hearing [filthy Sodomites], vexed (tormented) his righteous soul...with their unlawful deeds

11. How to resist & overcome temptation:

A. Keep your eyes on Jesus:

Heb.11:27He (Moses) endured, as seeing Him Who is invisible

Heb.12:2,3Looking unto **Jesus**...consider **Him**...lest ye...faint

(See also Pro.4:25; Col.3:2,3.)

B. Pray & ask the Lord to help you:

Psa.17:5Hold up my goings in Thy paths...that my footsteps slip not

Psa.56:13Thou hast delivered my soul from death: wilt not Thou deliver my feet from falling?

Mat.6:13aLead us not into temptation...deliver us from evil

Mat.26:41Watch & pray, that ye enter not into temptation (See also Lk.21:36)

Mat.18:19,20[Have others pray with you in special times of temptation] (See also Jam.5:16)

C. Resist the devil:

Eph.4:27Neither give place to the devil

Jam.4:7Resist the devil, & he will flee from you

D. Cling to the Word:

Psa.119:80Let my heart be sound in Thy statutes; that I be not ashamed

Jn.15:3Now ye are clean through the Word

2Pet.1:4Precious promises: that by these ye might...(escape) the corruption that is in the world through lust

Rev.3:10Because thou hast kept the Word...I will keep thee

E. Be willing to give up your own desires out of love for Jesus:

Gal.5:16Walk in the Spirit, & ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh

Gal.5:24They that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections & lusts

Eph.4:20-23Put off...the old man...the deceitful lusts

(See also Rom.6:16; Phi.3:8.)

F. Exercise willpower & determine not to yield to temptation:

Rom.6:13Neither yield ye your members...unto sin

1Cor.9:27I keep under my body, & bring it into subjection

1Cor.16:13Watch ye, stand **fast** in the faith, quit you (behave) like men, be strong

2Tim.2:3Endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ

2Tim.2:22Flee youthful lusts: but follow righteousness

1Pet.1:14As obedient children, **not** (conforming) to **former** lusts

1Pet.2:11Abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul

(See also 1Cor.10:5,6)

G. Fear the Lord & be afraid to disobey Him:

Pro.14:27The fear of the Lord is a fountain of life, to depart from the snares of death

Pro.16:6bBy the fear of the Lord men depart from evil

Pro.23:17Let not thine heart envy sinners: but be thou in the fear of the Lord all the day long

1Sam.12:24Fear the Lord, & serve Him in truth with all your heart

H. Be serious & sober about serving the Lord:

Tit.2:12Denying...worldly lusts, we should live soberly...in this present world

1Thes.5:8Let us...be sober, putting on the [armour of God]

1Pet.1:13Gird up...your mind, be sober, & hope to the end

1Pet.4:7The **end**...is at hand: be ye therefore sober

1Pet.5:8Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil ...walketh about, seeking whom he may devour

I. Keep your heart & mind on the final goal:

Heb.11:25,26Choosing rather to suffer affliction...than to enjoy pleasures of sin...for he had respect to the reward

Heb.12:2(Jesus) for the **joy** set before Him, endured the cross

12. The Lord will deliver you:

A. God's promises to help you:

2Pet.2:9Lord knoweth how to deliver godly out of temptations

1Cor.10:13bGod...will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will...also make a way to escape

1Cor.15:57Thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ

Heb.2:18He is able to succour (help) them that are tempted

B. Jesus has compassion on us, knowing what it's like:

Heb.4:15(Jesus) was in **all** points tempted like as **we** are

C. He is with you when you go through temptation:

Isa 43:1Fear not: I have called thee by name; thou art Mine

Isa.43:2When thou passest through waters, I will be with thee

1Pet.4:19Let them that suffer...commit the keeping of their souls to Him...as unto a faithful Creator

(See also Deut.4:30,31)

13. How righteous men fell through temptation:

A. Example of Lot going astray & losing all:

Gen.13:5,6Lot...had flocks & herds & tents...substance was great

Gen.13:8-11[Lot is attracted to the well-watered Jordan valley]

Gen.13:12,13Lot...pitched his tent **toward** [wicked] Sodom

Gen.14:11-16[Lot, living **near** Sodom, taken captive with Sodomites]

Gen.19:1,2[Lot "sat in the **gate** of Sodom" as a judge (19:9), & lived in a house **inside** Sodom]

Gen.19:24-30[Lot lost everything he owned & ended up in a cave]

(See also Ezk.3:20; Rev.3:11.)

B. Example of Balaam the prophet:

(Compare Num.22:1-21; 24:2,10,11,15,19; 25:1-3; 31:16; Josh.13:22;

2Pet.2:15; Jude 11; Rev.2:14.)

C. The fall of King Solomon:

2Sam.12:24Bathsheba...bare Solomon...& the Lord **loved** him

Neh.13:26Solomon...was **beloved** of his God...nevertheless even him did outlandish women cause to sin

1Ki.11:1-8King Solomon loved many strange women...his wives turned away his heart after other gods

1Ki.11:9-11The Lord was **angry** with Solomon (& said), I will rend the kingdom from thee, & give it to thy servant

D. Other examples of people falling through temptation:

Gen.3:1-6(Eve) saw the tree was good for food...pleasant to the eyes, & to be desired to make one wise...did eat

Gen.25:29-34[Esau sold his birthright to Jacob for some pottage]

Josh.7:1,20,21(Achan coveted) a goodly Babylonish garment...silver & a wedge of gold

1Ki.13:1-28[Young prophet tempted to disobey by the old prophet]

2Ki.5:20-27[Gehazi coveted Naaman's goods; was struck leprous]

14. When tempted by worldly beauty:

A. Beware of lusting after shallow, deceitful beauty:

Pro.6:25 Lust not after her beauty in thine heart; neither let her **take** thee with her (eyelashes)

Pro.31:30 Favour is **deceitful**, & beauty is **vain**: but a woman that feareth the Lord, she shall be praised

1Jn.2:15,16 The lust of the flesh, & the lust of the eyes, is not of the Father but is of the world

(See also Isa.3:16,18-24; 1Pet.3:3,4.)

B. Beware of being beguiled by the worldly:

Job 31:1 I made a **covenant** with mine eyes; when then should I think upon a [worldly] maid?

Pro.7:6-21 With her much fair speech she caused him to yield

2Pet.2:18 They speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh...wantonness

C. The bitter end result of being beguiled:

Pro.5:3-13 The lips of a strange woman drop as an honeycomb... but her end is **bitter**...thou mourn at the last

Pro.7:21,22 He goeth after her...as an ox goeth to the slaughter

Pro.7:23 As a bird hasteth to the **snare**, & knoweth not that it is for his **life** (See also Pro.6:26)

Pro.14:12 A way which seemeth right, but the end thereof...death

(See also Judg.16:4-6,16,21; Pro.7:25-27; 9:13-18; 23:27,28; 2Sam.13:1-3,28,29.)

D. Resist it with the power of the Word:

Pro.2:1-13 My commandments...preserveth the way of His saints... to deliver thee from the way of the evil man

Pro.2:16,17 To deliver thee from the strange woman (See also vs. 1-11)

Pro.6:23,24 The commandment is a lamp; & the law is light...to keep thee from the flattery of...a strange woman

Lk.4:5-12 [Jesus resisted devil's temptations by quoting the Word]

(See also Pro.7:1-5)

15. Examples of resisting temptation:

Gen.14:21-23[Abraham refused rewards from the king of Sodom]

2Ki.5:15,16[Naaman urged Elisha to take gifts; Elisha refused]

Job 2:9,10[Job refused to sin with his lips & curse God]

Jer.35:5,6[The Rechabites obediently refused to drink wine]

Dan.1:8[Daniel refused to defile himself eating unclean food]

Acts 8:18-20[Peter refused Simon the sorcerer's money]

Suffering

1. Who causes suffering?—God or the devil?

A. The devil causes much of man's suffering:

(See Acts 10:38; Mat.15:22; Lk.8:29b; 2Tim.2:26.)

B. But it is God Who allows the devil to bring suffering:

Job 1:8-19[God allowed Satan to bring Job to ruin with fire, raiding bandits & a violent storm]

Job 2:3-7[God allowed the devil to afflict Job with boils]

(See also 1Cor.5:5; 1Tim.1:20.)

C. God is ultimately responsible for allowing suffering:

Exo.4:11 Who maketh the dumb, or deaf, or blind? Have not **I**?

1Sam.2:6,7 The **Lord** killeth, maketh alive, maketh poor...rich

Isa.45:7 I make peace, & create evil; I the **Lord** do all these

Amos 3:6b Be (calamity) in a city, & (hath not) the Lord done it?

(See also Deut.32:39; 2Chr.15:2b,5,6; Job 12:14-25; Psa.66:10-12a; Mic.1:12b.)

2. Why does God allow the righteous to suffer?

A. He has a loving reason for everything He does:

Rom.8:28**All** things work together for **good** to...the called

Gen.45:4-8Be not grieved...that ye sold me [as a slave]: for **God** did send me before you to preserve life

Gen.50:20Ye thought evil against me; but God meant it unto good

Psa.119:71It is good for me that I have been afflicted; that I might learn Thy statutes

Jer.37:15,16; 38:28[Jeremiah spent a long time in prison, but was safe there when Jerusalem was destroyed—Jer.39:11-14]

Jon.2:1-7a[Jonah suffered in the fish's belly but it saved him from drowning & took him to land—Jon.1:15,17; 2:10.]

B. Suffering is often God's loving chastisement:

Pro.3:11,12Whom the Lord loveth He correcteth

Heb.12:5-12Whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth

Rev.3:19As many as I love, I rebuke & chasten

(See also Deut.8:5; Job 5:17; 1Cor.11:32.)

C. God's chastisements are righteous:

Neh.9:33Thou art just in all that is brought upon us

Psa.119:75I know that Thy judgments are right, & that Thou in faithfulness hast afflicted me

Psa.19:9bThe judgments of the Lord are true & righteous

Pro.26:2The curse causeless shall not come

Jer.17:10I the Lord search the heart...to give every man...according to the fruit of his doings

(See also Ezk.14:22,23; Heb.12:11.)

D. Our suffering is less than we deserve:

Ezra 9:13God hast punished us less than our iniquities deserve

Psa.78:38,39 Full of compassion...many a time turned He His anger

Psa.103:10-14 He hath not dealt with us after our sins

E. Continue to trust Him, even though you don't understand:

Pro.3:5 Trust in Lord...lean not unto thine own understanding

Isa.55:8,9 Neither are your ways My ways, saith the Lord

3. Some specific reasons that God allows suffering:

A. Suffering has been a fact of life since the fall of man:

Gen.3:16-19 [Suffering brought into the world by the fall of man]

Job 5:6,7 Man is born unto trouble, as the sparks fly upward

(See also Job 14:1; Psa.90:10.)

B. We often bring on suffering by sin & disobedience:

Gen.42:21 We are guilty...therefore is distress come upon us

Job 4:8 They that plow iniquity & sow wickedness reap the same

Psa.31:9,10 I am in trouble...grief...because of mine iniquity

Psa.38:1-8 There is no soundness in my flesh...because of my sin

Psa.107:17 Fools...because of their iniquities, are afflicted

Isa.66:4 [Ignoring God & doing evil brings on mental anguish, fears & delusions]

Jer.5:25 Your sins have withholden good things from you

(See also Jer.30:15; Lam.1:20.)

C. Because we're unbelieving or disobeying God's Word:

Deut.11:28 A curse, if ye will not obey the commandments

Psa.78:32,33 They believed not...their years He consumed in trouble

Psa.89:30-32 If (they) forsake My law...visit transgression with rod

(See also Psa.107:11,12)

4. Suffering because of obedience & righteousness:

A. Sufferings & privations while serving God:

Acts 20:19 Serving the Lord with many tears & temptations

1Cor.4:11 We hunger, thirst, are naked, buffeted

2Cor.1:8 [Paul's] trouble...pressed out of measure, above strength, despaired even of life

2Cor.11:23-30 [Paul's many sufferings & troubles]

Phi.2:27a,30 Sick nigh unto death, to supply your lack of service

(See also 2Cor.6:4-10)

B. Suffering caused by persecution:

Phi.1:29 For unto you it is **given**...not only to believe on Him, but also to **suffer** for His sake

2Tim.3:12 All that live godly in Jesus shall suffer persecution

2Tim.1:8 Be not ashamed, but partaker of afflictions of gospel

Heb.11:25 Choosing to suffer affliction with the people of God

Heb.11:35b-38 [Saints tortured, cruelly mocked, scourged, imprisoned, slain, destitute, afflicted, tormented]

(See Rom.8:35-37; 1Pet.2:19-21; 3:16,17; Rev.2:10.)

5. The benefits & good fruits of suffering:

A. Suffering causes you to seek His Word:

Deut.8:2,3 That He might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by (the) Word

Psa.94:12 Blessed is the man whom Thou chastenest, O Lord, & teachest him out of Thy law

Psa.119:71 I have been afflicted; that I might learn Thy statutes

B. Suffering refines & purifies you:

Job 23:10 When He hath tried me, I shall come forth as gold

Psa.66:10Thou, O God, hast proved us...tried us, as silver

Isa.48:10I have refined thee...in the furnace of affliction

Zech.13:9And I will...refine them as silver is refined

Heb.12:9-11Chastened...that we be partakers of His holiness

(See also Pro.17:3; Isa.1:25.)

C. It teaches you obedience:

Psa.119:67Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I **kept** Thy Word

Heb.5:8Yet learned He obedience by things which He suffered

(See also 2Cor.7:10a,11)

D. It causes you to bring forth more fruit:

Jn.15:2He (prunes) it, that it may bring forth more fruit

E. It humbles you:

Deut.8:2,16The Lord led thee in the wilderness, to humble thee

2Chr.33:12When he was in affliction, he humbled himself greatly Lam.3:1,17-20 Remembering mine affliction...my soul...is humbled

F. It teaches you patience:

Rom.5:3bTribulation worketh (teaches us) patience

G. It makes you wiser:

Eccl.7:2,3Sorrow is better...the living will lay it to heart

H. It gives you compassion & mercy on others:

2Cor.1:4That we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we are comforted

Heb.2:17[As with Jesus, it teaches you to be **merciful**]

Heb.2:18He Himself hath suffered...He is able to succour them

Heb.4:15 Be touched with the feeling of [others'] infirmities

I. It draws you close to & makes you appreciate loved ones:

2Cor.7:4-7 We were troubled on every side...nevertheless, God... comforted us by the coming of Titus

6. Rewards in Heaven for earthly suffering:

Lk.16:19-25 [Lazarus the beggar rewarded & comforted]

Rom.8:18 Sufferings of present time not worthy to be compared

2Cor.1:7 As ye are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation

2Cor.4:17 Our light affliction...worketh for us a far more exceeding & eternal weight of glory

2Tim.2:12a If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him

Rev.21:4 Shall be no more death...sorrow...crying...pain

7. Remember, Jesus also suffered:

Heb.4:15 [He] was in all points tempted (tested) like as we are

Heb.12:3 Consider Him that endured such contradiction of sinners ...lest ye be wearied & faint in your minds

A. The reasons that Jesus suffered:

Isa.53:3 He hath borne our griefs, & carried our sorrows

Isa.53:4,5 He was wounded for our transgressions...& with His stripes we are healed (See also 1Pet.2:24)

Heb.2:9,10 Captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings

1Pet.3:18 Suffered for sins, that He might bring us to God

(See also Heb.2:17,18; 4:15; 5:7,8.)

B. Follow His example of enduring suffering:

Rom.8:17b If we suffer with Him...be glorified together

Phi.3:10 That I may know the fellowship of His sufferings

1Pet.2:21 Christ suffered for us, leaving us an example

1Pet.4:1 As Christ hath suffered for us, arm yourselves

8. The right attitude toward suffering:

Job 13:15a Though He slay me, yet will I trust in Him

Phi.3:8 I suffered loss of all things, that I may win Christ

A. Endure suffering patiently:

Jer.10:19 Truly this is a grief, & I must bear it

Lam.3:24-26 Lord is my portion...hope & quietly wait in Him

Rom.12:12a Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation

2Tim.4:5 Watch thou in all things, endure afflictions

Heb.12:7 If ye endure...God dealeth with you as with sons

1Pet.4:19 Let them that suffer...commit the keeping of their souls to Him (God) in well doing

B. Pray for strength to endure suffering:

Lk.18:1 Men ought always to pray, & not to faint

Jam.5:13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray

C. We should expect afflictions & trials:

Psa.34:19 Many are the afflictions of the righteous

Acts 14:22 Must through much tribulation enter into the Kingdom

1Thes.3:3,4 No man should be moved by these afflictions: for...we are appointed thereunto

1Pet.4:12 Think it not strange concerning the fiery trial

(See also 1Cor.10:13; 1Pet.5:9.)

D. Stand strong, endure hardness:

Acts 20:23,24 None of these things move me...that I might finish

2Tim.2:3Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier

Heb.11:25-27Choosing rather to suffer affliction...he endured

Jam.5:10,11Take the prophets, for an example of suffering affliction ...we count them happy which endure

E. Be happy despite sufferings:

Jn.16:33bYe shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer

Rom.5:3We glory in tribulations...worketh patience

2Cor.7:4bI am exceeding joyful in all our tribulation

1Pet.4:13,16Rejoice..ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings

F. Don't murmur against God:

Job 1:20-22Job sinned not, nor charged God foolishly (Also 2:9,10)

Psa.17:3I am purposed that my mouth shall not transgress

1Thes.5:18In everything give thanks: for this is the will of God

G. Remain faithful:

Psa.119:143Trouble & anguish...yet Thy commandments my delights

9. Wrong attitudes towards suffering:

Exo.6:9[Despair:] They (Israelites) hearkened not unto Moses for anguish of spirit, & for cruel bondage

Ruth 1:20,21[Complaint:] for Almighty hath dealt very bitterly with me

Job 2:7-9[Bitterness:] Then said (Job's wife), Curse God, & die

Pro.24:10[Giving up:] If thou faint in the day of adversity

Jer.15:18[Questioning:] Wilt Thou be unto me as a liar?

(See also Pro.18:14; Lam.3:39.)

10. God comforts & strengthens us when we suffer:

Exo.3:7I have seen the affliction of My people...heard their cry... I know their sorrows

Mat.5:4Blessed are they that mourn...they shall be comforted

Jn.14:18I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you

Rom.8:26The Spirit helpeth our infirmities

1Pet.5:10But God...after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you

(See also Psa.23:4; 37:24; 145:14.)

11. Deliverance from suffering:

A. The Lord promises to deliver us from our suffering:

Psa.30:5Weeping may endure a night, joy cometh in the morning

Psa.34:19Many are the afflictions...but the Lord delivereth

Psa.103:9-14He will not always chide...He knoweth our frame

Lam.3:31,32Lord will not cast off for ever: though He cause grief

Isa.54:7,8For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but...mercy

(See also Exo.3:7,9,10; Deut.26:6-8; Psa.66:11,12; 94:12-14; 107:11-14; 118:17,18.)

B. Pray for deliverance:

Psa.34:6Lord heard him, & saved him out of all his troubles

Psa.34:17The righteous cry, & the Lord...delivereth them out

Psa.50:15Call upon Me in the day of trouble: I will deliver thee

(See specific examples in Ezra 9:5-15; Isa.38:1-3.)

C. God's conditions:

2Chr.6:27-30[Release from suffering if men repent & seek the Lord]

2Chr.7:13,14If My people...shall humble themselves, & pray, & turn from wicked ways; I will hear...forgive...heal

Job 33:27-29 If any say, I have sinned...He will deliver his soul

Job 36:8-11 If they obey & serve Him, they shall (have) prosperity

Jon.2:1-10 [Jonah praised God in his trouble, & was delivered]

12. Your duty toward the suffering & afflicted:

Job 6:14 To him that is afflicted pity should be showed

Job 16:5 I would strengthen you...assuage your grief

Isa.50:4 Speak a word in season to him that is weary

Lk.10:30-37 [The good Samaritan] Go, & do thou likewise

Rom.12:15b Weep with them that weep

1Cor.12:25,26 Whether one member suffer, all...suffer with it

Gal.6:2 Bear ye one another's burdens

Heb.13:3 Remember them which suffer adversity

Jam.1:27 Visit the fatherless & widows in their affliction

(See also Job 19:21; Mat.25:34-45; 1Tim.5:10.)

13. The suffering of the worldly wicked:

—Or even of backslidden, disobedient Christians:

Deut.28:20 The Lord shall send upon thee cursing...because of the wickedness of thy doings

Deut.28:15-67 If thou wilt not hearken...these curses shall come...

Job 15:20a The wicked man travaileth with pain all his days

Psa.32:10a Many sorrows shall be to the wicked

Isa.42:24,25a Neither were they obedient unto His law. Therefore He hath poured upon him the fury of His anger

Isa.57:20,21 Wicked are like troubled sea...no peace to the wicked

Heb.2:15 Who through fear of death were...subject to bondage

1Jn.4:18Fear hath torment

(See also Job 20:all; Eccl.2:22,23; Lam.3:42-47.)

14. Much of the world's suffering is often self-inflicted:

A. Drug abuse, alcoholism etc.:

1Cor.3:17If any man defile (his body), him shall God destroy

Pro.23:29-35[Alcoholism brings on woe, sorrow, wounds]

(See also Pro.23:21; 31:4,5; Isa.5:11; 28:7.)

B. Overeating:

Num.11:19,20,[Hebrews gluttonously overate quails & as a result, the fattest of them" died—See Psa.78:26-31]

31-34

Phi.3:19aWhose end is destruction, whose God is their belly

(See also Pro.23:1-3,21a)

C. Overdoing physically gets body's resistance down:

Eccl.12:12bMuch study is a weariness of the flesh

Phi.2:27a,30He was (sick) nigh unto death, not regarding his life

D. Suffering because of sexual sins:

Rom.1:27[Sodomites]...receiving in themselves that recompense of their error [disease & infection]

E. Pollution by factories, pesticides, chemicals etc.:

Isa.24:5The earth is defiled under the inhabitants thereof

Jer.2:7Ye defiled My land, & made (it) an abomination

Amos 7:17bThou shalt die in a polluted land

Mic.2:10bBecause it is polluted, it shall destroy you

Zeph.3:1Woe to her that is filthy & polluted, to the oppressing city

Rom.1:30,32aInventors of evil things...worthy of death

Rev.11:18b[God will] destroy them which destroy the earth

(See also Gen.4:8,16,17; Isa.5:8; 14:21 re: unnatural cities & industrialisation)

F. Greed & oppression cause wars, suffering & misery:

Josh.7:1-26[Achan's covetousness caused many Israelites to die]

Pro.15:27He that is greedy of gain troubleth his own house

Nah.3:1Woe to the bloody city! it is full of lies & robbery

1Tim.6:9,10They that will be rich...drown in destruction...sorrows

Jam.4:1,2From whence come wars?...even of your lusts...ye kill

Jam.5:1-6Rich men...ye have condemned & killed the just

(See also Psa.73:3-20; Mic.6:12-15 .)

15. What suffering does for the unsaved or disobedient:

A. Some do not repent despite suffering & affliction:

Isa.1:5Why should ye be stricken any more? Ye will revolt

Isa.42:25Yet he knew not...yet he laid it not to heart

Isa.57:17I smote him...he went on in the way of his heart

Jer.2:30aIn vain have I smitten...they received no correction

Jer.5:3Thou hast stricken them, but they...refused to return

Dan.9:13All this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer

(See also Neh.9:26-29; Isa.9:13; Amos 4:6.)

B. Suffering causes the truly wicked to curse God even more:

2Chr.28:22In time of his distress did he trespass yet more

Pro.29:1He, that being often reprov'd hardeneth his neck, shall suddenly be destroyed, & that without remedy

Isa.8:21 When they shall be hungry, shall curse...their God

Rev.16:9-11 Men scorched with heat, blasphemed God, repented not

(See also Lev.26:23,24)

C. It causes some to repent & seek God:

Deut.31:17 Many evils & troubles shall befall them [to make them realise they've forsaken God]

2Chr.15:4 When they in their trouble...sought Him, He was found

Psa.78:34 When He slew them, then they sought Him: & returned

Isa.26:16 Poured out prayer when Thy chastening was upon them

Jer.2:27b They have turned the back...but in the time of trouble

D. It even turns some unsaved or disobedient to God:

2Chr.33:9-13 [Manasseh's suffering in prison turned him to God]

Job 34:31,32 I have borne chastisement, I will not offend any more

Dan.4:30-37 [King Nebuchadnezzar's abasement & salvation]

Lk.15:16-20 [Suffering caused the prodigal son to repent]

Rev.11:13 Earthquake (killed) 7,000...remnant gave glory to God

(See also Hos.2:6,7)

Comfort

1. The Lord will help & comfort you:

A. His promises of comfort:

Psa.71:21 Thou shalt...comfort me on every side

Psa.86:17 Thou, Lord, hast holpen me, & comforted me

Psa.91:15 I will be **with** him in trouble; I will deliver him

Psa.116:6I was brought low, & He helped me

Psa.138:7aThough I walk in the midst of trouble, Thou wilt revive me

Isa.42:6I the Lord...will hold thine hand, & will keep thee

Isa.43:2When thou passest through waters, I will be **with** thee

Isa.49:13The Lord hath comforted His people, & will have mercy upon His afflicted

Isa.51:12,13I, even I, am He that comforteth you

Isa.66:13As one his mother comforteth, so will I comfort you

Jn.14:18I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you

Jn.14:1-3Let not your heart be troubled: believe...in Me

2Cor.1:3Blessed be God...the Father of mercies, & the God of all comfort

2Cor.7:6God...comforteth those that are cast down

2Thes.2:16,17Our Lord Jesus Christ...which hath loved us, & given us everlasting consolation...comfort your hearts

(See also Psa.103:6; Phi.2:1,2.)

B. The Lord is always with you to comfort you:

Psa.121:4He that keepeth [thee] shall neither slumber nor sleep

2Cor.1:4(He) comforteth us in **all** our tribulation

C. The Holy Spirit, the "Comforter", will comfort you:

Jn.14:26The Comforter...is the Holy Ghost

Jn.15:26The Comforter...Whom I will send unto you from (God)

Jn.14:16,17(God) shall give you a Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever; even the Spirit...shall be **in** you

Acts 9:31Then had the churches rest...in the comfort of the Holy Ghost

2. How to receive God's comfort:

A. Pray & ask for His help:

2Chr.15:4When they in their trouble...sought (God), He was found of them

Psa.34:17The righteous cry, & the Lord heareth, & delivereth them out of all their troubles

Psa.86:7In the day of my trouble I will call upon Thee: for Thou wilt answer me

Psa.119:76Let, I pray, Thy merciful kindness be for my comfort

Psa.145:18,19The Lord is nigh unto all them that call upon Him

Phi.4:6,7By prayer...let your requests be made known unto God. And the peace of God...shall keep your hearts

Heb.4:16Come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, & find grace to help in time of need

B. Examples of King David's prayers seeking comfort:

(See Psa.31:9-12; 38:9; 51:all; 69:1,2; 102:1-7.)

C. Read & meditate on God's Word:

Psa.119:50This is my **comfort** in my affliction: for Thy **Word** hath quickened me

Rom.15:4(Word) written...that we through patience & comfort of the Scriptures might have hope

D. Stay obedient & close to Him:

Jn.8:29The Father hath not left Me alone; for I do always those things that please Him

Psa.103:17,18The mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear Him

E. Continue trusting & have patience:

Gen.28:15[God tells Jacob:] I will not leave thee, until I have done that which I have spoken to thee of

Psa.42:3-11Why art thou cast down, O my soul? **Hope** thou in God: for I shall yet praise Him

Psa.119:81-83I hope in Thy Word. When wilt Thou comfort me? For I am become like a bottle in the smoke

Heb.10:35,36aCast not away...your confidence...ye have need of patience, that, after...ye might receive the promise

F. Remind yourself of God's past miracles & mercies:

Psa.77:1-12 My spirit was over whelmed... **This** is my infirmity: **but** I will **remember** the works of the Lord

Psa.119:52 I remembered Thy judgments of old, O Lord; & have comforted myself

G. Encourage & remind yourself of God's faithfulness:

1Sam.30:6 David was greatly distressed...but David encouraged himself in the Lord his God

H. Remember, God will never forsake you...

Isa.49:14,15,16 [They] said, The Lord hath forsaken me, & forgotten me. Yet will I **not** forget thee

Psa.31:22 I said in my haste, I am cut off from before Thine eyes: [but] Thou heardest...when I cried unto Thee

Psa.9:9,10 They that know Thy name will put their trust in Thee: for Thou hast not forsaken them that seek Thee

Mat.28:20 b I am with you always, even unto the end of the world

2Tim.2:13 [Even] if we believe not, yet He abideth faithful

Heb.13:5 I will **never** leave thee, nor forsake thee

(See also Isa.54:10)

I. ...Unless you grievously rebel & forsake Him:

2Chr.15:2 The Lord is with you, while ye be with Him...but if **ye** forsake **Him**, **He** will forsake **you** (1Chr.28:9)

J. Even then, He will not permanently forsake you:

Isa.54:7,8 For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee

K. Trust & completely commit yourself into His hands:

Rom.8:28 All things work...for good to them that love God

1Pet.4:19 Let them that suffer...commit the keeping of their souls to Him...as unto a faithful Creator

L. He will keep you:

2Tim.1:12b(I) am persuaded that He is able to **keep** that which I have committed unto Him

Psa.23:4Thy rod & Thy staff they comfort [& protect] me

Psa.37:5Commit thy way unto the Lord; trust also in Him

Psa.55:22Cast thy burden upon the Lord, & He shall sustain thee

Psa.138:8The Lord will perfect that which concerneth me

Phi.1:6He which hath begun a good work in you will perform (complete) it until the day of Jesus Christ

1Thes.5:24Faithful is He that calleth you, Who...will do it

1Pet.5:7Casting all your care on Him; for He careth for you

3. God loves you & cares for you:

A. He knows every tear you've shed:

2Ki.20:5I have heard thy prayer, I have seen thy tears

Psa.56:8Put my tears in Thy bottle: are they not in Thy book? (See also Mk.9:24)

B. He knows exactly what you're experiencing:

Exo.3:7I have seen the affliction of My people...& have heard their cry...I know their sorrows

Psa.103:13,14The Lord pitieth (us)...for He knoweth our frame

Isa.53:4He hath borne our griefs, & carried our sorrows

Isa.63:9In all their affliction He was afflicted

Heb.4:15Touched with the feeling of our infirmities...(He) was in all points tempted like as we are

C. Though He chastises us, He loves & comforts:

Psa.30:5His anger endureth but a moment...weeping may endure for a night, but joy cometh in the morning

Psa.71:20Thou, which hast showed me great & sore troubles, shalt quicken (make alive) me again

Psa.103:9He will not always chide; neither...keep His anger forever

Isa.12:1 Though Thou wast angry with me, Thine anger is turned away, & Thou comfortedst me

Lam.3:31-33 Though He cause grief, yet will He have compassion

(See also Hos.6:1-3)

4. God's loving hands uphold you:

A. His hands are always there, supporting you:

Deut.33:27 Underneath are the everlasting arms

Psa.145:14 The Lord upholdeth all that fall, & raiseth up all those that be bowed down

Psa.37:17 The Lord upholdeth the righteous

Psa.37:24 Though he fall, he shall not be utterly cast down: for the Lord upholdeth him with His hand

Isa.41:10 I am with thee: be not dismayed; I will uphold thee with (My) right hand

Isa.63:9 In His love & pity He...bare them, & carried them

B. ...Even in distant lands & lonesome situations:

Psa.139:8b If I make my bed in **hell**, behold, Thou art **there**

Psa.139:9-12 If I...dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; even there shall Thy hand...hold me

Mat.28:20b I am with you always, even unto the end of the world

5. If you feel you're in the dark, trust in God for light:

Isa.50:10 Who is among you...that walketh in darkness, & hath no light? let him trust in the Lord

Isa.42:16 I will make darkness light before them, &...not forsake them

Psa.18:28 The Lord my God will enlighten my darkness

Psa.112:4 Unto the upright there ariseth light in the darkness: He is gracious, & full of compassion

Mic.7:8b When I sit in darkness, Lord shall be a light unto me

(See also Isa.58:10,11)

6. Look on the bright side:

A. You're blessed, so be joyful & happy:

Mat.5:10-12 Blessed are ye, when men shall revile & persecute you. Rejoice & be exceeding glad

Jn.16:33 In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world

2Cor.7:4b I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in all our tribulation

Phi.4:4 Rejoice in the Lord alway: & again I say, Rejoice

1Pet.4:12,13 Rejoice...ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings

B. Happy days will come again:

Isa.51:11,12a The redeemed of the Lord shall...obtain gladness & joy; & sorrow & mourning shall flee away

1Thes.4:15-18 [Jesus will soon come to take us to Heaven] Comfort one another with these words (See also 5:10,11)

(See also Isa.40:2; 52:9; 57:16-18; Jer.31:12-14; Zech.1:12-17.)

C. Sorrow will soon be gone:

Job 11:16 Thou shalt forget thy misery, & remember it as waters that pass away

Psa.30:5 Weeping may endure a night, but joy cometh in morning

Psa.30:11 Thou put off my sackcloth, & girded me with gladness

Isa.49:13 Sing...be joyful...break forth into singing: for the Lord hath comforted His people...His afflicted

Isa.54:11 O thou afflicted...& not comforted, behold, I will lay thy stones with fair colours

D. Think about & be thankful for His comforts:

Psa.94:19 In the multitude of my thoughts within me Thy comforts delight my soul

E. We are blessed; most unsaved people have no comforter:

Eccl.4:1 Behold the tears of such as were oppressed, & they had no comforter

7. Why & how to comfort one another:

A. Sometimes you need the help of others:

Jer.8:18When I would comfort **myself**...my heart is faint

2Cor.2:7Ye ought...to comfort him, lest (he) be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow

(See also Eccl.4:9,10,12)

B. We should comfort one another:

Gen.37:34,35aAnd **all** his (Jacob's) sons & daughters rose up to comfort him (See also 1Chr.7:22; Job 2:11.)

Isa.40:1Comfort ye, comfort ye My people, saith your God

Isa.61:1,2The Spirit of the Lord is upon me...He hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted...comfort all that mourn

Isa.61:3Give unto them beauty for ashes, oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for spirit of heaviness

1Cor.12:25In the body...the members should have the same **care** one for another

2Cor.2:8I beseech you that ye confirm your love toward him

2Cor.7:6God...comforted us by the coming of Titus [a fellowlabourer] (See also Eph.6:22; Col.4:7,8; 1Thes.3:2.)

2Cor.7:13We were comforted...(Titus') spirit was refreshed by you

Gal.6:2Bear ye one another's burdens, & so fulfill the law of Christ

Col.2:2Hearts...comforted, being knit together in love

Col.4:11My fellow-workers...which have been a comfort unto me

1Thes.5:11Comfort yourselves together, & edify one another

1Thes.5:14Comfort the feebleminded (fainthearted, timid)

C. How to comfort others:

Gen.50:21b(Joseph) comforted them, & spake **kindly** unto them

Ruth 2:13Thou hast comforted me...thou hast spoken (kindly)

Pro.17:22aA merry heart doeth good like a medicine

Pro.27:9Ointment & perfume rejoice the heart: so doth the sweetness of a man's friend by hearty counsel

1Thes.2:11We...comforted...you, as a father doth his children

Rom.12:15bWeep with them that weep

D. Use your own experiences to comfort them:

2Cor.1:4That we may be able to comfort (others) in trouble, by the comfort wherewith we are comforted of God

Psa.66:12,16I will declare what He hath done for my soul

E. The comforting, consoling power of inspired music:

Psa.32:7Thou shalt compass me about with songs of deliverance

Psa.42:5-8My soul is cast down within me...yet...in the night His song shall be with me

1Sam.16:14-16An evil spirit...troubleth thee. [A musician] shall play... & thou shalt be well (See also vs.23)

Pro.25:20[Caution: Make sure you sing **fitting** songs]

F. Encouraging words of prophecy are a comfort:

1Cor.14:3He that prophesieth speaketh unto men to...comfort

G. When words fail, just being there is a help:

Job 2:13They sat down with him...& none spake a word unto him: for they saw that his grief was very great

Col.2:2Hearts...comforted, being knit together in love

H. Make sure you are comforting, not condemning:

Job 16:2-5Miserable comforters are ye all. [Job said if they were in his place, he would have comforted them]

8. When abandoned, suffering heartbreak or loss:

A. Even when all others leave you, you'll always have the Lord:

2Tim.4:16,17All men forsook me...notwithstanding the **Lord** stood with me, & strengthened me

Psa.27:10When father & mother forsake me, Lord will take me up

Psa.34:22None of them that trust in Him shall be desolate

Psa.142:4,5Refuge failed me; No man cared for my soul. **Thou** art my refuge & my portion in the land of the living

Isa.54:1,5,6The **Lord** hath called thee as a woman forsaken & grieved in spirit...when thou wast refused

Isa.54:10The mountains shall depart...but My kindness shall not depart from thee

Heb.13:5He hath said, **I** will never leave thee nor forsake thee

B. His special care for the brokenhearted:

Psa.34:18The Lord is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart

Psa.51:17A broken & a contrite heart...Thou wilt not despise

Psa.61:2When my heart is overwhelmed: lead me to the rock that is higher than I

Psa.147:3He healeth the broken in heart, & bindeth up their wounds

Ezk.34:16I...will bind up that which was broken

Isa.61:1He hath sent Me (Jesus) to bind up the brokenhearted

Lk.4:18He hath sent Me (Jesus) to heal the brokenhearted

(See also Isa.57:15)

C. When suffering bereavement over the loss of a loved one:

2Sam.12:15-23[When David's sick child died, he stopped fasting & weeping, saying:] I shall go to him [in Heaven]

1Cor.15:17-21[Jesus is raised from the dead, therefore our loved ones also live, & we are not to be miserable]

1Thes.4:13Concerning them which are asleep (departed)...sorrow not, as others which have no hope

1Thes.4:14-18The dead in Christ shall rise...we shall be...**with** them... comfort one another with these words

D. It is much better for them to be with the Lord:

2Cor.5:8We are...willing rather to be absent from the body, & to be present with the Lord

Phi.1:23Desire to depart...to be with Christ...is **far** better

Rev.7:16,17[The happiness of our departed loved ones in Heaven]

E. When suffering remorse over mistakes or sins:

(See Psa.31:9-24; 38:1-22; 51:all; Lam.1:20a; Lk.18:13,14; 2Cor.2:6-8. Also compare Mat.26:69-75 & Mk.16:6,7.)

9. Heavenly consolation for present suffering & sorrow:

A. Comforted by Heavenly rewards:

Psa.37:9Those that wait on the Lord, shall inherit the earth

Mat.5:4Blessed are they that mourn...they shall be comforted

Lk.6:21Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh

Lk.12:32Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the Kingdom (See also Mat.25:34)

Lk.16:19-22a[The suffering beggar Lazarus] carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom

Jn.16:20Ye shall weep & lament...& ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy

Rom.8:18The sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory (Heavenly reward)

2Cor.4:17Our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us...(an) eternal weight of glory

2Cor.1:7As ye are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation

2Tim.2:12If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him

B. There will be no more sorrow or tears in Heaven:

Isa.25:8He will swallow up death in victory; & the Lord God will wipe away tears from off all faces

Rev.21:4God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; & there shall be no more...sorrow, nor crying (See also 7:17)

Healing

1. Healing was part of Jesus' ministry:

Mat.4:23,24 Jesus went...healing all manner of sickness & disease

Mat.9:35 Healing every sickness & disease among the people

Mat.12:15b Great multitudes followed Him & He healed them all

(See also Mat.15:30; 21:14; Acts 10:38.)

2. Healing promises are still valid "today":

Heb.13:8 Jesus Christ the same, yesterday & today & forever

Mal.3:6 I am the Lord, I change not

Mk.16:17a-18b These signs shall follow them that believe: Lay hands on the sick & they shall recover

Jn.14:12-14 He that believeth on Me, the works I do shall he do

1Cor.12:7,9b To another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit

Jam.5:14,15 Is any sick among you? Call elders...let them pray

3. It is God's will to heal:

A. Scriptural authority for asking for healing:

Exo.15:26b I am the Lord that healeth thee

Deut.7:15 The Lord will take away from thee all sickness

Psa.84:11b No good thing will He withhold from them

Psa.103:3 (He) forgiveth all iniquities, healeth all thy diseases

Psa.107:20 He sent His Word, & healed them

Jer.30:17a For I "will" restore health unto thee, & "will" heal

Mal.4:2a Sun of righteousness arise with "healing" in His wings

Mat.10:1 He gave them power...to heal all manner of sickness &... disease

Mk.1:40,41 Lord, if Thou wilt...Jesus saith, I "will"; be thou clean

Acts 9:34a Jesus Christ maketh thee whole

Jam.5:15 Prayer of faith save sick...& the Lord shall raise him up

(See also Ezk.34:16a; 3Jn.2.)

B. God prefers not to afflict you; He'd rather heal:

Lam.3:33 He doth not afflict "willingly"...the children of men

Psa.22:24 He hath not despised...affliction of the afflicted; neither hath He hid His face from him

Heb.12:13b Let it rather be healed

C. Jesus' physical suffering paid for our healing:

Isa.53:5 He was wounded...with His stripes we are healed

Mat.8:16,17 Himself took our infirmities & bare our sicknesses

1Cor.11:23,24 This is My body, which is broken for you

1Cor.11:29,30 Not discerning Lord's body...many are weak & sickly

1Pet.2:24 By Whose stripes ye were healed

4. Nothing is too serious for God to heal:

Jer.32:27 I am the Lord...is there anything too hard for Me?

Jer.32:17 Ah Lord God! There is "nothing" too hard for Thee

Psa.34:19 The Lord delivereth him out of them "all" (afflictions)

Psa.103:3 Who healeth "all" thy diseases

Mat.10:1 Power to...heal "all" manner of sickness, & "all" disease

Mat.19:26 With God all things are possible

Mk.9:23 All things are possible to him that believeth

Lk.1:37 With God, nothing shall be impossible

Lk.5:17bThe power of the Lord was present to heal them

5. Conditions for healing:

2Ki.20:5bI have...seen thy tears, behold, I will heal thee

2Chr.7:14If My people humble themselves, & pray & turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear & heal

Isa.19:22They shall return to the Lord...& He shall heal them

Isa.58:6-8a[Help others:] Then thine health...spring forth speedily

Hos.6:1Come, let us "return" ...& He will heal us

Jam.5:16a"Confess" your faults...& pray one for another, that ye may be healed

6. Practical steps in obtaining healing:

A. Begin with a clean heart; unconfessed sin in your life will hinder faith:

Psa.66:18,19If I regard iniquity in my heart, Lord will not hear

Pro.28:13He that covereth his sins shall not prosper

Jam.5:16Confess your faults one to another, & pray one for another

1Jn.3:21"If" our heart condemn us "not", then have we (faith)

(See also 2Chr.7:14; Psa.51:10; 139:23; 1Jn.1:8,9 .)

B. Prepare by memorising promises; find authority in God's Word & faith will come of itself:

Rom.10:17Faith cometh by hearing the Word of God

Josh.23:14bNot one thing hath failed of all that...God spake

1Ki.8:56bHath not failed one word of all His good promise

Pro.7:2-3Write (My commandments) upon table of thine heart

Mat.24:35Heaven & earth shall pass away, but (not) My Words

2Cor.1:20All the promises of God in Him are yea &...Amen

2Pet.1:4Great & precious promises: by these ye might partake

C. Be definite:

Isa.45:11 Concerning the work of My hands, command ye Me

Jam.1:6-8 Ask in faith, nothing wavering

D. "Expect" from God; know you are entitled to His promises:

Mk.11:23 Whoever...shall believe...shall have whatsoever he saith

Mk.11:24 "When" ye pray, "believe" that ye receive & ye shall have

Heb.4:16 Come boldly...& find grace to help in time of need

Heb.11:6 He that cometh to God must believe...He is a rewarder

E. Accept from God; there comes a time to cease praying:

Josh.7:10 Get thee up; wherefore liest thou thus upon thy face?

Lk.1:38 Mary said, "Be it unto me according to thy Word"

F. Stand your ground in faith & trust:

Num.23:19 God is not a man, that He should lie. Hath he said, & shall He not do it?

Psa.112:7 Not be afraid of evil tidings...trusting in the Lord

Acts 27:25 I believe God, that it shall be even as was told me

Rom.3:4 Let God be true, but every man a liar

Rom.4:19-21 Being "fully" persuaded that what He had promised

Gal.6:9 In due season we shall reap, if we faint not

Eph.4:27 Neither give place to the devil [his doubts & lies]

Eph.6:13 Withstand...& having done all, "stand"

Eph.6:16 Taking the shield of faith...to quench fiery darts

Heb.10:23 Hold fast...(your) faith without wavering; He is faithful that promised

Heb.10:35,36 Ye have need of "patience", that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise

1Pet.1:7The trial of your faith...more precious than gold (See also Pro.24:10; Jon.2:8.)

G. Real faith puts into action what it believes:

2Ki.5:1,9-14[Naaman obeyed Elisha, dipped in the Jordan, & was healed]

2Chr.20:21,22[When they went forth singing & praising God for the victory, He performed the miracle]

Mat.14:28,29[Peter believed Jesus & stepped out on the water]

Mk.2:11,12Take up thy bed, & go...& immediately he arose

Mk.3:1,5b[A man stretches out his withered hand & is healed]

Lk.17:14As they "went", they were cleansed (healed)

Jn.4:47-53Believed the word Jesus had spoken...& went his way

2Cor.5:7For we walk by faith, not by sight

Jam.2:17-26 As body without spirit...faith without works is dead

H. Thank Him for hearing & answering your prayer:

Rom.4:20He was strong in faith, giving "glory" to God

7. Praying for the sick:

A. Pray for healing in "Jesus" name:

(See Jn.14:13,14; Acts 3:6; 4:10; 9:34a.)

B. Importance of laying hands on & touching the sick:

Mk.16:18bThey shall lay hands on the sick & they shall recover

Lk.4:40He laid His hands on every one of them, & healed them

(See also Mat.9:29; Mk.3:10; 5:28; 6:56; 7:33-35; Lk.5:13; 6:19; 22:51b.)

C. Anointing with oil for healing:

(See Mk.6:13; Jam.5:14.)

D. The power of united, group prayer:

Mat.18:19,20 If two of you shall agree [in prayer]...it shall be done

Deut.32:30 One (shall) chase a thousand, & two put ten thousand to flight

E. Who should pray for the sick:

Lk.8:50,51 [Have the unbelieving leave the room before you pray]

Jam.5:14-16 Call for the elders...& let them pray over him. The fervent...prayer of a righteous man availeth much

8. Fight in the Spirit for your healing:

Mat.17:19-21 [Unusual, stubborn sicknesses require extra faith & prayer & fasting]

1Tim.6:12 Fight good fight of faith, "lay hold" on eternal life

A. Sing & praise the Lord:

(See Psa.34:1; 51:15; 66:17; 77:2,10,11; 109:30.)

B. Quote Scripture like Jesus did:

Mat.4:3-10 He answered and said, "It is "written"..."

Eph.6:17 Take...the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God

9. Reasons that God allows afflictions & illnesses:

A. To keep us righteous & close to Him:

Psa.34:19 Many are the afflictions of the "righteous"

Psa.119:71 It is good for me that I have been afflicted

2Cor.12:7 Lest I should be exalted...given a thorn in the flesh

Heb.12:6,11 Whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth, & scourgeth

Rev.3:19 As many as I love, I rebuke & chasten

B. To glorify God when He heals you:

Mat.15:31 The multitude wondered...& they glorified God

Jn.9:1-3 [The blind man's healing was to glorify God]

Acts 9:36-42 It was known throughout all Joppa; & many believed

C. Sickness is often caused by sin:

Psa.38:2-5 My wounds stink & are corrupt...because of my sin...because of my foolishness

Psa.107:17 Fools, because of their...iniquities, are afflicted

Psa.119:67 Before I was afflicted, I went astray: but now

Pro.26:2 The curse causeless shall not come

(See also Num.12:1-15; 1Sam.5:1-12; 25:2-11,37,38; 2Chr.21:9-19; 26:16-21; Acts 12:21-23.)

D. Some sickness is an attack of the devil:

Mat.9:32,33a When the devil was cast out, the dumb spake

Mk.9:17-20,25 [Jesus rebuked an unclean spirit, healing a child]

Lk.13:11,13,16 This woman...whom Satan hath bound 18 years

Acts 10:38 Healing all that were oppressed of the devil

E. To teach & to test us:

Job 2:3-7 [The devil was allowed to afflict Job to "test" him]

Job 5:17,18 Behold, happy is man whom God correcteth

Psa.94:12 Blessed is the man whom Thou chastenest & teachest

2Cor.4:17 [Our temporary afflictions teach us eternal lessons]

F. Emotional or physiological causes:

Psa.147:3 He healeth the broken in heart, bindeth their wounds

Pro.11:17b He that is cruel troubleth his own flesh

Pro.14:30 Envy (is) the rottenness of the bones

Pro.15:13 By sorrow of the heart the spirit is broken

Pro.17:22b A broken spirit drieth the bones

Pro.18:14A wounded spirit who can bear?

G. God will show you the reason if you ask Him:

1Sam.6:3bThen ye shall be healed, & it shall be known to you why His hand is not removed from you

Job 36:9-11Then He sheweth them their...transgressions

Phi.3:15bGod shall reveal even this unto you

H. How to keep from getting sick:

Exo.15:26If thou wilt diligently "hearken"...I will put none of these diseases upon thee

Psa.91:9,10Because thou hast made the Lord thy...habitation

Pro.4:20,22Attend to My Words...they are health to [your] flesh

I. Physical reasons for sickness:

Exo.8:24bThe land was "corrupted" by the swarm of flies

Lev.11:4-12[Eating unclean meats, seafood, etc.]

Pro.23:29-35[Too much wine or alcohol]

Pro.25:16,27a[Overindulgence in sweets:] Not good to eat much honey

Pro.23:3Be not desirous of dainties: they are deceitful meat

Mk.7:3,4[Lack of cleanliness: Jews washed often, lived long]

Rom.1:24-27[Unclean or perverted sex]

Phi.2:27,30[Overdoing physically:] Sick...not regarding his life

10. Points to remember after prayer:

A. Reasons why we're sometimes not "immediately" healed:

Isa.59:1,2The Lord's hand is not shortened, but your sins have separated you

Hos.5:15I will return to My place, till they acknowledge their offence

2Cor.12:7-9[Paul prayed 3 times to be healed, but the Lord left him with a thorn in the flesh to keep him humble]

Heb.10:36After ye have done the will of God ye (shall) receive the promise

Jam.1:3The trying of your faith worketh patience

1Pet.1:7Trial of your faith (is) much more precious than gold

B. Testify publicly about your healing:

Job 36:24Remember that thou magnify His work, which men behold

Psa.107:2Let the redeemed of the Lord say so

Mk.5:19bGo home to thy friends & "tell" them how great things the Lord hath done for thee

Acts 4:10Be it known unto you all, that by the name of Jesus

(See also Psa.22:22,25; 35:18; 107:31,32.)

C. Obey God once healed, or your sickness may return:

Jn.5:14Thou art made whole, sin no more, lest a worse thing

Psa.85:8But let them not turn again to folly

11. Miraculous or natural healing?

A. God's healing vs. doctors & medicines:

2Chr.16:12,13Asa was diseased in his feet...he sought not to the Lord, but to the physicians. And Asa died

Psa.118:8Better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in man

Jer.46:11In vain shalt thou use many medicines...not be cured

Mk.5:25-26Suffered many things of many physicians...grew worse

(See also Hos.5:13)

B. Sometimes doctors & medicines can help:

Pro.17:22aA merry heart doeth "good" like a "medicine"

Lk.10:34He bound up his wounds...pouring in oil & wine

C. God-ordained natural remedies:

2Ki.20:1-7Take a lump of figs...lay it on the boil (Also Isa.38:21)

Jer.51:8bTake balm for her pain, if so be she may be healed

Ezk.47:12bAnd the leaf thereof (shall be) for medicine

1Tim.5:23Use a little wine for stomach's sake & oft infirmities

D. Eat wholesome, nourishing food:

Psa.103:5(The Lord) satisfieth thy mouth with "good" things; so that thy youth is renewed like the eagle's

12. No sickness in Heaven:

(See Isa.33:24; Rev.21:4 .)

A. Our immortal resurrected bodies will never be sick:

1Cor. 15:42, 43So is the resurrection...It is sown in corruption, raised in incorruption: sown in weakness...raised in power

Overcoming the Devil

"We are not ignorant of his devices." (2Cor.2:11)

1. Where did the devil come from?

A. God created the devil:

Pro.16:4The Lord hath made **all** things...even the **wicked**

Isa.45:7I form the light, & darkness...& create evil: I the **Lord** do all these things

Ezk.28:14,15Anointed cherub...from the day thou wast **created**

Jn.1:3**All** things were made by Him (Jesus)

Col.1:16By Him (Jesus) were **all** things created

B. The devil's fall through pride:

Isa.14:12-15Thou hast said...I will be like the most High

Ezk.28:13-17Thine heart wast lifted up because of thy beauty

1Tim.3:6Lest being lifted up with **pride** he fall into the (same) condemnation of (judgement as) the devil

2. The devil is under God's control & restrictions:

A. Satan could only afflict Job as God permitted:

Job 1:6-12All he hath is in thy power; only on **him** put **not**...hand

Job 2:1-7He is in thine hand; but save his life

B. God rules over the entire world:

Dan.4:17The most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, & giveth it to whomsoever He will

Dan.4:34,35He doeth according to His will...& **none** can stay His hand, or say unto Him, What doest Thou?

Psa.24:1The earth is the **Lord's** (See also Acts 17:24)

Psa.89:11The heavens are Thine, the earth also is Thine

Job 41:11Whatsoever is under the whole heaven is Mine

C. But, within limitations, He allows the devil to rule it:

Jer.27:5I (God) have made the earth...& have given it to whom it seemed meet (appropriate) unto Me

Lk.4:5,6All the kingdoms of the world...all this power & the glory of them...is delivered unto me (Satan)

Jn.12:31The prince of this world (See also Jn.14:30; 16:11.)

2Cor.4:4The god of this world

Eph.2:2Prince of the power of the air

D. The devil rules over the fallen angels:

(See Mat.12:24; Lk.11:15; Rev.12:3,4,7-9.)

3. Victory over the devil:

A. God's power is much greater than the devil's:

1Jn.4:4 Greater is He (**Jesus**) that is in **you** than he (the devil) that is in the world

Lk.10:17 The devils are **subject** unto us through Thy name

Lk.10:19 I give unto you power..over **all** the power of the enemy: & **nothing** shall...hurt you

Phi.2:9-11 At the name of Jesus **every** knee should bow

Jam.2:19 Thou believest that there is one God; the devils also believe, & **tremble**

(See also Zech.3:2; Jude 9.)

B. Jesus defeated the devil:

1Jn.3:8 The Son of God was manifested, that He might **destroy** the works of the devil

Heb.2:14 Through death He (destroyed) him that had the power of death, that is, the devil

Col.2:15 Spoiling principalities & powers...triumphing over them

Lk.10:18 I saw Satan fall as lightning from Heaven

C. Jesus' power to exorcise (cast out) demons:

Mat.8:16 He cast out the (devils) with His Word

Mat.9:32,33 When the devil was cast out, the dumb spake

Mat.12:22 One possessed with a devil...& (Jesus) healed him

Mat.12:28 I cast out devils by the Spirit of God

Mk.1:34,39 He cast out many devils; & suffered not (did not allow) the devils to speak

Lk.4:33-36 With **authority** & **power** He commandeth unclean spirits

Lk.9:42 Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, & healed the child

Lk.8:27-33 [Jesus rebuked Legion; the devils went into the herd of swine] (See also Mk.5:1-15)

Acts 10:38 Jesus... (healed) all that were oppressed of the devil

(See also Mk. 1:23-17; 7:25-30; 9:17-27.)

D. Jesus gave His disciples power over the devil:

Mat. 10:1 He gave them (His disciples) power against unclean spirits, to cast them out

Lk. 9:1 He... gave them power & authority over **all** devils

Acts 5:16 There came [to the disciples] them which were vexed with unclean spirits: & they were healed every one

Rom. 16:20 The God of peace shall bruise Satan under **your** feet

(See also Acts 8:6,7; 19:11,12; 26:17,18.)

E. Jesus gives all believers power over the devil—including you:

Mk. 16:17 These signs shall follow **them** that **believe**; In My name shall they cast out devils

Lk. 9:49,50 We saw one casting out devils in Thy name [It wasn't only the apostles who had this power]

Jn. 14:12 He that believeth on Me, the works I do shall he do also

1Jn. 2:14b The Word of God abideth in you & ye **have** overcome the wicked one

4. The spiritual warfare:

A. Our war against the devil:

2Cor. 10:3-5 The weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but **mighty** through God

Eph. 6:10,11 Be strong... put on armour... stand against the devil

Eph. 6:12,13 We wrestle... against the rulers of darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness... withstand

(See also 1Sam. 16:23; Rev. 12:7,17.)

B. Be on guard against & resist & defy the devil:

1Pet. 5:8 Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walketh about, seeking whom he may devour

1Pet.5:9Resist (the devil) stedfast in the faith

Eph.4:27Neither give place to the devil

Mat.4:10Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him only

Mk.8:33Get thee behind [away from] me, Satan

C. Promises to claim when fighting & overcoming the devil:

Isa.59:19bWhen the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him

Mat.16:19Whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound

Lk.10:19I give unto you power...over all the power of enemy

Rom.16:20The God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet

Jam.4:7**Resist** the devil, & he will **flee** from you

1Jn.2:14Ye are strong, & the Word of God abideth in you, & ye have overcome the wicked one

1Jn.4:4Greater is He (Jesus) that is in you, than he (the devil) that is in the world

D. Be prepared for battle when confronting the devil:

Mat.12:29How can one enter into a strong man's house...except he first **bind** the strong man?

Mk.9:29This kind can come forth (only) by **prayer & fasting**

Acts 19:13-17[Seven sons of Sceva attempted exorcism without being full of Jesus themselves, & met disastrous results]

E. United prayer for deliverance of the oppressed:

Mat.18:19,20If **two** of you shall agree...ask, it shall be done

Eccl.4:9-12Two are better than one

F. They must get filled up with Jesus & Word once they're delivered; or they may end up worse than they were at first:

Lk.11:24-26Unclean spirit, gone out of a man [returns to him, finds him empty, & re-enters with 7 other spirits]

(See also Mat.12:43-45a)

5. The devil's devices:

A. Don't be ignorant of the devil's devices:

Gen.3:1aThe serpent was more **subtil** than any beast

2Cor.2:11Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices

Eph.6:11Stand against the **wiles** of the devil

B. The devil is a liar & deceiver:

Gen.3:1b[Creates doubt of Word:] Yea, **hath** God said?

Jn.8:44bFor he is a **liar**, and the father of it

Acts 5:1-4Satan filled...heart to **lie** to the Holy Ghost

2Cor.11:3As serpent beguiled Eve...so your minds be corrupted

2Cor.11:13,14Satan...transformed into an angel of light (See also 2Thes.2:9-11)

1Jn.4:1,3Beloved, believe not every spirit (See also 1Tim.4:1.)

Rev.12:9The devil, Satan, which deceiveth the whole world

C. The devil tries to turn men from salvation:

Mk.4:15When they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, & taketh away the Word (See Mat.13:19; Lk.8:12.)

Acts 13:8,10Elymas...child of the devil (sought) to turn away the deputy from the faith

2Cor.4:4The (devil) hath blinded the minds of (unbelievers) lest light of the gospel...should shine unto them

D. "The hinderer":

Zech.3:1Satan standing at his right hand to resist him

1Thes.2:18We would have come...but Satan hindered us

E. Specific "devices" to be on guard against:

Mat.16:21-23[Leads men to contradict & doubt truth. Ex. of Peter]

Jn.13:2Devil, having put into the heart of Judas...to betray

Acts 13:10Child of devil...not (ceasing) to pervert right ways

1Cor.14:33For God is not the author of confusion

Col.1:13Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness

2Tim.1:7For God hath not given us the spirit of fear

1Jn.3:10[Hatred:] Children of devil...loveth not his brother

6. Accuser & tempter:

A. Satan tempts men to sin:

(See Gen.3:1-6; 1Chr.21:1-3,7,8; Mat.4:3-9; 1Cor.7:5; Lk.4:1-13)

B. The devil is the accuser, like a prosecuting attorney:

Rev.12:10The **accuser** of our brethren...which accused them before our God day & night

Job 1:6The sons of God came....before the Lord, & Satan came also [Note: "Satan" **means** "accuser"]

C. Jesus is our advocate, like a defense attorney:

1Jn.2:1If any man sin, we have an **advocate** with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous

Rom.8:34Who is he that condemneth? Christ...at the right hand of God, maketh intercession for us

Heb.9:24Christ is...entered...into Heaven, to appear in the presence of God for us (See also 1Tim.2:5)

7. The devil is a destroyer:

A. He causes bondage, snares & oppression:

(See Lk.8:29b; Acts 10:38; Rom.8:15; 1Tim.3:7; 2Tim.2:26 .)

B. Disease:

(See Job 2:7; Lk.13:11,12,16; 2Cor.12:7 .)

C. And destruction:

(See Jn.8:44a; Heb.2:14; 1Pet.5:8,9 .)

D. God sometimes uses the devil to punish the disobedient:

(See 1Sam.16:14; 1Cor.5:5; 1Tim.1:20.)

E. Satan seeks to subvert the saints:

Job 1:8-11 Doth Job fear God for nought? Put forth Thine hand

Job 2:3-5 Put forth Thine hand...& he will curse Thee

Lk.22:31 Satan hath desired to...sift thee as wheat

8. Judgment of the devil & his demons, & final end:

A. Some are bound, awaiting judgement:

2Pet.2:4 Angels that sinned...into chains of darkness

Jude 6 Reserved in everlasting chains unto judgment

B. Apparently most are still loose, their time not yet come:

Mat.8:28,29 Art Thou come hither to torment us **before** the time?

C. Devil not yet cast out of Heaven; has access to throne:

Job 1:6; 2:1 Sons of God...before God, & Satan among them

Rev.12:10 Which accused them before God day & night

Rev.12:7-9, 13,14 [The devil completely cast out of Heaven at the beginning of the last 3-1/2 years, in the time of the end]

D. Devil will be bound 1,000 years in God's prison:

Rev.20:1-3,7, 10 [Satan bound 1,000 years, afterward released for a short time before being thrown into lake of fire]

E. Devil & his demons finally thrown into lake of fire:

Mat.25:41 Everlasting fire prepared for devil & his angels

Rev.20:10The devil was cast into the lake of fire & brimstone

9. Your armour & weaponry to defeat the devil:

A. Your spiritual armour:

Eph.6:11,13Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil

Rom.13:12Let us cast off the works of darkness, & let us put on the armour of light

2Cor.6:7The armour of righteousness on the right hand & on the left

B. Your mighty shield:

Eph.6:16Take the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench **all** the fiery darts of the wicked

Psa.91:4His truth shall be thy shield & buckler

Psa.3:3Thou, O Lord, art a shield for me (See also Psa.28:7; 33:20; 115:9; 144:2; Pro.30:5.)

C. Your invincible sword of the Spirit:

Eph.6:17Take...the sword of the Spirit...the Word of God

Heb.4:12The Word of God is...quick (**alive**) & **powerful**, & sharper than **any** two-edged sword

D. Your breastplate:

Eph.6:14Stand...having on the breastplate of righteousness (See also Isa.59:17)

1Thes.5:8Let us...put on the breastplate of faith & love

E. Your impenetrable helmet:

Eph.6:17Take the helmet of salvation

1Thes.5:8Let us...put on for an helmet, the hope of salvation

10. Power, freedom & deliverance from the devil's darkness:

A. God gives us overcoming power:

Lk.10:19I give you **power** over all the power of the enemy

Eph.3:16That He would grant you...to be strengthened with **might** by His Spirit in the inner man

2Tim.1:7God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of **power**, & of love, & of a sound mind

B. Freedom from the devil's snares & bondage:

Psa.91:3He shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler

Psa.124:7Our soul is escaped as a bird out of the snare of the fowlers: the snare is broken, & we are escaped

Pro.14:27Fear of the Lord [helps] depart from snares of death

2Cor.3:17Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty

2Tim.2:25,26Acknowledging of the truth...that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil

C. Delivered into God's glorious Kingdom of light:

Acts 26:18Open their eyes...turn them from darkness to light, from the power of Satan unto God

Col.1:12,13Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness... partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light

D. The devil cannot separate us from God:

Rom.8:38,39Neither angels, nor powers...nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from...Christ Jesus

1Pet.1:5Who are kept by the power of God...unto salvation

11. Our astonishing angelic allies, the hosts of Heaven:

A. They outnumber the devil's forces two to one:

2Ki.6:16,17They that be with **us** are **more** than they that be with them...mountain was full of...chariots of fire

Rev.12:3,4(Satan's) tail drew the **third** part of the stars (angels)

(See also Rev.5:11)

B. Their fantastic flaming weapons:

Gen.3:24Cherubims & a **flaming sword**, which turned every way

2Ki.6:17The mountain was full of horses & chariots of **fire** round about Elisha

(See also Num.22:23; 1Chr.21:16.)

C. They battle against & defeat the devil:

Rev.12:7-9Michael & his angels fought against...the (devil) & his angels [& the devil's forces were defeated]

Fear Not

--Includes courage, trusting, peace & fearing God

1. The Lord tells you not to fear:

Isa.7:4Be quiet, fear not, neither be fainthearted

A. God is with you; therefore you should not fear:

Josh.1:9Have not I commanded thee? Be strong & of a good courage; be not afraid...for the Lord is with thee

Psa.118:6The Lord is on my side; I will not fear: what can man do

Isa.12:2God is my salvation; I will trust, & not be afraid

Isa.41:10Fear thou not; for I am with thee...I will help thee

Lk.12:32Fear not, little flock

(See also Num.14:9; Psa.78:53; Mat.17:6,7.)

B. God is greater than your adversaries, & He will keep you:

1Jn.4:4Greater is He that is in you, than he...in the world

Lk.10:19I give you power...over all the power of the enemy

Psa.27:1The Lord is my light...whom shall I fear?

Pro.3:25,26Be not afraid of sudden fear...Lord shall keep [thee]

C. Don't fear people's faces or looks:

Jer.1:8 Be not afraid of their faces: for I am with thee

Ezk.3:9 Fear them not, neither be dismayed at their looks

D. The Lord promises you peace:

Job 22:21 Acquaint now thyself with Him, & be at peace

Psa.29:11 The Lord will bless His people with peace

Pro.3:24 When thou liest down, thou shalt not be afraid

Isa.26:3 Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on Thee

Jn. 14:27 My peace I give unto you...let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid

Jn. 16:33 In Me ye [can] have peace...I have overcome the world

Gal.5:22 The fruit of the Spirit is...peace

Phi.4:7 The peace of God...shall keep your hearts & minds

2. Trusting in God overcomes fear:

A. When you trust God, you don't need to fear anything:

2Ki.6:14-17 Fear not: for they (God's angelic army) that be with us are more than they that be with them

2Ki.19:6,7 Be not ye afraid of the words which thou hast heard

Neh.4:14 Be not afraid of them: remember the Lord, which is great & terrible, & fight

Psa.3:6 I will not be afraid of ten thousands of people, that have set themselves against me round about

Psa.27:1,3 Though an host should encamp against me, my heart shall not fear: though war should rise against me

Psa.46:1,2 God is our refuge...Therefore will not we fear, though the mountains be carried into the...sea

Isa.43:1-3a Fear not...when thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee

Heb.13:6 We may **boldly** say, "The **Lord** is my helper, & I will not fear what man shall do unto me"

Rev.2:10 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer...be faithful unto death, & I will give thee crown of life

B. Examples of courage & fearlessness in danger:

Josh.14:12-14[Caleb fearlessly conquered the giant Anakims—See also Josh.15:13-15; Num.13:28,33; Deut.9:1,2.]

Neh.6:5-11[Nehemiah refused to be bluffed into fearing, or into fleeing into the temple in fright]

Dan.3:14-17[Three Hebrews fearlessly refused to worship the idol]

Dan.6:4-10[Knowing it could cost him his life, Daniel refused to compromise his faith in God]

Jn.19:9-11[Jesus refused to be put in fear of Pilate's power]

Phi.1:14 Many brethren, waxing confident (because of) my **bonds**, are **much more bold** to speak the Word without fear

Heb.11:27(Moses) forsook Egypt, not fearing wrath of the king

(See also Ezr.8:21-23,31; Acts 4:17,18,29,33; 7:54-60.)

C. Examples of men who refused to fear, though all others did:

1Sam.14:1-14[Jonathan & armourbearer attacked Philistine garrison, while everyone else was terrified—1Sam.13:5-7]

1Sam.17:4-11,23-37,48[All the armies of Israel were "sore afraid" of Goliath, but David boldly attacked him]

2Sam.23:8-22[David's mighty men stood their ground & defeated their enemies despite overwhelming odds]

3. Some causes of fear:

A. A lack of faith & trust in God & His Word:

Mat.8:26 Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith?

Mk.4:40 Why are ye so fearful? How is it ye have no faith?

Isa.51:12,13 Who art thou, that thou [art] afraid of a man...& forgettest the Lord thy maker?

B. Looking at circumstances & conditions:

Josh.17:14-18[Israelites fearful to attack the Canaanites because the Canaanites had powerful chariots of iron]

Psa.107:23-27[Storm at sea] Their soul is melted...at wit's end

Mat.14:30[Peter, walking on the sea] saw the wind boisterous... was afraid; & (began) to sink

Mk.4:37-40[Storm on Sea of Galilee throws disciples into fear]

2Cor.7:5We were troubled on every side...within were fears

(See also Isa.7:1,2)

C. A lack of the Spirit & love of God:

1Jn.4:18He that feareth is not made perfect in [God's] love

D. Disobedience to God's Word:

Deut.28:58,65-67If thou wilt not observe...the Lord shall give thee a trembling heart...& thou shalt fear day & night

Lev.26:15,17,36If ye despise My statutes...ye shall flee when none pursueth...sound of a shaken leaf shall chase them

Jer.6:19,22-25I will bring evil...because they have not hearkened unto My Words...fear is on every side

E. Punishment for unrepented sin:

2Chr.29:6,8Our fathers have trespassed...wherefore He hath delivered them to trouble (literally: trembling)

Job 18:5,11Terrors shall make (the wicked) afraid on every side

Isa.48:22There is no peace, saith the Lord, unto the wicked

F. Evil spirits:

1Sam.15:23,Thou (Saul) hast rejected the word of the Lord...an

16:14,15evil spirit from the Lord troubled (terrified) him

4. What fear can result in:

A. It can cause you to become bound:

Pro.29:25The fear of man bringeth a snare

Heb.2:15Who through fear of death were...subject to bondage

B. It can cause weakness:

Job 4:14Fear came upon me, & trembling...all my bones shake

Isa.13:8They shall be afraid: pangs...shall take **hold** of them

Jer.6:24,25Our hands wax **feeble** ...fear is on every side

C. It can sap your will to fight & cause defeat:

Lev.26:36,37Ye shall have no power to stand before your enemies

Josh.2:11As soon as we heard these things, our hearts did melt, neither did there remain any more courage

Josh.5:1Their heart melted, neither was there spirit in them any more

(See also 1Sam.13:6,7)

D. It hinders you from witnessing or standing up for your convictions:

Mat.26:56Then all the disciples forsook (Jesus), & fled

Mat.26:69-74[Peter, fearful, denied that he knew Jesus] (See also Mk.14:66-72; Lk.22:54-60; Jn.18:16,17, 25-27.)

Jn.7:13No man spake openly of Him for fear of the Jews

Jn.9:22These [evasive] words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews

Jn.12:42,43Many believed on Him; but did not confess Him...for they loved the praise of men more than praise of God

Jn.19:12-16[Pilate, fearing the Jews, gave in to their demands to have Jesus crucified]

Jn.19:38Joseph...a disciple, but secretly for fear of the Jews

E. It can cause you to disobey God:

Num.13:28,31-33[Jews refused to invade Canaan for fear of the giants] (See also Num.14:1-5; Deut.1:26-28.)

1Sam.15:24I have sinned...transgressed the commandment of the Lord...because I feared the people

F. It can cause mental torment & anguish:

1Jn.4:18Fear hath **torment**

G. Fear can even cause sickness & death:

Lk.21:26Men's hearts failing them for fear

(See also 1Sam.14:15,16; 28:5.)

H. If not checked, fear can get a grip on you:

Psa.48:6Fear took **hold** of them, & pain, as a woman in travail

Psa.55:5Fearfulness & trembling are come upon me, horror hath **overwhelmed** me

Jer.6:22-25Anguish hath taken **hold** of us...fear is on every side

I. Unchecked fear can become extreme:

Lev.26:17,36Ye shall flee when none pursueth...sound of a shaken leaf shall chase them

Deut.28:66,67Thou shalt fear day & night, & shalt have none assurance of thy life

Job 18:11,14Terrors shall make him afraid on every side...shall bring him to the king of terrors

Psa.53:5There were they in **great** fear, where **no** fear was

Pro.28:1The wicked flee when no man pursueth

J. Fears can materialise & become real things:

Job 3:25The thing which I greatly feared is come upon me

Pro.10:24The fear of the wicked, it shall come upon him

Isa.66:4I will choose their delusions...bring their fears upon them

K. Fear is contagious & can affect others:

Deut.20:8What man is fearful? Let him go...lest his brethren's heart faint as well as his heart

Judg.7:3Whosoever is fearful & afraid, let him...depart

(See also Judg.7:19-22; 1Sam.14:12-16.)

5. How to have peace & freedom from fear:

A. Trust in the Lord:

Psa.23:4 Though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for Thou art with me

Psa.31:13,14 Fear was on every side...but I trusted in Thee

Psa.56:3,4 What time I am afraid, I will trust in Thee. I will not fear what flesh can do unto me

Psa.56:11 In God have I put my trust: I will not be afraid

Psa.91:2,5 The Lord is my refuge...[I shall] not be afraid for the terror by night

Psa.112:7,8 He shall not be afraid...heart (trusts) in the Lord

Isa.26:3 Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on Thee: because he trusteth in Thee

Mat.10:28 Fear not them which kill the body...but fear (God)

Jn.14:1 Let not your heart be troubled...believe in Me

Phi.4:7 The peace of God...shall keep your hearts & minds

1Jn.4:18 There is no fear in love; love casteth out fear

B. Trust in God's Word:

Psa.119:165 Great peace have they which love Thy law: & nothing shall offend them

Pro.1:33 Whoso hearkeneth unto Me...shall be quiet from fear

Pro.3:1,2 Let thine heart keep My commandments...peace shall they add to thee

Isa.48:18 O that thou hadst hearkened to My commandments! Then had thy peace been as a river

C. Remember that God is with you & will not fail you:

Deut.1:29,30 Dread not, neither be afraid of them...God goeth before you, He shall fight for you

Deut.20:3,4 Let not your hearts faint, fear not, & do not tremble, neither be ye terrified...for God goeth with you

Deut.31:6Fear not, nor be afraid...God... will not fail thee

Zech.8:13bFear not, but let your hands be strong

Mk.5:36bBe not afraid, only believe

D. When others with you are afraid:

Isa.8:12bNeither fear ye their fear, nor be afraid

Isa.35:4Say to them that are of a fearful heart, "Be strong, fear not: behold, God...will come & save you"

E. Seek the Lord for deliverance from fear:

Psa.34:4I sought the Lord, & He heard me, & delivered me from all my fears

Psa.64:1O God...preserve my life from fear of the enemy

F. Forsake your sins:

Job 11:13-15[Pray to God &] put (iniquity) far away...Then shalt thou ...be steadfast, & shalt not fear

G. Rebuke the devil & the spirit of fear:

Jam.4:7bResist the devil, & he will flee from you

1Jn.4:18There is **no** fear in love; perfect love **casteth out** fear

H. The solution—the Holy Spirit & faith:

Acts 4:29,31Behold their threatenings...grant unto Thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak Thy Word

Heb.11:33a,34Who through **faith**...waxed **valiant** in fight

6. The only One you should fear is God:

A. We are commanded to fear (reverence) God:

Josh.24:14aFear the Lord, & serve Him in sincerity & in truth

Psa.19:9The fear of the Lord is clean (Compare with Pro.29:25)

Pro.3:7Fear the Lord, & depart from evil

Eccl.12:13Fear God, & keep His commandments: for this is the whole duty of man

Isa.8:12,13Neither fear ye their fear...let Him (God) be your fear, & let Him be your dread (See also Isa.57:11)

Lk.12:4,5Be not afraid of them (men)...I will warn you Whom ye shall fear: Fear Him (God)...yea, I say, Fear Him

Heb.10:31It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of...God

(See also Mat.10:28)

B. God's blessings on them that fear Him:

Psa.25:12He that feareth the Lord...shall He teach in the way

Psa.31:19How great is Thy goodness...for them that fear Thee

Psa.34:9There is no want (lack) to them that fear Him

Psa.103:13The Lord (has compassion on) them that fear Him

Psa.147:11The Lord taketh pleasure in them that fear Him

Pro.1:7The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge

Pro.9:10The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom

Pro.14:26In the fear of the Lord is strong confidence

Mal.4:2Unto you that fear My name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in His wings

Lk.1:50His mercy is on them that fear Him

Acts 10:35He that feareth Him...is accepted with Him

Rev.11:18Reward Thy servants, & them that fear Thy name

Thankfulness

Praise & thankfulness vs. murmuring & complaining

1. Having a thankful, grateful attitude:

A. The Lord wants & expects us to be thankful:

Psa.50:14aOffer unto God thanksgiving

Psa.95:2Come before His presence with thanksgiving

Psa.100:4bBe thankful unto Him

Psa.140:13Surely the righteous shall give thanks unto Thy name

Eph.5:20Giving thanks always for all things unto God

Col.3:15bBe ye thankful

1Thes.5:18In everything give thanks: for this is the will of God

(See also Psa.92:1)

B. We should be content:

Phi.4:11In **whatsoever** state I am, therewith...be content

1Tim.6:8Having food & raiment let us be therewith content

1Tim.6:6Godliness with contentment is great gain

Heb.13:5Be content with such things as ye have

(See also Pro.15:16,17)

C. Don't take God's blessings for granted:

Psa.68:19Blessed be Lord...Who daily loadeth us with benefits

Psa.103:2Bless the Lord...& forget not all His benefits

Lk.17:12-18Were not ten (lepers) cleansed? where are the nine? (None) returned to give glory to God, save (one)

D. Remember to always thank Him for your blessings:

2Sam.22:49,50Thou hast delivered me...therefore I will give thanks

1Chr.16:8Give thanks...make known His deeds among the people

Psa.136:1-3Give thanks unto God...for His mercy endureth forever

1Cor.15:57Thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory

2Cor.2:14Thanks be unto God, which...causeth us to triumph

(See also Psa.26:7; 107:22.)

2. Praising the Lord:

A. We are admonished to praise the Lord:

Psa.107:8Oh that men would praise the Lord for His goodness, & for His wonderful works

Psa.18:3The Lord...is worthy to be praised

Psa.22:3(God) inhabitest the praises of Israel

Psa.66:8O bless our God, ye people, & make the voice of His praise to be heard

Psa.67:3O God, let all the people praise Thee

Psa.100:4Enter into His gates with thanksgiving, & into His courts with praise

Psa.103:1Bless the Lord, O my soul: & all that is within me, bless His holy name

Psa.113:1Praise ye the Lord, O ye servants of the Lord

Psa.117:1Praise the Lord, all ye nations...all ye people

Psa.147:1Praise ye the Lord: for...praise is comely

Psa.150:6Let every thing that hath breath praise the Lord

Heb.13:15Offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually...the fruit of our lips giving thanks to His name

1Pet.2:9Ye should show forth praises of Him Who called you

(See also Psa.50:23; 148:all; 150:all.)

B. Praise the Lord in song:

Psa.30:4Sing unto the Lord...& give thanks

Psa.69:30Praise the name of God with a song...& thanksgiving

Psa.92:1It is a good thing to...sing praises unto Thy name

Psa.98:1Sing unto the Lord a new song

Psa.147:1,7Sing unto the Lord with thanksgiving; sing praise

Eph.5:19Making melody in your heart to the Lord

Col.3:16Singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord

C. Praise the Lord happily:

Psa.5:11Let them that love Thy name be joyful in Thee

Psa.95:2bMake a **joyful** noise unto Him with psalms

Isa.51:3bJoy & gladness...thanksgiving, & the voice of melody

Jer.30:19Out of them shall proceed thanksgiving & the voice of them that make merry

(See also Psa.100:1; Jer.33:11.)

3. Have a continual attitude of praising God:

Heb.13:15Let us offer...praise to God **continually**...our lips giving thanks to His name

Psa.34:1I will bless the Lord at **all** times: His praise shall **continually** be in my mouth

Psa.35:28My tongue shall speak of Thy...praise all day long

Psa.71:8Let my mouth be filled with Thy praise...all the day

(See also Psa.30:12b; 72:15b; 79:13; 104:33; 113:3.)

4. Murmuring (complaining) forbidden by God:

Jn.6:43Jesus said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves

1Cor.10:10Neither murmur ye, as some of them murmured

Phi.2:14Do all things without murmurings & disputings

(See also Psa.144:14)

5. Causes of murmuring:

A. Lack of gratitude for what God has given us:

Num.11:4-6,18 We remember the fish, cucumbers, melons, leeks...now there is nothing at all, beside this manna

Num.21:4,5 There is no bread...& our soul loatheth this (manna)

B. Lack of faith for God to supply our needs:

Exo.16:2,3 The whole congregation...murmured against Moses...in the wilderness [when they ran out of food]

Exo.17:1-4 People thirsted...& murmured...thou brought us out of Egypt, to kill us with thirst

(See also Exo.15:23,24)

C. Loss of faith in God's Word & His power:

Psa.106:24,25 They believed not His Word...but murmured

Jn.6:60-66 Many disciples said, This is an hard saying...His disciples murmured...many went back

(Compare Exo.3:4-8; 4:30,31; 14:9-12.)

(Compare Deut.1:19-27; Num.14:1-11.)

D. Giving up & losing hope:

1Sam.27:1 David said, "I shall perish one day by the hand of Saul"

1Ki.19:1-4,10 Elijah...requested that he might die

Jer.20:14-18 Cursed be the day I was born...wherefore came I...out of the womb to see labour & sorrow?

Jon.4:1-9 Jonah prayed, Take my life from me; for it is better for me to die than to live

(See also Job 7:6,11; 10:1.)

E. Lack of faith that God loves us:

Deut.1:27 Ye murmured, & said, Because the Lord **hated** us, He brought us [to Canaan] to destroy us

(See also Psa.73:13,14; 77:1-9.)

F. Thinking that God is far away & doesn't hear:

Job 23:2-9 Today is my complaint bitter: Oh that I knew where I might find Him. I cannot perceive Him

Psa.10:1 Why standest Thou afar off, O Lord? Why hidest Thou?

(See also Psa.13:1; 22:1,2 .)

G. Self-righteously judging others:

Mk.14:4-10 Why was this waste...made? For it might have been sold ...they murmured. Judas...went to betray Him

Lk.15:2 The Pharisees murmured, This man receiveth sinners

Lk.19:7 When [Pharisees] saw it, they all murmured, He [has] gone to be a guest with a sinner

6. Why murmuring is dangerous:

A. Murmuring angers God:

Num.11:1 When the people complained, it displeased the Lord: & His anger was kindled; & fire...consumed them

Num.11:10,33 [Israelites wailed for meat] & the anger of the Lord kindled greatly...& the Lord smote the people

Num.21:4-6 The people spake against God...& the Lord sent fiery serpents among the people...& much people died

1Cor.10:10 Neither murmur ye, as some of them [Israelites] also murmured, & were destroyed of the destroyer

(See also Num.17:10)

B. God may take us at our word:

Num.14:1,2 All the children of Israel murmured... Would God that we had died in this wilderness

Num.14:26-35 As ye have **spoken**, so will I **do** to you: Your carcasses shall fall in this wilderness...even forty years

C. Any murmur is ultimately a murmur against God:

Exo.16:7 Your murmurings (are) against the Lord: (for) what are we (Moses & Aaron), that ye murmur against us?

Exo.16:8 Your murmurings are not against us, but against the Lord (See also vs. 9-13)

Num.16:11 (You) are gathered together against the Lord: (for) what is Aaron, that ye murmur against him?

D. It causes others to murmur too:

Num.11:4,5 [Mixed multitude lusted after meat, & soon the entire camp started murmuring]

Num.13:30-32; 14:36,37 The (spies) made all the congregation to murmur...by bringing...an evil report (See also Deut.1:27,28)

7. What to do when problems arise:

A. Praise & rejoice even when things go wrong:

Hab.3:17,18 Although the...fields shall yield no meat; the flock shall be cut off...**yet** will I rejoice in the Lord

Mat.5:11,12 When men revile you, & persecute you, & say...evil against you falsely...rejoice, & be exceeding glad

Lk.6:22,23 When men shall hate you...separate you...reproach you ...rejoice ye...& leap for joy

Acts 5:40,41 They called the apostles, & beat them...they departed rejoicing that they were worthy to suffer shame

Acts 16:22-25 Beat them...cast them into prison...Paul & Silas prayed, & sang praises unto God

1Thes.5:18 In **everything** give thanks: this is the will of God

1Pet.4:12,13 Think it not strange...the fiery trial...but rejoice

(See also Jer.15:10,11,16; Jon.2:all; Phi.4:4.)

B. If you have a genuine deep grievance, tell the Lord:

Psa 55:2,3 Hear me: I mourn in my complaint, & make a noise... because of the enemy...my heart is sore pained

Psa.55:22 Cast thy burden upon the **Lord**, & **He** shall sustain thee

Psa.77:1-4 I was troubled: I complained, my spirit...overwhelmed

Psa.142:all I poured out my complaint before **Him**; I showed **Him** my trouble....my spirit was overwhelmed

1Pet.5:7Casting all your care upon Him; for He careth for you

(See also Heb.4:14-16)

C. Keep on praising & victory is sure to come:

2Chr.20:22When they began to sing & to praise, the Lord set ambushments against the (enemy)

D. Keep a thankful attitude in prayer:

Phi.4:6By prayer...with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God

Col.4:2Continue in prayer...with thanksgiving

E. Have a thankful—instead of foolish or vain—attitude:

Eph.5:4Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting...but rather giving of thanks

Pride, Self-Righteousness & Humility

1. What does God think about pride?

A. He hates it:

Pro.6:16,17These...doth the Lord hate: a proud look

Pro.16:5Every one that is proud...is an abomination to Lord

B. We should hate it too:

Pro.8:13The fear of the Lord is to **hate**...pride & arrogancy

C. Pride is a sin, not a virtue:

Pro.21:4aAn high look, & a proud heart...is **sin**

Hab.2:4Behold, his soul which is lifted up is not upright

1Jn.2:16Pride...is not of the Father, but is of the world

2. Why is it wrong for us to be proud?

A. Because only the Lord is great; we are not:

Psa.66:5-7 Come & see the works of God...He ruleth...let not the rebellious exalt themselves

Psa.97:9 Thou, Lord, art high... exalted far above all

Ezk.28:2 Thine heart is lifted up...yet thou art a man, & not God, though thou set thine heart as...God

Phi.2:9,10 God hath highly exalted Him (Jesus), & given Him a name above every name...every knee should bow

(See also Psa.21:13; 57:5,11; 108:5; Isa.2:11,17.)

B. God alone should get the glory:

Acts 12:20-23 Angel...smote him, because he gave not God the glory

1Cor.10:31 Whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God

(See also Jer.9:23,24; 1Cor.1:28,29.)

C. Pride makes us ignore & forget God:

Deut.8:14 (When) thine heart be lifted up...thou forget the Lord

Psa.10:4 The wicked, through...pride...will not seek after God

Hos.13:6b Heart was exalted; therefore have they forgotten Me

D. God will distance Himself from & resist the proud:

Psa.138:6 The proud He (the Lord) knoweth afar off

Jam.4:6 God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto humble

E. Pride makes us rebel against the Word:

Neh.9:16,17,29 They dealt proudly...& hearkened not to Thy (Word)

F. It gives us an exaggerated sense of greatness:

Oba.3 The pride of thine heart hath deceived thee, that saith, Who shall bring me down?

Rom.12:3 (Thinking) of himself more highly than he **ought** to

Gal.6:3 If a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself

G. It creates self-exaltation & a desire to be honoured:

Pro.25:27For men to search their own glory is not glory

Mat.23:5-7(Proud Pharisees) love...greetings (in public), & to be called of men, (Master, Master)

Mk.12:38,39Scribes...love...chief seats...& uppermost rooms

Jude 16Their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration

H. When we seek to please men, we often displease the Lord:

1Sam.15:30I have sinned: [but] honour me...before the [people]

Jn.5:44Ye...receive honour one of another, & seek not the honour that cometh from God only

Jn.12:43They loved praise of men more than the praise of God

Gal.1:10If I pleased men...not be the servant of Christ

I. Pride makes us think we are "wise":

Pro.3:7Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the Lord

1Cor.3:18Let no man deceive himself. If any...**seemeth** wise

1Cor.8:2If any think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know

J. Pride gives us a "know-it-all" attitude:

Psa.131:1[The haughty exercise themselves in great matters, in things too high for them]

Pro.26:12Seest thou a man "wise" in his own **conceit**? There is more hope of a fool than of him

(See also 1Tim.1:7)

K. Pride causes arguments:

Pro.13:10Only by pride cometh contention

Pro.28:25He that is of a proud heart stirreth up strife

(See also Pro.14:3; 21:24.)

L. Pride corrupts us:

Mk.7:22,23Pride...(comes) from within, & defiles the man

M. Pride will bring about our downfall:

Pro.11:2aWhen pride cometh, then cometh shame

Pro.16:18Pride goeth before destruction, & an haughty spirit before a fall

Pro.18:12aBefore destruction the heart of man is haughty

Pro.29:23aA man's pride shall bring him low

Ezk.28:12-17[The fall of Satan happened because he exalted himself in pride] (See also Isa.14:12-15)

Dan.5:18,20, 21God gave Nebuchadnezzar...majesty...& honour: But when his heart was lifted up...he was deposed

1Cor.10:12Him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall

3. Some causes of pride:

A. Beauty:

Ezk.28:17Thine heart is lifted up because of thy beauty

B. Material abundance:

Deut.8:12-14, 17Lest when thou...art full...& all that thou hast is multiplied; then thine heart be lifted up

Ezk.28:5Thine heart is lifted up because of thy riches

Hos.13:6They were filled, & their heart was exalted

C. Being overly secure:

Psa.73:5,6aThey are not in trouble as other men...therefore pride compasseth them about as a chain

D. Being overly affected by exaltation:

2Chr.26:15,16He was marvellously helped, till he was strong. But when he was strong, his heart was lifted up

Dan.11:11,12[Victory over enemies causes heart to be lifted up]

1Tim.3:6Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall

E. Carnal mindedness (intellectual pride):

Gen.2:16-17;[Eve, desiring to be wise, disobeyed God & ate of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good & evil]

3:16

1Tim.6:3,4If any man teach otherwise (than sound doctrine)...he is proud, knowing nothing

(See also Jer.9:23,24a; Rom.8:6,7; Jam.3:14-16.)

4. Warnings against pride:

A. We should avoid proud boasting:

1Sam.2:3aTalk no more so exceeding proudly; let not arrogancy come out of your mouth

Pro.27:2Let another man praise thee, & not thine own mouth

2Cor.10:18Not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth

B. We shouldn't exalt ourselves:

Pro.25:6,7Put not forth thyself in the presence of the king, & stand not in the place of great men

Lk.14:10When thou art bidden...sit down in the lowest room

C. If we're proud, we're in a dangerous position:

Psa.18:27Thou (God) wilt bring down high looks

Pro.15:25aThe Lord will destroy the house of the proud

Eccl.7:16Be not righteous over much (overly righteous)...why shouldst thou destroy thyself?

Jer.48:25,26, 29[Exceeding proud, lofty, arrogant, haughty Moabites magnified selves against the Lord & were cut off]

5. Self-righteousness: Why is it wrong to think that we—in ourselves—are good & righteous?

A. Because we are not:

Job 15:14What is man, that he should be clean?...righteous?

Job 15:15,16The heavens are not clean in His sight. How much more abominable & filthy is man

Psa.130:3If Thou shouldest mark iniquities, who shall stand?

Pro.20:9Who can say, I have made my heart clean, I am pure?

Eccl.7:20There is not a just man upon earth, that doeth good & sinneth not

Isa.64:6aWe are **all** as an unclean thing, & all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags

Rom.3:10,23There is none righteous, no, not one...all have sinned

Rom.7:18aIn me, that is, in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing

B. Only God is good:

Mat.19:17aThere is none good but one, that is, God

Job 9:2bBut how should man be just with God?

Psa.71:16bI will make mention of Thy righteousness, Thine only

C. Doing so causes us to be lifted up in pride:

Pro.30:12,13(They) are pure in their own eyes...O how **lofty** are their eyes! And their eyelids are lifted up

Lk.18:11God, I thank Thee, that I am not as other men...unjust

D. It separates us from God:

Rom.10:3They...going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted unto the righteousness of God

Job 13:16bAn hypocrite shall not come before Him

E. It makes us unable to see our sins:

Job 32:1Job...was righteous in his own eyes (See also Pro.16:2; 21:2 .)

Pro.30:12A generation that are pure in their own eyes, & yet is not washed from their filthiness

Lk.6:41,42Why perceivest not the **beam** that is in thine own eye?

Jn.9:41Ye say, "We see"; therefore your sin remaineth

F. True righteousness means trusting God:

Gal.3:6 Abraham believed God, it was accounted righteousness

Phi.3:9 Not having mine own righteousness...but...of God

Tit.3:5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to (because of) His mercy He saved us

6. Self-righteousness: Why is it wrong to think we—in ourselves—are better than others?

A. Because we're not:

Jn.8:7 He that is without sin...let him first cast a stone

Rom.3:23 **All** have sinned, & come short of the glory of God

B. We shouldn't think we are better than others:

Rom.14:2,3 Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not

1Cor.13:4 Charity (love) vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up

Phi.2:3b [Not] vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other **better** than themselves

C. A proud attitude displeases & angers God:

Isa.65:5 (They) say, "I am holier than thou." These are a smoke in My (God's) nose

Lk.16:15 Ye are they which justify yourselves...but...that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination (to) God

D. It makes us despise & be unmerciful to others:

Mat.23:29 Ye have omitted the weightier matters...mercy

Lk.18:9 (They) trusted in themselves that they were righteous, & despised others

Lk.18:11 God, I thank Thee, that I am not as other men are... unjust...or even as this publican (tax collector)

(See also Mat.9:13)

E. We only are what we are by God's grace:

1Cor.4:7 Who maketh thee to differ from another? & what hast thou that thou didst not receive?

1Cor.15:10 By the grace of God I am what I am

2Cor.3:5 Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves

7. The humbling of the proud:

A. God can—and does—humble the proud:

Dan.4:37b Those that walk in pride He is able to abase

Gen.11:1-8 [Men were building the tower of Babel in pride, so God confused & scattered them]

1Sam.13:8-14 [Saul presumed to offer the sacrifice without waiting for Samuel, & lost the kingdom as a result]

2Chr.32:24,25 Heart was lifted up: therefore...wrath (was) upon him

Job 33:15-17 [God works on our hearts at night to remove pride]

Psa.101:5b Him that hath an high look & a proud heart will not I suffer (allow to continue)

Isa.2:11 The lofty looks of man **shall** be humbled, & the haughtiness of men shall be bowed down

Isa.2:12 Every one that is proud & lofty...shall be brought low

Isa.13:11b I will cause the arrogancy of the proud to cease

Dan.4:30-35 [King Nebuchadnezzar, lifted up in pride, was deposed by God, abased as a beast, & learned humility]

Dan.5:20,21 When his...mind (was) hardened in pride...was deposed

2Cor.12:7 Lest I (Paul) should be exalted above measure...there was given to me a thorn in the flesh

(See also Jer.50:31,32; Oba.4.)

B. It is a law of God: If we're proud, we will be humbled:

Mat.23:12a Whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased

Lk.14:11a Whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased

Lk.18:14b Every one that exalteth himself shall be abased

C. Being humbled teaches us that God is in charge:

Job 42:1-6 [After being humbled, Job said:] I know that Thou canst do every thing...I...repent

Dan.4:32-35 Eat grass...until thou know that the most High ruleth

8. Why we should want to be humble:

A. Because God loves & delights in the humble:

Psa.51:17 The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken & a contrite heart, O God, Thou wilt not despise

Psa.138:6a The Lord be high, yet hath He respect unto the lowly

1Pet.3:4 A meek & quiet spirit...is in the sight of God of great price

1Pet.5:5b God...giveth grace to the humble

B. He is close to the humble:

Psa.34:18a The Lord is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart

Isa.57:15a The high & lofty One that inhabiteth eternity (dwells) with him that is of a contrite & humble spirit

C. He requires us to be humble:

Mic.6:8 What doth the Lord require...walk humbly with thy God

Col.3:12 Put on, as the elect of God...humbleness of mind

D. Humility brings honour & blessing:

Pro.22:4 By humility...are riches, & honour, & life

Pro.29:23b Honour shall uphold the humble in spirit

E. If we are humble, God will exalt us:

Mat.23:12b He that shall humble himself shall be exalted

Lk.1:52 He put down the mighty...& exalted them of low degree

F. God helps the humble:

Psa.9:12 He forgetteth not the cry of the humble

Psa.25:9 The meek will He guide...& meek will He teach His way

Psa.34:18The Lord...saveth such as be of a contrite spirit

Psa.147:6The Lord lifteth up the meek: He casteth wicked down

Isa.57:15b(I) revive spirit of the humble, & heart of contrite ones

Lk.1:48aHe hath regarded the low estate of His handmaiden

1Pet.5:5bGod resisteth the proud, & giveth grace to the humble

G. Humility can spare us from trouble:

1Ki.21:17,25-29[Wicked king Ahab humbled himself before God, so God didn't bring judgment during his lifetime]

2Chr.32:26Hezekiah humbled himself for the pride of his heart...so that the wrath of the Lord came not

H. God gives the humble true wisdom:

Pro.11:2[Pride causes shame] but with the lowly is wisdom

1Cor.3:18Let him become a fool, that he may be wise

(See also Lk.10:21)

I. Humility is true greatness in God's eyes:

Eccl.7:8bThe patient in spirit is better than proud in spirit

Mat.18:4Whosoever shall humble himself is greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven

Mat.19:30bThe last shall be first

Mk.10:43Whosoever will be great...shall be your minister

Lk.22:26He that is greatest...let him be as the younger

J. God uses & exalts the humble:

1Sam.15:17When thou wast little in thine own sight...the Lord anointed thee king over Israel

Pro.15:33bBefore honour is humility

Jam.4:10Humble yourselves...& He shall lift you up

1Pet.5:6Humble yourselves... that He may exalt you in due time

K. Other blessings upon the meek:

Psa.37:11The meek shall inherit the earth; & shall delight

Psa.149:4The Lord...will beautify the meek with salvation

Mat.5:5Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth

9. Keeping a humble attitude:

A. Remind yourself that anything good is only Jesus, not you:

Gen.41:15,16Joseph answered Pharaoh, saying, It is not in me: **God** shall give Pharaoh an answer

Dan.2:26-30a**God**...revealeth secrets. But as for me, this secret is not revealed to me for any wisdom that **I** have

1Cor.4:7What hast thou that thou didst not receive [from God]? Why dost thou glory?

1Cor.15:9,10I am not meet (worthy) to be called an apostle...but by the **grace** of **God** I am what I am

2Cor.10:17He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord (See also Jer.9:23,24)

Gal.6:14God forbid I should glory, save in the cross of Jesus

(See also Rom.2:11; Gal.6:3.)

B. Read & obey the Word:

Deut.17:19,20[Read & obey the Word] that heart be not lifted up

C. Realistically admit your limitations:

Rom.12:3(Don't) think of (yourself) more highly than (you) **ought** to think; but think **soberly**

Rom.12:16bBe not wise in your own conceits

10. Humility with one another:

A. Follow Jesus' example of humility:

Mat.21:5Thy King (Jesus) cometh unto thee, meek...upon an ass

Jn.13:5,12-15He began to wash the disciples' feet, & wipe them...I have given you an example, that ye should do as I

Lk.22:27He that sitteth at meat (is greater)...but I am among you as he that serveth

Phi.2:5-8Let this mind be in you...Jesus made Himself of no reputation...(became) a servant...humbled Himself

B. Other examples of true humility:

1Sam.25:40, 41[Abigail, when asked to marry David, said:] Let (me) be a servant to wash the feet of (his) servants

Mk.7:25-30[Syrophoenician woman said:] Yet the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs

Lk.7:2-7[Pharisees said] he was worthy for whom He should do this. The centurion (said), I am **not** worthy

Jn.1:27(Jesus), Whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy to unloose

C. Submit humbly to one another:

Lk.22:25,26Kings...exercise lordship. But ye shall not be so. He that is greatest...let him be as the younger

Eph.5:21Submitting yourselves one to another in fear of God

1Pet.5:5All of you be subject one to another, & be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud

D. Love & honour others:

Rom.12:10With brotherly love; in honour preferring one another

Rom.12:16Mind not high things, condescend to men of low estate Phi.2:3a Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory

E. Be humble when pointing out other's errors:

Lk.6:42bCast out first the beam out of thine **own** eye

Gal.6:1Restore such an one in the spirit of meekness

2Tim.2:25In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves

11. The solution:

A. Confess your faults & inabilities & humble yourself before God:

Jam.4:10aHumble yourselves in the sight of the Lord

1Pet.5:6aHumble yourselves...under the mighty hand of God

B. Ask others to pray for you to overcome pride:

Jam.5:16Confess your faults one to another, & pray one for another

Mat.18:19,20If two of you shall agree [in prayer] it shall be done

C. Examples of humbling oneself before the Lord:

2Sam.24:2-4, 8-10[In pride, David took a census of his kingdom to see how great he was, then repented & sought mercy]

Job 40:1-5; 42:1-6[Self-righteous Job—see 32:1; 35:2—humbled himself, confessed he was vile & repented]

Psa.51:1-4I acknowledge my...sin...that Thou mightest be justified when Thou speakest

Dan.4:33-35,37[King Nebuchadnezzar humbled himself & confessed that only God was great]

(See also 1Sam.9:21 about Saul; 2Sam.7:18 about David; 1Ki.3:7 about Solomon; Mat.3:14 about John the Baptist.)

Special passages:

1Ki.12:1-16[Rehoboam "answered the people roughly"]

2Chr.26:14-23[King Uzziah, "lifted up", presumed to offer incense]

Dan.4:all[Nebuchadnezzar's pride, humiliation & restoration]

Lk.18:9-14[The parable of the proud Pharisee & humble sinner]

Power of the Tongue, The

"Death & life are in the power of the tongue" (Pro.18:21)

1. The power of positive speech:

A. Loving, wholesome speech has a great effect:

2Chr.10:7If thou be kind unto this people...& speak good words to them, they will be thy servants forever

Pro.15:1aA soft answer turneth away wrath

Pro.15:23A word spoken in due season, how good is it

Pro.25:15By long forbearing is a prince persuaded, & a soft tongue breaketh the bone

B. Wise speech is health & life:

Pro.10:11aThe mouth of the righteous man is a well of life

Pro.12:18bThe tongue of the wise is health

Pro.15:4aA wholesome tongue is a tree of life

Pro.16:24Pleasant words are...sweet to the soul, & health

C. Other points on wholesome speech:

Pro.8:6The opening of my lips shall be right things

Pro.14:3bThe lips of the wise shall preserve them

Pro.31:26bIn her tongue is the law of kindness

Eccl.10:12aThe words of a wise man's mouth are gracious

Jam.3:2If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect (complete, mature) man

(See also Psa.37:30; Pro.10:31; 15:7; 24:26; Mal.2:6,7.)

D. Speaking the right things at the right time:

Pro.10:32aThe lips of the righteous know what is acceptable

Pro.25:11A word fitly spoken is like apples of gold in pictures of silver

Eccl.8:5bA wise man's heart discerneth both time & judgment

E. Speaking encouraging words to strengthen others:

Gen.50:21bAnd he comforted them, & spake kindly unto them

Deut.3:28aEncourage him, & strengthen him

Job 4:4Thy words have upholden him that was falling, & thou hast strengthened the feeble knees

Job 16:5I would strengthen you with my mouth

Isa.35:3,4Strengthen the weak hands...say to them, Be strong

Isa.50:4Speak a word in season to him that is weary

F. Speaking & talking about the Lord's Word:

Deut.6:6,7Thou shalt talk of (the Word) when thou sittest...when thou walkest...when thou liest down...& risest up

Psa.119:172My tongue shall talk of Thy Word

Jn.6:63The Words I speak unto you, they are spirit, &...life

Eph.5:19Speaking to yourselves in psalms & hymns &...songs

1Pet.4:11If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God

G. Sharing testimonies about the great things God has done:

Psa.9:11Sing praises...declare among the people His doings

Psa.35:28My tongue shall talk of Thy righteousness & of Thy praise all the day long

Psa.66:16I will declare what He hath done for my soul

Psa.145:1-7,I will speak of...Thy majesty, & of Thy wondrous works

10,12,21...make known to men His mighty acts

Acts 12:17He...declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison

(See also Psa.37:30; 40:9,10; 71:17; Isa.12:4.)

H. Have a sense of humour & be able to laugh:

Pro.17:22A merry heart doeth good like a medicine (See also Pro.15:13,15)

Psa.126:2Then was our mouth filled with laughter (See Job 8:21)

(See also Gen.21:6; Eccl.3:4; 10:19a.)

2. Silence & restrained speech:

Eccl.3:7[There is] a time to keep silence, & a time to speak

A. The dangers of speaking too much:

Pro.10:19aIn the multitude of words there wanteth (lacks) not sin

Pro.14:23In all labour there is profit: but the talk of the lips tendeth only to penury (poverty)

B. The wisdom of being slow to speak:

Jam.1:19Let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak

Pro.18:13He that answereth a matter before he heareth it, it is folly & shame unto him

Eccl.5:2,6Be not rash (hasty) with thy mouth...wherefore should God be angry...& destroy the work of thine hands?

Jn.8:1-9[Example of Jesus avoiding being rushed into answering]

C. It is usually wise to speak little:

Pro.17:27He that hath knowledge spareth his words

Eccl.5:3bA fool's voice is known by multitude of words

(See also Mat.5:37)

D. It is often wise not to speak at all:

Job 13:5O that ye would altogether hold your peace. And it should be your wisdom

Pro.10:19bHe that refraineth his lips is wise

Pro.11:12bA man of understanding holdeth his peace

Pro.17:28Even a fool, when he holdeth his peace, is counted wise: & he that shutteth lips is...a man of understanding

Pro.21:23Who keepeth...his tongue keepeth his soul from troubles

E. Watch your words:

Psa.39:1bTo...sin not with my tongue: I will keep my mouth with a bridle, while the wicked is before me

Psa.141:3Set a watch, O Lord, before my mouth; keep...my lips

Pro.13:3aHe that keepeth his mouth keepeth his life

Mat.12:36Every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment

F. Keeping secrets:

Pro.11:13A talebearer (gossip) revealeth secrets: but he that is of a faithful spirit concealeth the matter

Pro.25:9Debate thy cause with thy neighbour himself; & discover (disclose) not a secret to another

Mic.7:5Keep the doors of thy mouth from her that lieth in thy bosom (See also Judg.14:15-17; 16:4-6; 15-21.)

Mat.9:30Jesus straitly charged them...See that no man know it

Mat.12:14-16(Jesus) charged them they should not make Him known

Mk.1:43-45See thou say nothing to any man (See also Mat.8:4a)

Mk.9:9,10(Jesus) charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen (See also Mat.17:9; Lk.9:36.)

Lk.8:56He charged them that they should tell no man what was done (See also Mk.5:43)

Lk.9:20,21He...commanded them to tell no man that thing (See also Mat.16:20)

Acts 23:22Tell no man that thou hast shewed these things to me

(See also Josh.2:14,20)

G. Learning how to be quiet:

Job 6:24aTeach me, & I will hold my tongue

1Thes.4:11Study to be quiet, & to do [mind] your own business

H. The foolish simply cannot keep their mouth shut:

Pro.15:2bThe mouth of fools poureth forth foolishness

Pro.20:3Honour...to cease...but every fool will be meddling

Pro.29:11aA fool uttereth all his mind

3. The damage an uncontrolled tongue will do:

A. An uncontrolled tongue will defile you & others:

Mat.15:11That which cometh out of the mouth...defileth a man

Mat.15:18Those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; & they defile a man

Jam.3:6The tongue is...a world of iniquity...it defileth the whole body

B. A talebearing (gossiping) tongue is a fire:

Jam.3:5,6The tongue **is** a fire...it setteth **on** fire...& **is** set on fire of hell

Pro.16:27Ungodly man...in his lips there is as a burning fire

C. A slanderous, wicked tongue is deadly poison:

Jam.3:8The tongue...is...full of deadly poison

Psa.140:3Adders' poison is under their lips

Eccl.10:11The serpent will bite without enchantment; & a babbler is no better

Rom.3:13bThe poison of asps is under their lips

D. A vainbabbling tongue destroys like cancer:

2Tim.2:16,17Profane & vain babblings...their word will eat as doth a canker (cancer)

E. A sharp, malicious tongue can inflict deep wounds:

Pro.12:18aThere is that speaketh like the piercings of a sword

Pro.25:18Man that beareth false witness...is a maul, & a sword

Pro.26:22The words of a talebearer are as wounds, & they go down into the **innermost** parts (deep)

F. A malicious tongue destroys & kills:

Pro.11:9aAn hypocrite with his mouth destroyeth his neighbour

Pro.18:21Death & life are in the power of the tongue

Pro.26:28A flattering mouth worketh ruin

G. It destroys love & friendship:

Pro.16:28bA whisperer (gossiper) separateth chief friends

Acts 14:2Made their minds evil affected against the brethren

4. Foolish & evil speech:

A. Evil speech comes from an evil heart:

Pro.15:2bThe mouth of fools poureth out foolishness

Pro.15:28bThe mouth of the wicked poureth out evil things

Mat.12:35bAn evil man out of (heart) bringeth forth evil things

B. Evil, foolish speech corrupts & stinks:

Eccl.10:1Dead flies...send forth a stinking...so doth a little folly in him that is in reputation for wisdom

1Cor.15:33Evil communications corrupt good manners

C. The perverse (polluted) & froward (defiant) tongue:

Pro.8:13The froward (defiant, contrary) mouth do I hate

Pro.15:4Perverseness [in a tongue] is a **breach** in the **spirit**

Pro.26:18,19As a **madman** who casteth firebrands & death, so is the man that deceiveth...& saith, Am not I (joking)?

D. Foolishness & vain talk leads to mischief & ungodliness:

Pro.14:7Go from the presence of a foolish man, when thou perceivest not in him the lips of knowledge

Pro.15:14bThe mouth of fools feedeth on foolishness

Eccl.10:13The **beginning** of (his) words...is foolishness: & the **end** of his talk is mischievous **madness**

2Tim.2:16**Shun** profane & vain babblings: for they will increase unto more ungodliness

E. An uncontrolled tongue brings disaster:

Psa.109:17-20As he loved cursing, so let it come unto him

Pro.10:14bThe mouth of the foolish is near destruction

Pro.10:10bA prating (idly chattering) fool shall fall

Pro.12:13aThe wicked is snared by the transgression of his lips

Pro.13:3bHe that openeth wide his lips shall have destruction

Pro.17:20He that hath a perverse tongue falleth into mischief

Pro.18:7A fool's mouth...& his lips are the snare of his soul

Eccl.10:12bThe lips of a fool will swallow up himself

5. Controlling your tongue:

A. Refrain from corrupt communication:

Pro.4:24Put **away** from thee a froward mouth, & perverse lips

Eph.4:29aLet **no** corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth

Eph.5:4Neither filthiness (obscenity), nor foolish talking, nor jesting, but rather giving of thanks

Col.3:8Put...filthy communication **out** of your mouth

1Tim.6:20a**Avoiding** profane & vain babblings

B. Speak edifying things, not corrupt:

Eph.4:29No corrupt communication....but that which is...edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers

Col.4:6Let your speech be alway with **grace**, seasoned with salt

Tit.2:8Sound speech, that cannot be condemned

Pro.8:8,9All the words of My mouth are in righteousness; there is nothing froward or perverse in them

(See also Rom.15:2)

C. You can't control your own tongue by yourself:

Jam.3:8The tongue can **no** man tame

D. Only God can, so yield to Him:

Psa.45:1bMy tongue is the pen of a ready writer [the Lord]

Pro.16:1The preparations of the heart of man, & the answer of the tongue, is from the **Lord**

Isa.50:4The Lord **God** hath given me the tongue of the learned, that I...know how to speak [an encouraging] word

Lk.12:12The Holy Ghost shall teach you...what ye ought to say

1Pet.4:11If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God

E. Read & obey God's Word, & let it change you:

Psa.119:9(How) shall a young man cleanse his way? By taking heed...to Thy Word

Jn.15:3Now ye are clean through the Word

Eph.5:26That He might sanctify & cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word

1Pet.1:22aYe have purified your souls in obeying the truth

(See also Pro.6:20-23; Heb.10:22.)

6. Gossiping, backbiting & slander:

A. The Lord forbids you to gossip:

Lev.19:16Thou shalt **not** go up & down as a talebearer (gossip or slanderer) among thy people: I am the Lord

Exo.23:1aThou shalt not raise a false report

Eph.4:31Let all...evil speaking, be put away...with all malice

Tit.3:2aSpeak evil of no man

Jam.4:11Speak not evil one of another, brethren

1Pet.2:1(Lay) aside all malice, & guile...& all evil speakings

B. Warning against backbiting:

Pro.25:9 Debate thy cause with thy neighbour himself; & [tell] not a secret to another

2Cor.12:20 I fear...I shall not find you such as I would...lest there be ...backbitings, whisperings

C. Gossiping shows a lack of true faith & love:

Pro.10:18 He that uttereth a slander, is a **fool**

1Tim.5:11-13 When they have begun to wax wanton against Christ ...they learn to be...tattlers & busybodies

Jam.1:26 If any man seem to be religious, & bridleth not his tongue...this man's religion is **vain**

D. Gossiping is born of hatred:

Psa.38:12 They that seek my hurt speak mischievous things, & imagine deceits

Psa.41:7 All that hate me whisper together against me

E. Gossiping is of the devil:

1Tim.3:11 So must their wives be grave, **not** slanderers [literally: "**diabolos**", meaning false accuser, devil]

Rev.12:10 [The devil,] the accuser of our brethren

7. The punishment for gossiping:

A. Scriptural response to backbiters & talebearers:

Tit.1:10,11 There are many unruly & vain talkers...whose mouths must be stopped

Psa.32:9 [They] have no understanding: whose mouth must be held in with bit & bridle

Pro.25:23 Angry countenance (driveth away) a backbiting tongue

B. Part company with them if they don't change:

Psa.101:5 [King David said:] Whoso (privately) slandereth his neighbour, him will I cut off

Psa.101:7 He that telleth lies shall not tarry in my sight

Pro.20:19 He that goeth about as a talebearer (gossip) revealeth secrets: therefore [have nothing to do] with him

Pro.22:10Cast out a scorner, & contention shall go out

Pro.26:20Where there is no talebearer, the strife ceaseth

C. The Lord will judge them:

Mat.12:36,37Every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment

8. How to avoid criticising & gossiping about others:

A. Think about their virtues:

Phi.4:8Whatsoever things are...pure...lovely...if there be any **virtue**...think on **these** things

(See also Phi.1:3)

B. Remember the blessings for not backbiting:

Psa.15:1,3Who shall abide [before God]? He that backbiteth not ...nor taketh up a reproach against his neighbour

1Pet.3:10He that will...see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, & his lips (from) guile

Rev.14:5In their mouth was...no guile: they are before the throne

C. Make an effort to not speak evil:

Psa.17:3bI am **purposed** that my mouth shall not transgress

Psa.39:1aI will take **heed**...that I sin not with my tongue

Pro.30:32If thou hast thought evil, lay thine hand upon thy mouth [before you **speak** what you were thinking]

D. Don't even think evil:

Psa.19:14Let the words of my mouth, & the meditation of my heart, be acceptable in **Thy** sight

Eccl.10:20Curse not the king, no not in thy thought

Mk.7:21For out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts

2Cor.10:5Bringing...every thought to the obedience of **Christ**

E. You can't speak good if your heart is full of evil:

Mat.12:34How **can** ye, being evil, speak good things? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh

F. Beware of hypocritical flattery:

Psa.12:2They speak vanity...with flattering lips & double heart

Psa.28:3Wicked...speak peace, but mischief is in their hearts

Psa.55:21The words of his mouth were smoother than...oil, yet were they drawn swords

Psa.62:4They bless with their mouth, but curse inwardly

Pro.26:23Burning (fervently agreeing) lips (with) a wicked heart are like (earthenware) covered with silver

Pro.26:25,26When he speaketh fair, believe him not: for there are ...abominations in his heart

Ezk.33:31bWith their mouth they shew much love, but their heart goeth after their covetousness

9. Warning against judging others:

Mat.7:1Judge not, that ye be not judged

Mat.7:2With what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged

Mat.7:3-5Why beholdest the mote...in thy brother's eye, but considerest not beam that is in thine own eye?

Jn.7:24Judge not according to appearance...but righteous

Rom.2:1,2Thou art inexcusable...wherein thou judgest another...for thou that judgest doest the same things

Rom.2:3Thinkest thou...that judgest...& doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?

Rom.14:13aLet us not therefore judge one another any more

10. What to do when others speak evil of you:

A. Ignore it if you can; don't be offended:

Eccl.7:21,22Take no heed unto all words spoken...thine own heart knoweth thou thyself likewise hast cursed others

Psa.119:165Great peace have they which love Thy (Word): & nothing shall offend them

B. Don't speak evil of them in return:

1Pet.2:21-23 Follow (Christ's) steps...Who, when He was reviled, reviled not again (See also Isa.53:7,9)

1Pet.3:9 Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing

C. Let your good works disprove their lies:

Tit.2:7,8 Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is...contrary...(have) no evil thing to say of you

1Pet.2:12 Whereas they speak against you as evildoers, they may by your good works, glorify God

1Pet.2:15 With well doing...put to silence...foolish men

1Pet.3:16 Having a good (way of life); that, whereas they speak evil of you...they may be ashamed

D. Jesus remained silent before His accusers:

Isa.53:7 He was oppressed...yet He opened not His mouth

Mat.27:14 (Jesus) answered him (Pilate) to never a word

Lk.23:9 He (Herod) questioned Him (Jesus) in many words; but He answered him nothing

Lk.22:67,68 [Jesus knew that answering His enemies was pointless]

E. But there are times to speak out & give answer:

Acts 21:40 [Paul gave his defense to the mob in Jerusalem]

Acts 24:10 [Paul defended himself from his accusers before Felix]

Acts 26:1 [Paul's self-defense before Governor Festus & Agrippa]

1Pet.3:15 Be ready always to give an answer to every man that [sincerely] asketh you a reason

(See also Mat.10:18-20)

11. Arguments & contentions:

A. Avoid getting drawn into arguments:

Pro.17:14 Leave off contention, **before** it be meddled with

Pro.26:4 Answer not a fool according to his folly, lest thou also be like unto him

Pro.29:11b A wise man keepeth [his comments] in till afterwards

Phi.2:3 Let nothing be done through strife

2Tim.2:24 The servant of the Lord must **not** strive; but be patient

1Pet.3:9 Not rendering evil (insult) for (insult), or railing (reviling) for (reviling): but contrariwise blessing

(See also 2Ki.18:36)

B. Listen carefully & think about what you say:

Pro.15:28 The heart of the righteous studieth to answer

Pro.18:13 He that answereth a matter before he heareth it, it is folly & shame unto him

Jam.1:19 Be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath

C. Don't get provoked & answer rashly:

Pro.15:18b He that is slow to anger appeaseth strife

Pro.16:32 He that is slow to anger is better than the mighty

Pro.25:8 Go not forth hastily to strive

Pro.29:20 Seest thou a man that is hasty in his words? There is more hope of a fool than of him

Eccl.5:2 Be not rash with thy mouth...(nor) hasty to utter any thing...let thy words be few

D. Speak calmly:

Pro.15:1a A soft answer turneth away wrath

Pro.22:11 For the grace of his lips the king shall be his friend

E. What causes arguments & contention:

Pro.10:12a Hatred stirreth up strifes

Pro.13:10 Only by pride cometh contention

Pro.15:1b Grievous words stir up anger

Pro.15:18aA wrathful man stirreth up strife

Pro.18:6A fool's lips enter into contention

Pro.26:21As wood to fire; so a contentious man (kindles) strife

Pro.28:25aHe that is of a proud heart stirreth up strife

Pro.29:22An angry man stirreth up strife

Acts 13:45They were filled with envy, & spake against those things ...contradicting & blaspheming

1Tim.6:4He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions &...words, whereof cometh...strife

Jam.4:1Wars & fightings...come..of your lusts

(See also Pro.26:17)

F. The futility of arguing:

Job 6:25How forcible are right words! But what doth your arguing reprove?

Pro.9:7,8He that reproveth a scorner getteth to himself...shame ...reprove not a scorner, lest he hate thee

Pro.23:9Speak not in the ears of a fool: he will despise wisdom

Pro.29:9If a wise man contendeth with a foolish man, whether he (the foolish man) rage or laugh, there is no rest

G. Ending an argument:

Pro.17:9He that covereth (lets pass) a transgression seeketh love

Pro.20:3aIt is an honour for a man to cease from strife

Pro.22:10Cast out the scorner, & contention shall...cease

Col.3:13Forbearing (putting up with) one another, & forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any

(See also Gen.50:20,21)

H. Warning to those who "love a good argument":

Pro.17:19He loveth **transgression** that loveth strife

1Cor.3:3Whereas there is among you...strife....are ye not carnal, & walk as [carnal, worldly] men?

Jam.3:14,15If ye have bitter...strife in your hearts, glory not...this wisdom is **devilish**

I. The bad fruit of arguments:

Psa.106:33They provoked his (Moses') spirit, so that he spake unadvisedly with this lips

Pro.18:19A brother offended is harder to be won than a strong city...contentions are like bars of a castle

Acts 15:39The contention was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one from the other

Gal.5:15If ye bite & devour one another, take heed that ye be not **consumed** one of another

Jam.3:16Where...strife is, there is confusion & **every** evil work

J. When it is right to contend:

Pro.26:5Answer a fool according to his folly, lest he be wise in his own conceit

Pro.28:4Such as keep the law contend with (the wicked)

Pro.28:23He that rebuketh a man afterwards shall find more favour than he that flattereth

Acts 15:1,2"Except ye be circumcised, ye cannot be saved." Paul ...had no small dissension & disputation with them

Jude 3bYe should earnestly contend for the faith

K. Humbly explain to, correct & instruct the receptive:

Gal.6:1Restore such an one in the spirit of meekness

2Tim.2:25In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves (See also Jam.5:20)

1Pet.3:15Be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason...with meekness

12. Lying, deceit & bearing false witness:

A. God's Word warns us not to lie:

Lev.19:11Neither deal falsely, neither lie one to another

Pro.24:28 Be not a witness against thy neighbour without cause; & deceive not with thy lips

Eph.4:25 Putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour

Col.3:9 Lie not to one another, seeing ye have put off the old man with his deeds

B. What God thinks about lying:

Pro.12:22a Lying lips are an abomination to the Lord

C. God's judgment on wicked liars:

Psa.63:11b The mouth of them that speak lies shall be stopped

Pro.19:5 A false witness shall not be unpunished, & he that speaketh lies shall not escape

Pro.19:9 He that speaketh lies shall perish

Acts 5:1-10 [Ananias & Sapphira lied to the Holy Ghost & died]

(See also Psa.31:18; 35:11-20; Pro.12:19.)

Special chapter on the tongue: James 3

Unity

1. Unity or disunity?

A. The Lord wants us to have unity:

Psa.133:1 How good & how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity

1Cor.1:10 I beseech you...that there be no divisions among you, but...be perfectly joined together in the same mind

2Cor.13:11 Be ye of one mind, live in peace; & the God of love & peace shall be with you

Phi.1:27 Stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together

B. What He thinks of disunity:

Pro.6:16,19 These...doth the Lord **hate**: (they) are an **abomination** unto Him: he that soweth discord among brethren

Jam.3:14,15But if ye have...strife in your hearts, glory not....This descendeth not from above, but is devilish

2. How to work at keeping united:

Eph.4:3**Endeavouring** to keep the unity of the Spirit

A. Have the Word as a unifying standard:

1Cor.14:37Let him acknowledge that the things I write are the commandments of the Lord

Phi.3:16Let us walk by the same rule...mind the same thing

1Thes.2:13,14Ye received the Word of God which ye heard of us, ye ...became followers

B. Be agreeable & likeminded:

Rom.15:5,6God...grant you to be likeminded one toward another... that ye may with one mind & one mouth glorify God

Rom.12:16Be of the same mind one toward another...condescend to men of low estate

1Cor.1:10I beseech you...that ye all speak the same thing

Phi.2:2Be likeminded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind

(See also Acts 2:46; Phi.4:2.)

C. Be at peace with fellow-workers:

Rom.14:19Let us follow after the things which make for peace, & things wherewith one may edify another

Col.3:15Let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which ye are called in one body

1Thes.5:13Be at peace among yourselves

D. Have love & concern for one another:

Pro.10:12Hatred stirreth up strifes: but **love** covereth all sins

Rom.12:10Be kindly affectioned with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another (See also 1Thes.2:7,8)

1Cor.12:25,26There should be no schism in the body; but the members should have the same **care** one for another

Eph.4:16The whole body fitly joined together...maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love

E. Be kind, gentle & courteous to one another:

Eph.4:32Be ye kind...tenderhearted, forgiving one another

2Tim.2:24Not strive...be gentle unto all men, patient

1Pet.3:8Be ye all of one mind, having compassion...love as brethren, be pitiful (sympathetic), be courteous

1Cor.11:33When ye come together to eat, tarry one for another

(See also Pro.18:24)

F. Take people where they're at:

Rom.14:1Him that is weak in the faith receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations (See also Rom.14:2-21)

G. Avoid offending people:

1Cor.10:32,33Give none offence, neither...to the church of God.... I please all men in all things

Pro.18:19Brother offended is harder to be won than a strong city

H. Be careful what you say:

Pro.17:9bHe that repeateth a matter separateth very friends

2Tim.2:23Foolish questions avoid...they do gender strifes

Tit.3:2Speak evil of no man...gentle...meekness unto all men

(See also Jam.3:16,17; Eccl.5:2.)

I. Control your temper; be slow to speak:

Pro.14:29He that is slow to wrath is of great understanding

Pro.15:1A soft answer turneth away wrath

Pro.15:18He that is slow to anger appeaseth strife

Pro.25:8Go not forth hastily to strive [with thy neighbour]

Phi.2:3 Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory

Jam.1:19 Let every man be...slow to speak, slow to wrath

(See also Pro.3:30; 26:17.)

J. Humbly discuss disagreements with elders:

1Tim.5:1 Rebuke not an elder, but **intreat** him as a father

K. Sort out "oughts" before doing anything else:

Mat.5:23,24 First be reconciled to thy brother, then...offer gift

Mk.11:25 When...praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any

Jam.5:9 Grudge not one against another, lest ye be condemned

L. Avoid being partial or playing favourites:

1Tim.5:21 (Not) preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality (See also Jam.3:17)

Jam.2:1 Have not the faith of Jesus...with respect of persons

M. Value peace above selfish interests:

Rom.14:19-21 Let us follow after the things which make for peace

Rom.12:18 As much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men

(See also 1Cor.6:7; Phi.2:4.)

N. Share unselfishly with others:

Acts 4:32 And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart & of one soul...they had all things common

(See also 1Cor.10:33; 2Cor.8:9.)

O. Return good for evil:

Mat.5:44 Love your enemies, bless them that curse you

Rom.12:21 Overcome evil with good

1Thes.5:15 See that none render evil for evil...among yourselves

P. Retaliation forbidden:

(See Lev.19:18; Pro.20:22; 24:29; Rom.12:17,19; 1Pet.3:9.)

3. The fruits of unity:

A. Working together for a common goal:

2Ki.10:15Is thine heart right, as my heart is with thine heart? If it be, give me thine hand

Amos 3:3Can two walk [or work] together, except they be agreed?

Mat.18:19,20Where two or three are gathered in My name (Jesus), there am I in the midst of them

Acts 2:14Peter, standing up **with** the eleven, lifted up his voice

Phi.1:27With one mind, striving together for...the gospel

B. There is strength in unity:

Eccl.4:9,10Two are better than one...for if they fall, the one will lift up his fellow

Eccl.4:12If one [a foe] prevail against him, two shall withstand [the foe], & a three-fold cord is not...broken

Judg.20:11The men [army] were gathered against the city, knit together as one man

1Sam.14:6,7Jonathan said, Let us go over. His armourbearer said, Behold, I am with thee according to thy heart

(See also Neh.4:16,17)

C. Good fruit of united outreach:

Acts 2:1,2,41[Believers] all with one accord in one place [were filled with the Spirit, witnessed, & 3,000 souls were saved]

4. Unity of believers in Jesus:

A. Jesus' prayer that we be united as one:

Jn.17:11,21That they all may be one; as Thou, Father, art in Me, & I in Thee, that they also may be one in Us

Jn.17:22,23That they may be one, even as We are one: I in them, & Thou in Me, that they may be made perfect in one

B. We should be one body, working together unitedly:

Rom.12:5 We, being many, are one body in Christ, & every one members one of another

1Cor.12:12,13 All the members of one body, being many, are one body (See also 1Cor.10:17)

1Cor.12:27 Ye are the body of Christ, & members in particular

Eph.2:22 Ye are builded together...through the Spirit

(See also Eph.1:10; 2:19-21; 4:11,12; 1Cor.12:4-16.)

Col.1:17,18 (Jesus) is **head** of our body (See also Eph.4:15,16)

(See also 1Cor.3:9; 2Cor.6:1.)

C. Jesus' Spirit gives us peace with one another:

1Cor.14:33 God is the author...of **peace**, as in all the churches

2Cor.13:11 Brethren...live in peace; God of peace shall be with you

Gal.5:22 The fruit of the Spirit is...peace

Eph.2:14 He is our peace...hath broken down the wall between

Col.2:2 Your hearts **comforted**, being knit together in love

D. There should be no divisions because of race or sex:

1Cor.12:13 Whether Jews or Gentiles...(we) have been all made to drink into one Spirit

Gal.3:26,28 Neither Jew nor Greek...male or female: for ye are all one in Jesus

E. Or social or financial status:

1Cor.12:13 Whether...bond or free, (we) all have been made...one

Gal.3:28 Neither bond nor free...for ye are all one in Jesus

5. Causes of disunity:

A. Pride & lust:

Pro.13:10 Only by pride cometh contention

Pro.28:25He that is of a proud heart stirreth up strife

Jam.4:1-3Whence come fightings among you? From your lusts

B. Not walking in the Spirit:

1Cor.3:3Ye are carnal: there is among you strife & divisions

Gal.5:19-21Works of the flesh: Hatred, wrath, strifes

C. Ill feelings & hatred:

Pro.10:12Hatred stirreth up strifes: but love covereth all sins

Pro.16:28A froward man soweth strife, & a whisperer separateth

Pro.26:24He that hateth dissembleth with his lips

D. Envy & jealousy:

Rom.13:13Let us walk honestly...not in...strife & envying

1Cor.13:4Love...envieth not; Love vaunteth not itself

Gal.5:26Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another

Jam.3:14,16If ye have bitter envying...in your hearts, glory not. For where envying...is, there is...every evil work

(See also Pro.14:30; 27:4; Gal.5:19-21; Tit.3:3.)

E. Favouritism & partiality:

Acts 6:1There arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected

F. Self-exaltation & desire for leadership:

Num.12:1-15[Miriam & Aaron rebel against Moses, desiring power]

Num.16:1-35[Korah rebels against Moses, desiring leadership]

Lk.22:24There was a strife among them, (who) should be greatest

Acts 20:30Of your own selves shall men arise...to draw away disciples after them

Gal.5:26 Let us not desire vain glory, provoking...one another

3Jn.9-11 Diotrephes, who loveth to have the preeminence among them receiveth us not

G. Arguing over minor doctrines & theorising:

1Tim.6:3-5a Knowing nothing, doting about questions & strifes of words, whereof cometh...strife

H. Bitterness:

Heb.12:15 Lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, & thereby **many** be defiled

I. Anger & a quick temper:

Pro.15:18 A wrathful man stirreth up strife

Pro.29:22 An angry man stirreth up strife, & a furious man

J. Repeating things we know we shouldn't:

Pro.17:9 He that repeateth a matter separateth very friends

Pro.26:20 Where there is no talebearer, the strife ceaseth (See also Jam.1:26)

K. Inability to stop arguing:

Pro.20:3 It is an honour to cease from strife: but every fool will be meddling

Pro.17:14 The beginning of strife is as when one letteth out water ...leave off contention

6. What disunity results in:

A. Not being able to work together:

Amos 3:3 Can two walk together, except they be agreed?

Acts 15:36-40 Contention so sharp [between Paul & Barnabus] that they departed asunder [& went separate ways]

B. It destroys God's work:

Mat.12:25 Every house divided against itself...shall not stand

Mk.3:24 If kingdom be divided against itself...cannot stand

(See also Num.32:1-7)

C. Longstanding divisions:

Pro.18:19A brother offended harder to be won than strong city

D. Creates sectarian divisions & man-worship:

1Cor.3:3,4There (are) divisions...For one saith, I am of Paul; & another, I am of Apollos

(See also 1Cor.11:18; 3:21-23.)

E. Backbiting & rumours:

Pro.16:28A whisperer separateth chief friends

2Cor.12:20I fear...lest there be backbitings, whisperings

F. Opens the door to every kind of evil:

Jam.3:16For where...strife (is), there is confusion & **every** evil work

7. How to deal with disunity:

1Thes.5:14Warn them that are unruly

A. When it's just between us & a fellow worker:

Pro.25:9Debate thy cause with thy neighbour himself; & discover not a secret to another

Mat.18:15Tell him his fault between thee & him alone

Lk.17:4If he trespass 7 times in a day, & 7 times a day turn again, saying, I repent...forgive

1Pet.4:8Charity (love) shall cover the multitude of sins

(See Mat.18:21,22)

B. When there is a division in the work, let pastors & elders

settle the disputes:

Acts 15:2When (they) had no small dissension, they determined (to) go to the elders about this question

Acts 15:7,12When there had been much disputing, Peter rose up, & (spoke). Then all the multitude kept silence

Gal.6:1If a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one

C. Let it pass if it's not an important disagreement:

Rom.14:2,3One believeth that he may eat all things: another... eateth [only] herbs

Rom.14:4-6One esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day alike

8. Excommunication:

A. Excommunication of those who cause division:

Pro.22:10Cast out the scorner, &...strife shall cease

Mat.18:15-17If he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen

Rom.16:17Mark them which cause divisions & offences...& avoid

1Cor.5:11-13With such an one no, not to eat...put away wicked

2Thes.3:6We command you...that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly

1Tim.6:3,5bIf any man teach otherwise, & consent not to...the doctrine...from such withdraw thyself

Tit.3:10An heretick after first & second admonition, reject

2Jn.10,11If any...bring not this doctrine, receive him not

(See also 1Tim.6:3-5; Jude 12a.)

B. Partial excommunication:

2Thes.3:14,15If any obey not...have no company with him...yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish as a brother

9. Restoration to fellowship:

Gal.6:1If a man be overtaken in a fault...restore [him]

2Tim.2:25,26In meekness instructing those...that they may recover

Jam.5:19,20If any of you err from the truth, & one convert him

(See also Lk.15:11-24 re: return of the prodigal son)

10. When contentions & disputes are necessary:

—To refute false doctrine or serious wrong behaviour:

Jude 3 Ye **should** earnestly contend for the **faith**

Jn.7:43 There was a division among people because of (Jesus)

Acts 15:1,2 "Except ye be circumcised, ye cannot be saved." Paul ...had no small dissension & disputation with them

Gal.2:11-14 When Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face...I (rebuked) Peter before them all

1Tim.5:20. Them that sin, rebuke before all that others may fear

Important chapters on unity: Psa.133; Jn.17; 1Cor.12; Eph.4; Rom.12.

Discipleship

1. What is a disciple?

A. A "follower of the teaching" & the Master Teacher:

Mat.10:24,25 The disciple [should] be **as** his master (See Lk.6:40)

Jn.12:26 If any man **serve** Me, let him **follow** Me

Jn.13:15 I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done

1Pet.2:21 Christ (left) us an example...follow His steps

B. A disciple abides (lives, dwells) in Jesus:

Jn.15:4 Abide in Me, & I in you

Jn.15:9,10 If ye keep My commandments, ye shall abide in My love

1Jn.2:6 He that...abideth in Him ought...to walk as He walked

1Jn.3:24 He that keepeth His commandments dwelleth in Him

(See also 2Cor.5:17; 1Jn.2:5,10,24,28.)

C. A disciple serves Jesus out of love & gratitude:

Jn.14:21,23If a man love Me, he will keep My Words

1Cor.6:19,20Ye are not your own...for ye are bought with a price

2Cor.5:14The love of Christ constraineth (motivates) us

Eph.5:1,2Be followers of God...walk in love, as Christ loved us

Phi.1:21For me to live is Christ, & to die is gain

(See also Exo.21:5,6)

D. A disciple must love Jesus above all else & all others:

Mat.6:24No man can serve two masters: he will hate one, & love the other...hold to one & despise the other

Mat.10:37He that loveth father, mother, son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me

Lk.14:26If any man come to Me & [by comparison] hate not his father, mother, children...he cannot be My disciple

2. A disciple's job:

A. To win souls ("bear fruit"):

Jn.15:8Bear much fruit, **so** shall ye be My disciples

Mat.4:19Follow Me, & I will make you fishers of men

Mk.16:15Go ye into all the world & preach the gospel to every creature

Lk.9:59,60Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou & preach

(See also Mat.7:20; Rom.7:4.)

B. To train more disciples:

Mat.28:19Go therefore & teach [make **disciples** of] all nations

Jn.21:15-17Lovest thou Me? Feed [teach & instruct] My sheep

2Tim.2:2Things which thou hast heard...[teach] faithful men

(See also Acts 20:20)

3. A disciple is one who obeys the Master:

Mat.12:48-50 **Who** are My brethren?...His **disciples**...whosoever shall **do** the will of My Father...is My brother

Jn.8:31 If ye continue in My Word, **then** are ye My disciples

4. Dedicating oneself totally to the Lord:

A. Abandoning other pursuits to follow Jesus:

Mat.13:44 Kingdom is like treasure hid in a field...selleteth all that he hath & buyeth that field

Mat.13:45,46 Found pearl of great price...sold all he had & bought it

Lk.14:33 He...that forsaketh not **all**...cannot be My disciple

B. Forsaking the pursuit of material possessions:

Mat.6:19,20 Lay **not** up for yourselves treasures upon earth

Mk.10:21 Sell whatsoever thou hast...& take up cross & follow

Lk.12:15 A man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth

Acts 4:34,35a Possessors of lands or houses sold them, & brought the prices...& laid them down at apostles' feet

Phi.3:8 Jesus...for Whom I have suffered the loss of all things, & do count them but dung

(See also Mat.19:22; Lk.12:33.)

C. Forsaking worldly & materialistic ambitions:

Mat.6:24 Ye cannot serve God & mammon

Mk.4:19 The cares of this world, & deceitfulness of riches...choke the Word...it becometh unfruitful

Mk.10:17-25 [Jesus challenged the rich young ruler to forsake all]

Jn.6:27 Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for

2Tim.2:4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with...this life

Heb.12:1 Lay aside **every** weight...let us run the race

(See also 2Cor.6:17)

5. The decision to dedicate oneself to Christ as a disciple:

A. Count the cost first:

Lk.14:27-32 Intending to build...sitteth down & counteth the cost

Pro.24:6 By wise counsel thou shalt make thy war

B. Burn your bridges behind you:

1Ki.19:19,21 [Elisha, deciding to follow Elijah, burned his plow & yoke & sacrificed the oxen]

(See also Acts 4:34,37)

C. Be single-minded & don't look back:

Lk.9:61,62 No man...looking back, is fit for the Kingdom of God

Phi.3:13,14 Forgetting things which are behind, & reaching forth...I press toward the...high calling of God

Heb.11:27 (Moses) forsook Egypt...**endured**, as seeing Him (God)

D. Some made a sudden decision to follow:

Mat.9:9 As Jesus passed...He saw Matthew sitting at receipt of custom: Follow Me. And he arose, & followed Him

Jn.4:35 Say not ye, There are yet 4 months, & then cometh harvest? Look on the fields, they are white **already**

1Ki.18:21 How long halt ye...? If the Lord be God, follow Him

Heb.4:7 Today if ye...hear His voice, harden not your hearts

E. Delay & excuses can result in never serving God:

Lk.9:57-62 Let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home

F. Some took more time to count the cost:

Lk.14:28-30 Sit...down first, & count the cost

Peter & Andrew first met Jesus at the Jordan (Jn.1:37-42); They followed Him back to Galilee (Jn.1:43; 2:1,2); He called them some time later & they **then** forsook all to follow Him fulltime (Mat.4:18-22; Mk.1:16-20).

6. Different ministries of disciples:

A. Being a disciple does not always mean abandoning all other pursuits:

Mat.27:57 Rich man...named Joseph, who **also** was Jesus' **disciple**

Jn.19:38-40 Joseph of Arimathaea, a **disciple** of Jesus, secretly

Acts 9:36,39b A **disciple** named Tabitha [made coats & garments]

(See also Mk.14:8a)

B. Some disciples had prominent positions in society:

Mk.15:43 Joseph of Arimathaea, an honourable counsellor (See also Lk.23:50-51.)

Acts 19:31 Certain of the chief of Asia...were (Paul's) friends

Acts 10:24, 44-48 [Cornelius the centurion, his relatives & friends]

Rom.16:23 Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you

C. Sacrificial giving—a requirement for all disciples:

Lk.8:3 Joanna the wife of Chuza...& Susana, & many others, which ministered unto Him of their substance

Acts 11:29 The disciples, every man according to his ability

2Cor.8:14,15 That...your abundance may be a supply for their want

1Tim.6:17,18 (Command) them that are rich...(be) ready to distribute

D. The disciple's attitude towards those who can't devote their full time to serving God:

Mk.10:21 [Jesus **loved** the rich young ruler, even though he didn't forsake all]

Lk.9:49,50 We forbid him, because he followeth not with us. But Jesus said, Forbid him not.

E. Not all are capable of or fit to be His disciples:

Lk.8:38,39The man...besought Him that he might be with Him: but Jesus sent him away, saying, Return to thine house (See also Mk.5:18-20)

Jn.6:53-61,66[Jesus weeded out weak followers who were there for the wrong motives]

Mat.22:14For many are called, but few are chosen

(See also Jer.12:5 & Mat.13:47,48.)

F. Different degrees of discipleship:

The 3 innermost disciples (Mk.9:2; 14:32,33); the 12 apostles (Mk.3:13-19); the "other 70" (Lk.10:1); the "multitude of the disciples" (Lk.19:37)

7. Discipleship & family obligations:

A. Putting God's service even before loved ones:

Psa.45:10,11Forget also thine own people, & thy father's house

Mat.10:36,37He that loveth [family] more than Me is not worthy

Mat.12:48-50Who are my brethren? Whosoever shall do (God's) will

Mat.19:29Forsaken houses, brethren, sisters, father, mother, wife, children, lands, for My name's sake

Mk.1:19,20James & John...left their father & went after Him

B. Jesus' call to utter commitment:

Lk.9:59,60Suffer me...to go & bury my father. Jesus said, Let the dead bury the dead

Lk.9:61,62Let me...bid them farewell at home. Jesus said, No man...looking back, is fit for the Kingdom

(See also Exo.20:3; Mat.22:37.)

8. Discipleship & "losing your own life":

A. Forsake own life, plans, ambitions:

Mat.16:25Whosoever will lose his life for My sake shall find it

Lk.14:26If any...hate not his own life, he cannot be My disciple

Mat.6:21 Where your treasure is, there will your heart be also

Lk.9:59,61 [Wrong attitude:] I will follow Thee, but...**me first**

B. Discipleship—A life of death to self:

Mat.6:33 Seek **first** the Kingdom of God

Mat.10:38 He that taketh not his cross, & followeth after Me

Mat.16:24 If any man come after Me, let him deny himself

Mk.10:21b Come, take up the cross, & follow Me

Jn.12:24 Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground & die

Jn.12:25 He that loveth his life shall lose it

2Cor.5:15 They should **not** live unto themselves, but unto Him which died for them

9. The path the disciple follows:

A. A disciple obeys God's will & follows:

Num.22:18 I cannot go beyond the Word of the Lord, to do less or more

Lk.6:46 Why call Me, Lord, Lord, & do not the things I say?

Lk.14:27 Whosoever doth not...come after Me, cannot be My disciple

Jn.2:5 Whatsoever He saith unto you, do it

Jn.8:31 If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My disciples indeed

Rev.14:4 They...follow the Lamb whithersoever He goeth

B. A disciple humbly submits to his pastors & spiritual overseers:

1Cor.11:1 Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ

1Cor.16:16 Submit yourselves unto such, & to every one that helpeth with us & laboureth

Phi.3:17 Be followers of me &...them which walk as ye have us for an (example)

1Thes.1:6 Ye became followers of us, & of the Lord, having received the Word

Heb.13:7Them which have rule over you...whose faith follow

Heb.13:17Obey them that have rule over you, submit yourselves

C. Disciples obey & follow God, even without understanding details:

Jn.21:21,22What will (he) do? What is that to thee? Follow thou Me

2Cor.5:7We walk by faith, not by sight

Heb.11:8Abraham went out, not knowing whither he went

D. Disciples willingly adapt & change:

Lk.9:3Take nothing for your journey, neither...money

Lk.22:35-36I sent you without purse...But **now**...take it

E. Love other disciples & work in unity with them:

Jn.13:35Ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another

Phi.1:27With one mind striving together for the...gospel

10. The life of a disciple:

A. Give sacrificially & be willing to call nothing your own:

Mat.5:42Give to him that asketh thee...turn not thou away

Lk.3:11He that hath two coats, (give) to him that hath none

Lk.6:30Him that taketh thy goods, ask them not again

Acts 2:44,45And all that believed...had all things common

Acts 4:32-35Neither said any that ought of the things which he possessed was his own; they had all things common

1Tim.6:7,8Having food & raiment let us be therewith content (See also Lk.9:23-26)

B. Disciples must be willing to endure hardships:

Lk.9:57,58I will follow Thee...Foxes have holes, but the Son of man hath not where to lay His head

2Tim.2:3Endure hardness as a good soldier of Jesus Christ

(See also 2Cor.11:23-28)

C. Be willing to endure persecution:

Phi.1:29Not only to believe on Him, but also to suffer

2Tim.3:12All that live godly in Jesus shall suffer persecution

Acts 15:26Men that have hazarded their lives for Jesus Christ (See also Jn.16:33)

D. Be willing to literally die for Jesus:

Acts 21:13I am ready not to be bound only, but to die for Jesus

Phi.1:20Christ be magnified...whether by (my) life or death

(See also Acts 20:24; Heb.11:35-38; Rev.12:11.)

E. Be zealous & enthusiastic:

Eccl.9:10aWhatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might

Gal.4:18It is good to be zealous...always in a good thing

Rev.3:15I would thou wert cold or **hot**

F. An unswerving continuance in God's Word:

Jn.8:31If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My disciples

11. The benefits of discipleship:

A. Discipleship a privilege:

Psa.4:3Lord hath set apart him that is godly for Himself

Mat.22:14For many are called, but few are chosen

Phi.3:14The prize of the **high calling** of God in Christ Jesus

2Tim.1:9Who hath saved us, & called us with an holy calling

(See also Mat.11:25; 13:16,17; Lk.8:10.)

B. Rewards for serving Jesus:

Mat.10:39He that loseth his life for My sake shall find it

Mat.19:27-29We have forsaken all, & followed; what shall we have? ...Ye shall sit upon thrones...receive an 100-fold

Mk.10:28-30Shall receive an 100-fold now in this time

Lk.12:33Sell that ye have...provide yourselves a treasure in the heavens that faileth not

Jn.12:26bIf any man serve Me, him will My Father honour

1Cor.2:9Eye hath not seen...the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him

(See also Mat.5:10-12; 16:25,27; Jn.12:25; 2Tim.2:12.)

C. Faithful overcomers rewarded:

Rev.2:26-28He that overcometh...will I give power over nations

Rev.3:21Him that overcometh will I grant to sit with Me

Mat.25:14-29[The parable of faithfulness with the talents]

Lk.12:42-44Faithful steward...Lord will make him ruler (See also Lk.12:35-38)

Lk.19:12-26[Parable of nobleman giving pounds to his servants]

12. Jesus' last words & prayer for His disciples:

(See John chapters 14-17; Acts 1:8.)

Christian's Relationship to Worldly Society, The

1. Christians do not belong to this world (society):

Jn.15:19Ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world

A. We are citizens of Heaven:

Heb.11:14They...declare plainly that they **seek** a country

Heb.11:15,16Now they desire a **better** country...an **Heavenly**

Heb.13:14 Here have we no continuing city...we seek one to come

Jn.14:2,3 I go to prepare a place for you...that where I am, there ye may be also

(See also Jn.18:36)

B. We're sojourners in this world, pilgrims passing through:

Heb.11:13 Confessed they were strangers & pilgrims on the earth

Psa.39:12b I am a stranger with Thee, & a sojourner

Psa.119:19a I am a stranger in the earth

C. Earthly lands & homes are only temporary:

Lev.25:23b The land is **Mine** (God's); for ye are strangers & sojourners with Me

D. Our life on earth is brief, so we do not settle here:

1Chr.29:15 We are strangers before Thee, & sojourners...our days on the earth are as a shadow

1Pet.1:17 Pass time of your sojourning here in fear (of God)

(See also Psa.39:4,5)

E. Guard against thinking this world is your permanent home:

Psa.49:11,12 Their inward thought is, that their houses shall continue for ever, & their dwelling places

2. Though in this world, we are not to be part of it:

A. Christians are not part of this present worldly society:

Jn.17:14-16 They are not of the world, even as I (Jesus) am not

Rom.12:2a Be not conformed to this world

Eph.2:2,3 In time **past** ye walked according to the course of this world

Gal.6:14 The cross of...Christ, by whom the world is crucified (dead) unto me, & I unto the world

Phi.2:15 The sons of God...in the midst of a crooked & perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world

1Jn.4:4-6They are of the world...we are of God

1Jn.5:19We are of God, & the whole world lieth in wickedness (malignant evil)

(See also 1Pet.2:9)

B. We are not to be unequally yoked with unbelievers:

2Cor.6:14Be not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness?

2Cor.6:15What part hath he that believeth with an infidel?

C. We are not to have close friendship with the Christ-rejecting worldly:

Pro.1:15My son, walk not thou...with them; refrain thy foot

Pro.24:1Be not envious against (of) evil men, neither desire to be with them

1Cor.10:20,21I would not that ye should fellowship with devils. Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, &...of devils

Eph.5:11Have no fellowship with the...works of darkness

(See also Pro.4:14-17; 13:20.)

D. We are to be separate from the worldly:

Isa.52:11Go ye out from thence, touch no unclean thing; go ye out of the midst of [them]; be ye clean

2Cor.6:17Come out from among them, & be separate...touch not

Rev.18:4Come out of her, My people, that ye be not partakers

E. Do not become entirely separate; we must witness:

Jn.17:15Not that Thou shouldest take them **out** of the world, but ...**keep** them from the evil

Jn.17:18As Thou hast sent Me into the world, even so have I sent them into the world [to witness]

Mk.16:15Go ye into all the world, & preach the gospel

F. Marriage with the unbelieving & worldly is discouraged:

Deut.7:3,4Neither shalt thou make marriages with them...for they will turn away thy son from following Me

Josh.23:12,13If ye do in any wise...make marriages with them...they shall be snares & traps unto you

1Ki.11:1-8King Solomon loved many strange women...his wives turned away his heart after other gods

Neh.13:26,27Solomon...was **beloved** of his God...nevertheless even **him** did outlandish women cause to sin

1Cor.7:39She is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only [let her marry] in the **Lord**

1Cor.7:12-16[If already married to an unbeliever, have faith, you may yet win them by your Christian example]

(See also Gen.26:34,35; 27:46; Judg.14:1-3; Ezra 9:1,2; Mal.2:11,12.)

3. Our attitude toward worldly values:

A. Caution not to love this present world:

Jam.4:4The friendship of the world is enmity with God

1Jn.2:15,16Love not the world, neither the things that are in world

B. The pilgrim's attitude:

1Pet.2:11As strangers & pilgrims, abstain from fleshly [worldly] lusts, which war against the soul

Tit.2:12,13Denying ungodliness & worldly lusts...live soberly...in this present world; looking for that blessed hope

Heb.11:24-27Moses...choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God...forsook Egypt

Jam.1:27Pure religion...to keep unspotted from the world

1Pet.1:17(God) judgeth...every man's work, [so] pass the time of your sojourning here in fear

2Pet.3:11,14Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be

1Jn.2:16,17The lust of the flesh, & the lust of the eyes...is of the world. And the world passeth away

C. We should resist being influenced by trends, fads & media:

Exo.23:2aThou shalt not follow a multitude to do evil

Psa.1:1Blessed is man that walketh not in counsel of ungodly

Pro.1:10My son, if sinners entice thee, consent thou not

Rom.12:2aBe not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed

1Cor.7:31bThe **fashion** of this world passeth away

Col.2:8Beware lest any man spoil you through...vain deceit (See 1Pet.3:2-4 re: fashions.)

D. Warning against indiscriminate worldly entertainment:

Psa.101:3I will set no wicked thing before mine eyes

Psa.119:37Turn away mine eyes from beholding vanity

Isa.33:15He that walketh righteously...shutteth his eyes from seeing evil

2Ki.17:15bThey followed vanity, & became vain, & went after the heathen that were round about them

E. The detrimental effect of this wicked world on believers:

2Pet.2:7,8Lot...in seeing & hearing [filthy Sodomites], vexed (tormented) his righteous soul...with their unlawful deeds

2Pet.3:17Beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your steadfastness

F. Peer pressure & influence:

1Ki.12:3-16[King Rehoboam foolishly followed the counsel of] the young men that were grown up with him

G. Don't compromise or tolerate worldly ways:

Exo.23:32Make no covenant with them, nor with their gods

Exo.23:33They shall not dwell in thy land...for if thou serve their gods, it will surely be a snare unto thee

1Tim.5:22Neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep...pure

H. Avoid wanton worldly parties & activities:

Rom.13:13,14 Not in rioting & drunkenness, not in chambering (licentiousness)...fulfil [not] lusts

1Pet.4:3,4 [We are not to indulge in drunken parties & revellings]

(See also Eph.2:2,3; Tit.2:12.)

I. But don't go to the opposite extreme:

Mat.9:9-13 [The self-righteous demanded:] Why eateth your Master with publicans & sinners?

1Cor.10:27 [We **can** accept invitations to banquets & feasts]

4. If possible, live peaceably with others in order to win them to the Lord:

A. Peaceable relations with others are preferable:

Rom.12:18 As much as lieth in (depends upon) you, live peaceably with **all** men

Pro.16:7 Lord...maketh even his enemies to be at peace w/ him

Jer.29:7 Seek the peace of the city...& pray unto the Lord for it: for in the peace thereof shall **ye** have peace

Mat.5:25 Agree with thine adversary quickly...lest at any time

Col.4:5 Walk in wisdom toward them that are without

1Tim.2:1,2 [Pray] that we may lead a quiet & peaceable life

B. Try to relate to their way of thinking, in order to win them:

1Cor.9:19-22 Unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain Jews. I am made all things to all men

1Cor.10:32 Give none offence, neither to Jews, nor to Gentiles

1Cor.10:33 I please all men...that they may be saved

C. Identify with them by giving your secular background & credentials:

Acts 22:3 I am a man...brought up in this city...taught according to the law of the fathers...as ye all are

Acts 21:39 I am...of Tarsus, a citizen of no mean city

(See also Acts 16:36-38; 22:25-28.)

5. Caution against compromising with the world:

Gal.1:10 Do I seek to please men? If I yet pleased **men**, I should not be the servant of **Christ**

A. Caution against pleasing to the point of compromising:

Lk.6:26 Woe unto you, when all men speak well of you

2Ki.5:17,18 In this thing the Lord pardon Thy servant, that...I bow myself in the house of Rimmon (a heathen god)

B. We should stand up for, & not be ashamed of, our faith:

Mk.8:38 Whosoever shall be ashamed of Me & of My Words in this ...sinful generation; of him shall **(I)** be ashamed

Rom.1:16 I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ

2Tim.1:8a Be not thou ashamed of the testimony of our Lord

1Pet.4:16 If any suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed

C. We are not of this world, & it hates us for that:

Lk.6:22 Men...shall separate you from their company, & reproach

Jn.15:18,19 Because ye are not of the world...world hateth you

1Pet.4:4 They think it strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you

6. The importance of an honest, sincere example:

A. Be a good example:

Mat.5:16 Let your light so shine...that they may see your **good works**, & glorify your Father in Heaven

Rom.13:3b Do...good, & thou shalt have praise of the [rulers]

1Thes.5:22 Abstain from all appearance of evil

1Tim.4:12 Be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity (love)

1Pet.2:13,14 Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake...for the praise of them

1Pet.2:15With well doing...put to silence ignorance of foolish

Lk.6:27Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you

B. We are commanded to be honest in our dealings:

Rom.12:17bProvide things honest in the sight of all men

2Cor.8:21Providing for honest things...in the sight of men

1Thes.4:12aWalk honestly toward them that are without

Tit.2:10aNot purloining (stealing, pilfering), but showing all good fidelity

1Pet.2:12Having your (way of life) honest among the Gentiles

(See also Rom.13:13a; Heb.13:18.)

C. Do not bring reproach upon the cause of Christ:

Rom.14:16Let not then your good be evil spoken of

2Cor.6:3Giving none offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed

1Tim.5:14bGive none occasion to adversary to speak reproachfully

(See also Rom.2:23,24; 1Tim.6:1; Tit.2:5.)

D. Be blameless & innocent:

Mat.10:16Sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, & harmless (innocent) as doves

Phi.2:15Blameless & harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke

Tit.1:6Blameless...having children not accused of riot

E. Don't let your liberties become a "stumbling block" to others:

Rom.14:13-21No man put a stumblingblock...in his brother's way [that we may be]...approved of men

1Cor.6:12All things are lawful...but all things not expedient

1Cor.8:8-13Take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumbling block to them that are weak

1Pet.2:16Not using your liberty for a cloak of maliciousness

7. Secular work & employment:

A. Christians are instructed to do honest work:

Eph.4:28Let him labour, working with his hands the thing (profession) which is good

1Thes.4:11,12Work with your own hands, as we commanded you; that ye may have lack of nothing

2Thes.3:10-12If any would not work, neither should he eat

Tit.3:14Let ours learn to maintain good works (profess honest trades) for necessary uses

B. We must keep our priorities straight:

Acts 20:35Labouring ye ought to support weak...blessed to give

Eph.4:28Let him labour, working...that he may have to **give**

1Cor.7:31They that **use** this world, as not abusing it

C. Don't labour to be rich, but merely for your needs:

Lk.12:15Beware of covetousness...a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth

1Tim.6:8Having food & raiment let us therewith be content

D. Consider the fate of those who covet riches:

Psa.49:16-20[The fate of those who seek riches in this world]

Mk.10:24,25How hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter

1Tim.6:9,10They that will (desire to) be rich fall into...snare...erred from the faith...pierced with sorrows

Jam.1:10,11The rich...is made low...withereth...perisheth

(See also Jam.5:1-4)

E. Warning regarding wrong attitudes:

Job 31:24,25,If I have...said to gold, Thou art my confidence...I should

28have denied God that is above

Hag.1:6b,9It came to little...because ye run every man unto his own house [& neglected God's work]

Lk.12:19-21Soul, thou hast much goods laid up...take thine ease

1Tim.6:10The love of money is the root of all evil

Rev.3:15-18Thou sayest, "I am rich, & increased with goods, & have need of nothing." Thou art wretched, poor, naked

8. The work of pastors, full-time Christian workers & missionaries:

A. The compensation of pastors & teachers:

1Tim.5:17,18They who labour in the Word & doctrine...the labourer is worthy of his reward (wages)

1Cor.9:6-9Who feedeth a flock, & eateth not of the milk of flock?

1Cor.9:13They which minister about holy things live of the things of the temple

B. The work of missionaries is preaching the gospel; they are reapers in God's harvest & are worthy of wages:

Jn.4:35Look on the [mission] fields; for they are white already to harvest

Mat.9:37,38The harvest [of souls] is plenteous, but the labourers are few...send **labourers** into His harvest

Jn.4:36He that reapeth receiveth **wages**, & gathereth fruit unto life eternal

1Cor.9:13,14The Lord ordained that they which **preach** the gospel should live **of** the gospel

1Cor.9:10He that ploweth...& thresheth..should be par taker

C. Christians with secular jobs helping support the Lord's workers:

Rom.15:27If [they] have been made partakers of their **spiritual** things, their duty is to minister...**carnal** things

1Cor.9:11If we have sown unto you spiritual things...we shall reap your carnal things

Gal.6:6Let him that is taught in the Word communicate (give materially) unto him that teacheth

Lk.8:3Joanna, the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward...ministered unto Him (Jesus) of their substance

Lk.10:7 Eating such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire (wages) (See also Mat.10:10b)

(See 1Thes.2:9; 2Cor.11:8.)

D. God's workers sometimes hold secular jobs also:

Acts 18:1-3 He (Paul) was of the same craft, he...wrought: for by their occupation they were tentmakers

(See also Acts 20:34,35; 1Cor.4:11,12.)

E. But when possible, they should avoid time-consuming secular jobs & devote their full time to their main work:

Jn.6:27 Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life

1Cor.7:23 Ye are bought...be not ye the servants of men

1Cor.9:6,7 Have not we power to forbear working [at secular employment]?

2Tim.2:4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with affairs of this life; that he may please Him (Jesus)

9. A Christian's relationship to worldly governments:

A. Try to be good citizens & obey the government:

Rom.13:1 Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. The powers (authorities) that be are ordained of God

Tit.3:1 Put them in mind to be subject...to obey magistrates

1Pet.2:17 Honour all men. Fear God. Honour the king

B. Most governments & laws are for our good & protection:

Acts 21:30-35 [Roman soldiers rescued Paul from a hostile mob]

Acts 23:10 [Romans prevented Jews from pulling Paul in pieces]

Acts 25:15,16 It is not the manner of the Romans to deliver any man

C. Pray for the government & officials:

Ecc1.10:20Curse not the king, no not in thy thought

1Tim.2:1I exhort that...prayers...be made for kings, & for all that are in authority

D. Perform required national & community duties:

Mat.22:21Render unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's

Rom.13:7Render to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute

E. However, we must obey God above all:

Acts 4:19,20[We are not bound to obey secular laws which cause us to disobey God, or which forbid witnessing]

Acts 5:29We ought to obey God rather than men

10. The governments of man:

A. God rules the governments of men:

Pro.8:15,16By Me kings reign, &...princes rule...even all the judges of the earth

Dan.4:32,35The most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, & giveth it to whomsoever He will

Jn.19:10,11Thou (Pilate) couldst have no power at all against Me except it were given thee from above

B. God has allowed the devil a certain amount of control:

Lk.4:5,6All the kingdoms of the world [are] delivered unto me (Satan); & to whomsoever I will I give it

2Cor.4:4[Satan is called] the god of this world

11. Christians & secular educational systems:

A. Much modern secular education is godless or anti-God:

Job 21:14They say unto God, Depart from us; for we desire not the knowledge of Thy ways

Jer.4:22They have none understanding: they are wise to do evil

Rom.1:28They did not like to retain God in their knowledge

2Cor.11:3I fear, lest...as the serpent beguiled Eve...so your minds ...be corrupted from...Christ

Col.2:6-8Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy... after tradition of men, not [according to] Christ

B. The wisdom of this world:

Jer.8:9They have rejected the Word of the Lord; & **what** wisdom is **in** them?

Zech.7:11,12They stopped their ears, that they should not hear...lest they hear the Words which the Lord sent

Rom.1:21,22Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools

1Cor.3:19The wisdom of this world is foolishness with God

2Tim.3:7Ever learning, & never able to come to the knowledge of the truth

(See also 1Cor.1:17-29; 2:1-16; 3:18-20.)

C. Most worldly knowledge is not profitable:

1Cor.8:1,2Knowledge puffeth up, but (love) edifieth

2Tim.4:3Heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears

D. Jesus & His disciples were not highly educated:

Lk.1:80The child (John) grew...& was in the deserts

Jn.7:15How knoweth this man letters, having never learned?

Acts 4:13When they...perceived that they were unlearned & ignorant men, they marvelled

1Cor.1:26,27Not many wise men after the flesh...are called

(See also Psa.8:2; Lk.10:21.)

Persecution

1. Persecution promised to all followers of Jesus:

2Tim.3:12Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution

Phi.1:29Given not only to believe on Him, but also to suffer

Mat.10:17 Beware of men: they **will** deliver you up...scourge

Mat.24:9 Deliver you up...ye shall be **hated** of **all** nations

Mk.10:30 Shall receive 100-fold now...**with** persecutions

Lk.21:12 They shall lay their hands on you & persecute you

Jn.15:20 If they have persecuted **Me**, they will persecute **you**

Jn.16:33 In the World ye **shall** have tribulation

(See also Mat.23:34; 1Jn.3:13.)

2. Benefits of persecution:

A. Heavenly rewards for enduring persecution:

Mat.5:10 **Blessed** are...persecuted...for theirs is the Kingdom

Rom.8:17b,18 Sufferings...not worthy to be compared with the glory

2Cor.4:17 Affliction...worketh for us...eternal weight of glory

2Tim.2:12a If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him

Heb.11:25,26 Choosing to suffer affliction...respect unto reward

Heb.11:35b Tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection

1Pet.4:12,13 Fiery trial...when His glory revealed, ye may be glad

B. The Lord is with & helps those in persecution:

Psa.37:32,33 The Lord will not leave him (the righteous) in his (the wicked's) hand

Psa.46:1 God is...a very present help in trouble

Isa.50:7-9a The Lord God will help me...Who is mine adversary?

Mat.10:18-20 Brought before governors...it shall be given you what ye shall speak...(God's) Spirit speaketh in you

Acts 7:55 (Stephen) saw the glory of God, & Jesus standing

Rom.8:35-39 Persecution...(can't) separate us from the love of God

2Cor.4:8-11 Persecuted, but not forsaken

Heb.13:5b,6 The Lord is my helper, & I will not fear what man shall do unto me

1Pet.4:14 If ye be reproached for Christ... Spirit of glory & God resteth upon you

C. God allows it to spread His message & messengers:

Mat.10:23 When they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another

Acts 8:1,4 Scattered... went everywhere preaching the Word

Acts 11:19 Scattered... travelled as far as Cyprus, preaching

D. When condemning God's messengers, enemies often broadcast God's message—thus arousing interest in it:

Jn.19:4-8 The Jews answered, "(Jesus) ought to die, because He made Himself the Son of God"

Acts 17:5-7 These (say) there is another king, one **Jesus**

Acts 19:23-26 This Paul persuaded... saying that [idols] be no gods

Acts 24:14 This I confess... the way which **they** call heresy, **so** worship I God

Acts 25:18,19 (Paul's) accusers... had questions against him of Jesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive

Acts 28:22 Everywhere (this sect) is spoken against... but we desire to hear of thee, what thou thinkest

Phi.1:15-18 Notwithstanding... Christ is preached

E. It sifts out those who are not whole-hearted:

Mat.13:21 When persecution ariseth because of Word, by & by he is offended

F. The Word preached even in imprisonment:

Jer.38:13-18 [King Zedekiah consulted with imprisoned Jeremiah]

Mat.10:18-20 Brought before governors & kings for a **testimony**

Acts 16:23-31 [Philippian jailor converted after earthquake]

Acts 28:16 [In bonds, Paul preached<+> in Rome—See vs.30,31]

Phi.1:12-14[In bonds, Paul converts Caesar's household—See also Phi.4:22]

G. God gets good out of seeming bad:

Gen.50:20Ye thought evil...but God meant it to good

Exo.14:1-28[God hardened Pharaoh's heart to pursue the Hebrews, so that his entire army drowned & empire collapsed]

Psa.76:10Surely the wrath of man shall praise Thee

3. Attitude to have during persecution:

A. Be fearless & unmovable:

Mat.10:28Fear not them which kill the body

Jer.1:17-19Be not dismayed...they shall fight...but I am with thee

Ezk.3:8,9Fear them not, neither be dismayed at their looks

Acts 20:24None of these...move me, neither count I my life dear

1Thes.3:3That no man should be moved by these afflictions...we are appointed thereunto

1Pet.2:20When ye do well, & suffer for it...take it patiently

Rev.12:11bAnd they loved not their lives unto the death

(See also Phi.1:14)

B. Have joy in persecution:

Mat.5:12Rejoice & be exceeding glad...for so persecuted

Lk.6:22,23When men hate you...rejoice...leap for joy

Acts 5:40,41Rejoicing they were counted worthy to suffer shame

Rom.5:3We glory in tribulations also

2Thes.1:4We glory in you for your patience & faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure

1Pet.3:14If ye suffer for righteousness' sake, happy are ye

1Pet.4:12-14 If ye be reproached for...Christ, happy are ye

C. Do not be ashamed:

1Pet.4:16 If any suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed

Isa.50:7 I set my face like a flint...I shall not be ashamed

D. Suffer willingly for a righteous cause:

Jer.15:15b For **Thy** sake I have suffered rebuke

Mat.5:10 Blessed are they...persecuted for righteousness' sake

2Cor.12:10 I take pleasure in persecutions...for Christ's sake

2Thes.1:5 Counted worthy of Kingdom of God, for which ye suffer

1Pet.2:19 For conscience toward God...suffering wrongfully

E. Examples of enduring persecution courageously:

Jeremiah (Jer.26:11-15); Paul & his companions (1Cor.4:12b); Paul (2Cor.6:4,5,8-10; 2Cor.11:23-27); Timothy (2Tim.1:8); Early Christians (Heb.10:32,33); Moses (Heb.11:25); Old & New Testament saints (Heb.11:35-40).

F. Faithfulness to truth, despite persecution:

Psa.119:51 Proud have me...in derision, yet have I not declined

Psa.119:86b,87 They persecute me wrongfully; they almost consumed me...but I forsook not Thy precepts

Psa.119:157 Many are my persecutors...yet I do not decline

Rev.2:13 Thou holdest fast...& hast not denied My faith, even in those days wherein...My martyr was slain

G. Endure persecution because of love for the lost:

2Tim.2:10 I endure all things for the elect's sake, that they may obtain salvation (See also Jn.10:11)

Heb.5:7-9 He suffered...became the author of eternal salvation

1Pet.2:21 Christ **suffered** for **us** ...ye should follow His steps

H. Examples of men of God imprisoned for their faith:

Old Testament saints: (Heb.11:36); Samson: (Judg.16:21); Micaiah: (1Ki.22:26,27); Hanani: (2Chr.16:10); Jeremiah: (Jer.37:11-16); Daniel: (Dan.6:16,17); John the baptist: (Mat.14:3,4); Peter & John: (Acts 4:1-3); Apostles: (Acts 5:16-18); Men & women Christians in Jerusalem: (Acts 8:3; 9:1,2,14; 22:4,5,19, 26:10); Peter: (Acts 12:1-4); Paul & Silas: (Acts 16:22-24); Paul's imprisonments: (2Cor.11:23b); Paul's final imprisonment: (Acts 24:27; 26:29; 28:16).

4. Reasons why persecutors attack Christians:

A. Their goal is to stop the witness:

Jer.11:21 Prophecy not...that thou die not by our hand

Jn.11:47,48,53 If we let Him alone, all men will believe on Him. Then they took counsel to put Him to death

Acts 4:17 That it spread no further...let us threaten them

(See also Rev.6:9; 11:7)

B. Wicked, carnal men hate the righteous:

Gal.4:29 He that was born after the flesh persecuted him

Psa.38:20 They are adversaries; because I follow...good

Pro.29:27 He that is upright is abomination to the wicked

Isa.59:15a He that departeth from evil maketh himself a prey

Acts 7:52a Which of prophets have not your fathers persecuted?

1Pet.4:3,4 [Righteous despised for not joining drunken parties]

1Jn.3:12 Cain slew (Abel)...because his own works were evil

C. Because truth is a witness against evil:

Jn.7:7 It (the world) hateth Me (Jesus), because I testify of it

1Ki.22:17-27 [Micaiah imprisoned for prophesying the truth]

2Chr.16:7-10 [Asa imprisons Hanani for prophesying against him]

2Chr.24:20,21 [King has Zechariah stoned for rebuking the people]

Jer.32:2,3[Jeremiah imprisoned for prophesying the truth]

Amos 5:10They abhor him that speaketh uprightly

Acts 6:10-15[Stephen stoned for rebuking Jews.—& Acts 7:51-60]

Rev.1:9[John exiled to Patmos for preaching the Word]

(See also Rev.12:17; 20:4.)

D. Ignorance of the truth:

Acts 3:13,14I wot that through ignorance ye did it (Also vs.17)

1Tim.1:13(I) was a persecutor...I did it ignorantly in unbelief

E. Do not truly know God:

Jn.5:18,38,42Ye have not His Word...ye have not the love of God

Jn.8:37Ye seek to kill Me, because My Word hath no place

Jn.15:21They (persecutors) know not Him (God) that sent Me

Jn.15:24bNow have they...**hated** both Me & My Father

Jn.16:3Because they have not known the Father, nor Me

Acts 13:27,28They knew Him not...nor yet the voices of prophets

F. Self-righteous, misguided religious zeal:

Jn.16:2Whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service (See also Isa.66:5)

Acts 13:50Jews stirred up the **devout & honourable** women

Acts 21:27-32Men of Israel, help: This is the man that teacheth

Acts 22:3,4Zealous...I persecuted this way unto the death

Acts 23:12-14[40 men vowed & conspired to kill Paul]

Acts 26:9-11I thought I ought to do many things contrary to Jesus

Gal.1:13,14Persecuted...being exceedingly zealous of **traditions**

Phi.3:6Concerning zeal, persecuting the church

G. For breaking religious traditions & doctrines:

Mat.12:10-14Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath days?

Jn.5:16[Angry Jews seek to kill Jesus for healing on Sabbath]

Jn.9:16aThis man is not of God, because He keepeth not

Jn.10:31-33For a good work we stone Thee not; but for blasphemy

H. Religious jealousy & fear of competition:

Mat.27:18For He knew that for **envy** they had delivered Him Mk.11:18 Feared Him, because people astonished at His doctrine

Acts 13:44,45When the Jews saw the multitudes...filled with envy

Acts 17:5Jews which believed not, moved with envy...assaulted

I. Because we do not belong to this world:

Jn.15:19Because ye are not of world...the world hateth you

Jn.17:14World hated them, because they are not of the world

1Jn.4:5,6They are of the world...we are of God

J. Persecution by corrupt rich:

Acts 19:23-27By this craft we have our wealth...but Paul persuaded

Jam.2:6b,7Rich men oppress, draw you before judgment seat

Rev.17:1-6,18That great city...drunken with the blood of saints

K. Wickedness, pride:

Psa.10:2The wicked in his **pride** doth persecute the poor

Psa.74:22The **foolish** man reproacheth Thee daily

Psa.119:69aThe proud have forged a lie against me

L. For refusing to compromise faith:

Dan.3:14-20 We will not serve thy gods, nor worship the...image

Dan.6:4,5 [Jealous princes accuse Daniel regarding his faith]

M. For refusing to worship the Antichrist & his image:

Rev.13:14-17 As many as would not worship the image...be killed

Rev.20:4 Beheaded...had not worshipped the beast

N. For no valid reason at all:

Psa.119:86b They persecute me wrongfully

Psa.119:161 Princes have persecuted me without a cause

Jn.15:25 They hated Me without a cause (See also Psa.69:4)

5. How: Persecutors usually begin with verbal attacks:

A. Slander, infamy, lies:

Psa.69:9-12 I became a proverb to them...they speak against me

Psa.119:51a The proud have had me greatly in derision

Mat.5:11 Men shall revile you...& say all manner of evil

Lk.6:22 Men shall reproach you, & cast out your name as evil

Lk.22:63-65 Men that held Jesus mocked Him...blasphemously spake

Acts 14:2 Made their minds evil affected against the brethren

Acts 28:22b This sect...everywhere it is spoken against

1Cor.4:13 **Defamed**...we are made as the **filth** of the world

(See also Psa.35:16,21)

B. Persecutors twist words to defame:

Isa.29:21 Make a man an offender for a word...lay a snare

Isa.56:5 Every day they wrest My Words...their thoughts evil

Mat.22:15 Took counsel how they might entangle Him in His talk

Mk.12:13 They send Pharisees...to catch Him in His words

Lk.11:53,54 Seeking to catch something out of His mouth, that they might accuse Him

Lk.20:20 Take hold of His Words...deliver Him to the governor

C. Lying accusations & false charges:

Psa.35:11 False witnesses...laid to my charge things I knew not

Mat.26:59-61 Chief priests...sought false witness against Jesus

Lk.23:2 We found this fellow perverting the nation, & forbidding to give tribute (pay taxes)

Lk.23:5 [Sedition] He stirreth up the people

Jer.38:4 [Treason] Seeketh not the welfare...but the hurt

Acts 6:11-13 We have heard him speak blasphemous words

Acts 16:19-21 These men exceedingly trouble city...teach customs

Acts 17:5-7 These...do contrary to the decrees of Caesar

Acts 18:12,13 Persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the law

Acts 24:5 Pestilent, mover of sedition, ringleader of sect

2Tim.2:8,9 I suffer trouble as an **evil doer**, even unto bonds

(See also Psa.94:20)

D. Character assassination:

Lk.7:34 Behold a gluttonous man & a wine-bibber

Jn.7:12 Nay; but He deceiveth the people

Jn.9:24b We know that this man (Jesus) is a sinner

E. Accusations of being "of the devil":

Mat.10:24,25 They called (**Jesus**) "Beelzebub", how much more (us)

Mat.9:34He casteth out devils through the prince of devils

Mk.3:22He hath Beelzebub, & by the prince of the devils

Jn.8:48Say we not well that Thou...hast a devil?

Jn.10:20Many said, He hath a devil...why hear ye Him?

F. Charges of religious insanity:

Mk.3:21Went to lay hold on Him: Said, He is beside Himself

Jn.10:20He...is mad: why hear ye Him?

Acts 26:24Much learning [of the Scriptures] doth make thee mad

G. Persecution through fear of society's disapproval:

Jn.9:22Parents feared Jews: for Jews had agreed that if any

Jn.12:42[Some **believing**] chief rulers...did not confess Him, lest they be put out of the synagogue

6. Persecution from family & friends:

Jer.12:6Thy brethren...have called a multitude after thee

Mat.10:21Brother shall deliver up the brother to death

Mat.10:35,36A man's foes shall be they of his own household

Mk.3:21Friends...went out to to lay hold on Him

Lk.12:51-53There shall be five in one house divided

Lk.21:16Ye shall be betrayed by parents, brethren, friends

Jn.7:1-5[Jesus' brothers taunt Him to go endanger His life]

1Thes.2:14-16Ye also have suffered...of your own countrymen

Mk.6:4Prophet is...without honour among kin, & in own house

(See also Mic.7:2; Jn.1:11.)

7. The world persecuted & rejected Jesus:

A. Evil plots & persecution against Jesus:

Mat.12:14Held council against Him, how they might destroy Him Mat.26:3,4 Consulted that they might take Him by subtilty & kill

Lk.4:28,29Led Him unto the hill...that they might cast Him down Lk.6:11 Filled with madness; & communed what they might do

Lk.19:47Chief priests & scribes...sought to destroy Him

Jn.5:16Therefore did Jews persecute Jesus, & sought to slay

Jn.11:57Given commandment, if any man knew where He were

(See also Lk.20:20)

B. Look to Jesus' example of suffering persecution:

Heb.12:2-4Consider Him Who endured such contradiction

Isa.53:3,7,8Despised & rejected of men...afflicted...cut off

Jn.15:18The world...hated Me before it hated you

Jn.15:20If they have persecuted Me, they will persecute you

Heb.13:13Let us go forth unto Him...bearing His reproach

1Pet.2:21-23Christ suffered for us, leaving us an example

1Pet.4:1Christ suffered...arm yourselves with the same mind

C. When persecuting Christians, they persecute Jesus:

Mat.25:40Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these...ye have done it unto **Me**

Acts 9:1-5Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou **Me**?

Zech.2:8bHe that toucheth you toucheth the apple of His eye

Acts 5:38,39Refrain from these men...lest ye fight against God

8. Compromising, fleeing & avoiding persecution:

A. Bad examples of compromising to avoid persecution:

2Ki.5:15a,[Naaman believed in God, but to save his position &
17b,18life, bowed down to the pagan idol of Rimmon]

Lk.6:26Woe unto you, when all men speak well of you

Jn.12:42Rulers...did not confess Him, lest they be put out

Gal.6:12Lest they suffer persecution for cross of Christ

B. Fleeing from persecution (discretion, not cowardice):

Mat.10:23When they persecute you in this city, **flee** ye to

1Ki.19:2,3[Elijah fled from the wicked queen Jezebel]

Jer.26:20,21[Urijah fled from king Jehoiakim to Egypt]

Jer.36:19,26Go, hide thee...& let no man know where ye be

Mat.2:13,14Arise, & take the young child...& flee into Egypt

Mat.12:14,15aWhen Jesus knew it, He withdrew Himself from thence

Jn.7:1He would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews

Jn.10:39,40They sought again to take Him: but He escaped

Jn.11:53,54He walked no more openly among the Jews; but went

Acts 9:23-25Took (Paul) by night, & let him down in a basket

Acts 14:5,6An assault made...they were ware of it, & fled

Acts 17:5,10Assaulted...brethren sent away Paul & Silas by night

Acts 17:13,14Jews...stirred up people...brethren sent away Paul

Acts 23:12-35[470 Roman soldiers helped Paul flee a conspiracy]

C. Pray to avoid persecution, if possible:

2Thes.3:1,2Pray...that we may be delivered from wicked men

1Tim.2:1,2Prayers...that we may lead a quiet & peaceable life

D. Use wisdom to avoid stirring up unnecessary persecution:

Mat.5:25**Agree** with thine adversary quickly...lest he deliver thee to the judge...& thou be cast into prison

Pro.15:1A soft answer turneth away wrath

Pro.16:7When a man's ways please the Lord, He maketh even his enemies to be at peace with him

Rom.12:18-21**If** it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men...overcome evil with good

9. God will judge your persecutors:

A. The Psalmist's prayers & curses against his enemies—& for the Lord to protect His people from them:

Psa.3:all; 5:8-12; 6:7-10; 7:all; 9:3-6,9,10,13-20; 10:all; 11:all; 12:all; 13:all; 17:4-15; 18:37-50; 21:7-13; 23:5; 27:1-6,11-14; 28:all; 31:all; 34:1-7; 35:all; 37:all; 38:12-22; 40:13-17; 41:5-11; 43:all; 52:all; 53:1-5; 54:all; 55:1-9,18,23; 56:all; 57:1-6; 58:all; 59:all; 62:1-8; 63:8-11; 68:1-3; 69:4,22-30; 70:all; 71:4,10-13; 82:3,4; 83:1-4,12-18; 94:1-7,16,21-23; 105:12-15; 109:all; 118:5-14; 119:84; 124:all; 125:3-5; 129:1-6; 139:19-22; 140:all; 143:3,4,9-12; 144:6-11; 149:5-9. (**Other prayers:** Jer.15:15a; 17:18; 18:18-23; Lam.3:59-66; Rev.6:9,10) **Prayers for God to stop their evil devices:** Psa.10:2; 17:13; 21:11,12; 27:2,12; 31:4; 33:10; 64:all; 70:2,3; 71:13; 119:126; 120:2.

B. God's judgment on persecutors:

Deut.30:7Lord put curses on enemies which persecuted thee

2Chr.36:16Wrath of the Lord arose...till there was no remedy

Psa.7:11-16He ordaineth His arrows against the persecutors

Psa.11:2,5,6Upon the wicked He shall rain fire & brimstone

Psa.37:12-15,17The Lord shall laugh at him, for He seeth that his day is coming

Psa.105:14,15Touch not Mine anointed, & do My prophets no harm

Isa.54:15Whosoever shall gather against thee shall fall

Jer.20:2-6[Pashur persecuted Jeremiah, then Jeremiah prophesied God's judgments against him]

Lk.11:49-51Blood of prophets...be required of this generation

1Thes.2:15,16Forbidding us to speak...wrath is come upon them

2Thes.1:6-9Recompense tribulation to them that trouble you

(See also Rev.16:1-6; 18:2,4-8.)

10. Endtime persecution:

A. Suffering persecution in last days:

Mat.24:9,10Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted

Mk.13:12,13Brother shall betray brother to death

Lk.21:12,16,17They shall lay their hands on you, & persecute

2Tim.3:1-3In the last days...despisers of them that are good

B. Persecution during the great tribulation:

Mat.24:21,22Then shall be great tribulation...except those days

Mk.13:19In those days shall be **affliction**, such as was not

Dan.11:33-35They shall fall by sword, flame, captivity, spoil... they shall be helped

Rev.12:12,13,17Dragon persecuted the woman (church)...war with remnant

Rev.13:7It was given unto him to make **war** with the saints

Rev.13:15As many as would not worship the image...killed

Rev.20:4Beheaded for witness...had not worshipped the beast

Deut.4:30,31When thou art in tribulation...in the latter days

C. Tribulation saints greatly rewarded:

Rev.7:13-17Came out of great tribulation...before throne of God

Rev.20:4Beheaded...reigned with Christ a thousand years

Backsliding

(Falling away from the Lord and His will)

1. Spiritual problems that lead to backsliding:

A. Cooling off & losing "first love" for Jesus:

Rev.2:4-5 Thou hast left thy first love...remember from whence thou art fallen, & repent...or else I will remove

Rev.3:15,16 Thou art lukewarm, & neither cold nor hot

B. Being filled with own ways & desires:

Pro.14:14 Backslider in heart shall be filled with his own ways

Ezk.14:3,5 These men have set up their idols in their **heart**...they are estranged from Me through their idols

Ezk.14:7-8 Every one which...setteth up his idols in his heart ...I will cut him off from the midst of My people

1Tim.6:9 Hurtful lusts...drown men in perdition

C. Losing sight of the Heavenly goal in favour of temporal gain:

Pro.29:18 Where there is no vision, the people perish

Mal.3:14 Ye said, It is vain to serve God...what profit is it?

Lk.15:12,13 Give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. He (left) & wasted his substance with riotous living

Heb.12:16-17 Esau, for one morsel of meat sold his birthright

2Pet.1:9 He...cannot see afar off, & hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins

D. Quitting when the going gets tough:

Mat.13:20,21 When persecution ariseth...by & by he is offended

Jn.10:12,13 An hireling...seeth the wolf coming, & leaveth the sheep, & fleeth. He careth not for the sheep

E. Desiring worldly pleasures & riches:

Heb.11:14-15 If they had been **mindful** of that country from whence they came out, they might have...returned

Gen.19:26(Lot's) wife **looked back**...& became a pillar of salt

Num.11:5,6[Lusting for things of Egypt] (See also Exo.16:3)

Psa.73:2,3My steps had well nigh slipped. For I was envious at ...the prosperity of the wicked

Mat.13:22The care of this world, & the deceitfulness of riches, choke the Word

2Tim.4:10Demas hath forsaken me, having loved present world

1Jn.2:15-17If any man love the world, love of the Father not in him

Rev.3:17I am rich & increased with goods & have need of nothing

(See also 1Cor.10:5,6)

F. Not grounded in or obeying the Word:

Lk.8:13These have no root...in time of temptation fall away

Mat.7:26-27[He] that heareth these sayings...& doeth them **not**... house upon the sand...great was the fall of it

1Tim.1:19Faith...which some having put away made shipwreck

2Tim.4:3,4They shall turn away their ears from the truth

G. Having a doubting, questioning, unbelieving attitude:

Jn.6:60,66Many disciples said, this is an hard saying; who can hear it? Many went back, & walked no more with Him

Rom.11:20Because of unbelief they were broken off

Col.2:8Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy

Heb.3:12Take heed, lest there be in you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God

Jude 5The Lord, having saved the people out of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not

H. Hardening heart to the truth:

Mat.13:15Ears dull of hearing...their eyes they have **closed**

Eph.4:18-19Having understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through blindness...past feeling

I. Doublemindedness & wavering:

2Chr.25:2,14He did that which was right, but not with a perfect heart [& soon worshipped other gods] (See Psa.78:36,37)

Psa.78:8,9(They) set not their heart aright...spirit was not steadfast with God...turned back in the day of battle

Hos.10:2Their heart is divided; now (are) they found faulty

Jam.1:6-8A double-minded man is **unstable** in all his ways (See also Eph.4:14)

J. Refusing to receive correction:

Pro.14:9Fools make a mock at sin [as if it's not serious]

Pro.15:10Correction is grievous to him that forsaketh the way

Job 33:9,10I am clean...I am innocent; neither is there iniquity in me [vs.10—"He just has it in for me."]

K. Not confessing problems & sins:

Pro.28:13He that covereth his sins shall not prosper

Jn.3:19b-20Neither cometh to light, lest his deeds be reprov'd

(See Isa.29:15 & Saul's problem in 1Sam.15:1-35.)

L. Not responding to God's loving chastisement:

Pro.29:1He that being often reprov'd, & hardeneth his neck

Isa.1:5Why should ye be striken any more? Ye revolt more

Isa.57:17I was wroth, & smote him [but] he went on frowardly in the way of his heart

Jer.2:30aIn vain have I smitten your children; they received no correction

(See also Isa.42:25; Jer.5:3; Dan.9:13.)

M. Allowing bitterness to grow:

Heb.12:15Lest any man fail of the grace of God, lest any root of bitterness springing up, trouble you

(See also Jam.3:14,15; Eph.4:31.)

N. Being led astray with vain imaginations:

Jer.7:24 They walked in the imagination of their evil heart, & went backward (See also Jer.13:10; 16:12.)

O. Idleness & gossiping:

1Tim.5:12,13 They have cast off their faith. They learn to be idle, wandering...tattlers & busybodies

2Tim.2:16 Vain babblings...will increase unto more ungodliness (See also Eph.1:14; 1Tim.6:20,21.)

P. Murmuring & ingratitude:

Num.14:27-30 [Murmurers not allowed to enter the promised land]

(See also Num.11:1; 21:5,6; 1Cor.10:10; Jude 15,16a.)

Q. Fellowshiping with trouble-makers:

Pro.6:12-16,19 Frowardness is in his heart...he soweth discord

Pro.13:20 A companion of fools shall be destroyed

1Cor.15:33 Evil communications corrupt good manners

Gal.5:7 Who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth?

(See also Lk.6:45; 1Ki.11:4.)

R. Desiring fellowship with the world:

Jam.4:4 Whoever will be a friend of the world is enemy of God

S. A lack of fear of the Lord:

Jer.2:19b Thou hast forsaken the Lord...My fear is not in thee

2. How the Lord views those who turn their backs on Him:

Pro.26:11 As a dog returneth to his vomit, so a fool returneth

Jer.2:13 They have forsaken Me, the fountain of living waters

Jer.2:19 Know...that it is an evil thing & bitter, that thou hast forsaken the Lord thy God

Lk.9:62 No man...looking back, is fit for the Kingdom of God

Heb.10:38If any draw back, My soul shall have no pleasure in

2Pet.2:22The dog is turned to his vomit & the sow to wallowing

3. The danger of fellowshiping with those who have turned away from the Lord:

A. They can corrupt & undermine others:

Deut.20:8Let him return unto his house, lest his brethren's heart faint as well as his heart

Judg.7:3Whoever is fearful, let him return & depart **early**

Acts 29:28-30Of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them

1Cor.5:6,7A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump. **Purge out** therefore the **old** leaven

(See also 2Pet.2:18,19)

B. They cannot be trusted or depended upon:

Psa.78:57They turned aside like a deceitful bow

Pro.25:19Confidence in an unfaithful man in time of trouble is like a broken tooth & a foot out of joint

(See also Pro.23:7; Gal.2:4,5.)

4. God's punishment of those who forsake Him:

Deut.28:63The Lord will rejoice...to bring you to nought

Josh.24:20If ye forsake the Lord...He will do you hurt, & consume you, after that He hath done you good

Ezra 8:22bHis power & wrath is against them that forsake Him

Jer.15:6Thou art gone backward: therefore will I destroy thee

Mat.5:13If the salt have lost savour...it is good for nothing, but to be cast out, & trodden under foot

Jn. 15:6If a man abide not in Me, he is cast forth...& is withered; &...they are burned

Heb.10:26If we sin wilfully after we have received the truth, there remaineth...a fearful looking for of judgment

2Pet.2:21 Better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known...to turn

(See also Job 34:26,25; Psa.44:20-21; Pro.28:10; Jer.5:6,19.)

5. God's promises of mercy to those who return to Him:

2Chr.30:9b God is gracious & merciful, & will not turn away His face from you, if ye return unto Him

Isa.54:7,8 For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee

Isa.55:7 Let the wicked forsake his way & return, & He will have mercy upon him

Jer.3:12 Return, backsliding Israel...for I am merciful

Jer.3:14 Turn, O backsliding children, for I am married to you

Jer.3:22 Return...& I will heal your backslidings

Hos.14:4 I will heal their backsliding...Mine anger turned away

Joel 2:12-13 Turn ye to Me with all your heart, & with weeping...God is gracious & merciful, & of great kindness

Zech.10:6b I will have mercy upon them: & they shall be as though I had not cast them off

(See also Job 14:7; Isa.1:18; Ezk.36:26,27; Dan.9:9.)

6. Attitude for repentant prodigals to have:

2Chr.7:14 If My people...humble themselves & seek My face, & turn from their wicked ways...I will forgive

Psa.41:4 Lord...heal my soul; for I have sinned against Thee

Psa.51:3 I acknowledge my transgressions: & my sin is before

Psa.84:10 I had rather be a doorkeeper in the house of my God, than to dwell in the tents of wickedness

Psa.119:176 I have gone astray like a lost sheep; seek (me)

Jer.14:7 Our backslidings are many...have sinned against Thee

Jer.24:7 I will be their God: for they shall return unto Me with their whole heart

Ezk.36:31 Then shall ye remember...& shall loathe yourselves...for your iniquities

Hos.6:1 Come, let us return unto the Lord...He will heal us

Lk.15:19,21 I am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants

(See also Job 40:1-5; 42:1-6; Psa.51:all; Dan.9:3-20; Jam.4:6-10.)

7. How to avoid backsliding:

A. Love the Lord & keep the Heavenly vision:

Mat.6:21 Where your treasure is, there will your heart be also

Mat.6:24 Hate the (world), & love the (Lord)...hold to the (Lord), & despise the (world)

Col.2:6,7 Rooted & built up in Him, & stablished in the faith

Col.3:1,2 Set your affection on things above, not on...earth

Heb.12:2,3 Looking unto Jesus...lest ye faint in your minds

B. Remember that serving Jesus is worth it all:

1Cor.15:58 Be steadfast, unmoveable...in the work of the Lord, your labour is not in vain in the Lord

Gal.6:9 Let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not

Heb.10:35 Cast not away your confidence...hath great recompense

Heb.11:26,27 Esteeming...Christ greater riches than the treasures of Egypt...endured, as seeing Him Who is invisible

Jam.1:12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation...he shall receive the crown of life (See also 2Tim.4:7,8)

Rev.3:11 Hold fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown

(See Jn.15:2-7 about "abiding in the vine"; See also 2Cor.4:16-18; Rev.2:26-28.)

C. Trust the Lord to keep you faithful:

Psa.17:5 Hold up my goings in Thy paths that my (feet) slip not

Psa.26:1b I have trusted in the Lord; I shall not slide

Jude 24 He (God) is able to keep you from falling

D. Hide the Word in your heart:

Psa.119:9 Cleanse his way by taking heed...to Thy Word

Psa.119:11 Word hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against

Psa.37:31 Law of God is in his heart; none of his steps slide

Psa.119:165 Great peace have they which love Thy law: & nothing shall offend them

(See also 2Thes.2:15; 2Pet.1:4.)

E. Forsake daydreaming & vain thoughts:

Psa.119:113 I hate vain thoughts: but Thy law do I love

2Cor.10:5 Casting down imaginations, & everything that exalteth

Phi.4:8 Whatsoever things are true...honest...think on these

F. Have conviction; know what you believe:

1Ki.18:21 How long halt ye between two opinions? If the Lord be God, follow Him

Jn.6:67-68 Jesus (said) unto the twelve, Will ye also go away? To whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of life

Acts 20:24 None of these things move me...that I might finish (my) ministry...to testify the gospel

Rom.14:5b Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind

2Pet.1:10 Make your calling & election sure...shall never fall

G. Receive correction & reproof:

Psa.141:5 Let righteous reprove me...shall be an excellent oil

Pro.6:23 Reproofs of instruction are the way of life (See also Pro.10:17)

Pro.27:5,6 Faithful are the wounds of a friend

Heb.3:13 Exhort one another daily, lest any of you be hardened

Heb.12:5-13 Endure chastening...lest (ye) be turned out of the way

H. Confess your problems & sins:

Pro.28:13Whoso confesseth & forsaketh (sins) shall have mercy

Heb.12:1Lay aside every weight, & the sin...& run the race

Jam.5:16Confess your faults one to another, & pray one for

(See also Job 11:14; 1Jn.1:8-10.)

I. Withdraw yourself from those who turn away from the truth:

Psa.1:1-2(Walk) not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor (sit)

Psa.119:63I am a companion of them that fear Thee, & of them that keep Thy precepts (See also Pro.13:20)

Rom.16:17,18Avoid them...by fair speeches deceive the simple

Eph.5:11Have no fellowship with...but rather reprove them

2Thes.3:6Withdraw selves from brother that walketh disorderly

1Tim.6:3-5Perverse disputings...from such withdraw thyself

2Pet.3:17Beware lest ye being led away with the wicked, fall

(See also Exo.23:2a; Pro.1:10,15.)

J. Love not the world:

Rom.12:2Be not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed

Gal.6:14Cross of Christ, (whereby) world is crucified unto me

2Tim.2:4No man that warreth entangleth self with...this world

1Jn.2:15Love not the world, neither the things in the world

(See also Col.3:2; 1Cor.7:31.)

K. Endure hardships:

Psa.44:14-18All this is come upon us: yet...our heart is not turned back, neither have our steps declined

2Tim.2:3Endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ

Heb.11:24,25Choosing rather to suffer affliction...than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season

(See also Heb.12:1-3)

L. Remember how much you've already endured:

Gal.3:4Have ye suffered so many things in vain?

Heb.10:32Call to remembrance the former days, in which...ye endured a great fight (See also Heb.6:11)

M. Give up personal desires, endure temptations:

Lk.9:23-25Whosoever will save his life shall **lose** it

1Cor.9:27I keep my body (under), & bring it into subjection: lest...I myself should be a castaway

Phi.3:7,8Suffered the loss of all things & count them but dung

(See also Lk.14:33; 1Tim.6:10,11; Jam.1:12; 1Pet.2:11.)

N. Be thankful & content:

Phi.4:11Have learned, in whatever state I am...to be content

1Thes.5:18In everything give thanks

1Tim.6:6-8Having food & raiment let us be therewith content

(See also Pro.15:16; Eccl.6:9; Heb.13:5.)

O. Forget your worldly past:

Psa.45:10Forget thine own people, & thy father's house

Lk.9:60Let the dead bury the dead: but go thou & preach

Phi.3:13,14Forgetting things which are behind, I reach forward

(See also 1Pet.4:2,3)

P. Be thankful for what He's delivered you from:

Psa.40:2He brought me out of an horrible pit...& set my feet upon a rock

Q. Consider what backsliding leads to:

Pro.5:8-13 Lest thou give thy years unto the cruel...& thou mourn at the last

Pro.13:15 The way of the transgressor is hard

Pro.21:16 (He) shall remain in the congregation of the dead

Ezk.3:20 Righteousness which he hath done...not be remembered

Lk.17:32 Remember Lot's wife [She became a pillar of salt]

1Cor.3:11-15 If any build...wood, hay, stubble...he shall suffer loss

Gal.4:9 How turn ye again...ye desire again to be in **bondage**

2Pet.2:20 If after they have escaped the...world...they are again entangled therein, the latter end is worse

(See also Psa.106:15; Ezk.18:24; Gal.6:7,8; Rev.3:11.)

8. The attitude to have towards backsliders:

A. Try to win them back, if possible:

Jer.31:20 Since I spake against him, I remember him still

Lk.15:4-6 What man...having 100 sheep, if he lose one, doth not

Lk.15:20-24 [Father rejoiced & welcomed prodigal son back home]

(See also Gal.6:1,2; 2Tim.2:24-26.)

B. Don't give up on one-time backsliders:

Jer.31:17 There is hope in thine end...that thy children shall come again to their own border

(See the story of Simon Peter in Lk.22:54-62; Mk.16:7; Acts 2:14,38,40.)

(See the story of John Mark in Acts 13:5,13; 14:36-40; 2Tim.4:11.)

C. But forget trying to win chronic backsliders:

Judg.10:13-14 Ye have forsaken Me...I will deliver you no more

1Sam.15:35; 16:1 Samuel mourned for Saul...& the Lord said..."How long wilt thou mourn for Saul, seeing I have rejected him"

Jer.8:5 Slidden back by a perpetual backsliding...they refuse to return

Hos.4:17 Ephraim joined to idols: let him alone (See Mat.15:14)

Heb.6:4-6 Impossible...if they shall fall away, to renew them

(See also 1Tim.6:5; Tit.3:10,11.)

D. Some people were never really part of your fellowship:

Gal.2:4 **False** brethren unawares...came in privily to spy out

1Jn.2:19 They went out from us, but they were not **of** us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued

Jude 4 Men crept in...who were ordained to condemnation

E. Some backsliders become enemies of the cross:

Mat.12:30 He that gathereth not with Me, scattereth abroad

Phi.3:18 For many walk...they are enemies of the cross

(Judas' backsliding: Mat.26:14-15,47-50; 27:5.)

(Alexander's backsliding: 1Tim.1:19,20; 2Tim.4:14,15.)

Special chapters: Num.13:31-33,14:1-34; Neh.9:15-37; Psa.78, 106; Ezk.16; Lk.15:11-32; 2Pet.2.

Christianity in Crisis

--"I would that thou wert cold or hot." (Rev.3:15)

(This Section is a detailed study on the pitfalls of apostasy & complacency that individual Christians, as well as entire churches & denominations, can fall into. It is the editors' prayer that the reader will not merely reflect on the failings of other Christians when studying this section, but will, in Christian maturity, use it as a spiritual thermometer to measure his or her **own** depth of devotion to Jesus Christ, & know whether they are "cold or hot".)

1. Predictions of a great apostasy in the last days:

Mat.24:12 Iniquity shall abound, the love of **many** shall wax **cold**

2Thes.2:1-3 That day (Jesus' second coming) shall not come, except there come a falling away (apostasy) first

1Tim.4:1 The Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith

2Tim.4:3,4 The time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine...turn away their ears from the truth

2. Ignorance of the Word of God:

A. Many don't study the Word or know what it really says:

Hos.4:6 My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge

Mat.12:3-5 Have ye not **read** what David did? Or have ye not **read** in the law? (See also Mat.19:4)

Mat.22:29 Ye do **err**, not knowing the Scriptures

Acts 13:27 They knew (understood) not...the prophets which are read every sabbath day (See also 2Cor.3:14,15)

1Tim.1:7b Understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm

(See also Jer.5:4; Acts 13:27.)

B. The dangers of being unlearned in the Word:

2Pet.3:16 In all (Paul's) epistles...things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned...wrest (distort)

C. The ignorant can be easily led astray by false teachers:

Gal.1:6,7 Ye are so soon removed from Him that called you...unto another gospel

2Thes.2:2,3,5 Let no man deceive you...Remember ye not that I **told** you these things?

D. Even many who know the Word don't obey it:

Jer.5:5 The great men...have known the way of the Lord...but these have altogether broken the yoke [disobeyed]

Jer.8:8,9 How do ye say, We are wise, & the law of the Lord is with us? Lo...the pen of [your] scribes is in **vain**

Mat.23:3 Do not ye after their works: for they **say**, & do not

Rom.2:17-24 Thou **knowest** His will... hast truth... makest thy boast of the law, [but] breaking the law dishonourest God

E. Some, though familiar with the Word, are not even saved:

Jer.2:8a They that handle the law knew Me not

Jn.3:1-10 Art thou a master of Israel, & knowest not these things? [about being born again]

3. Doctrines & traditions of man vs. God's Word:

A. Beware of exalting doctrines of man above the Word:

Isa.29:13b Their fear toward Me is taught by the precept of men

Mat.15:3 Ye transgress commandment of God by your tradition

Mat.15:9 Teaching for doctrines the commandments of men

Mk.7:9 Ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition

Mk.7:13 Making the Word... of none effect through your tradition

2Tim.4:3,4 After their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears

B. "Denominationalism" & needless doctrinal divisions:

Rom.14:1-6 [Avoid arguing over minor personal doctrines]

1Cor.1:10-13 (One) saith, I am of Paul, & I of Apollos; & I of Cephas... Is Christ divided? (See also 1Cor.3:21-23)

1Tim.6:3,4 Proud... dotting about questions & strifes of **words**

(See also Jn.4:20,21; Acts 15:5,24.)

C. Prestige-seeking leaders create their own factions:

Acts 20:30 Of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse [erroneous] things, to draw away disciples after them

2Tim.1:15 All they... in Asia be turned away from me (Paul); of whom [the leaders] are Phygellus & Hermogenes

3Jn.9,10Diotrephes, loveth to have the preeminence among them [& he rejected the apostle John's authority]

D. Splitting theological hairs, while disobeying the Word:

Mat.23:24(Ye) strain at a gnat, & swallow a camel

Lk.11:42Ye tithe [but] pass over judgment & the love of God

E. Twisting the Word to suit personal doctrines:

1Tim.1:5,6The commandment is **love**...from which some...have turned aside unto vain jangling

2Pet.1:20No prophecy of the Scripture [should be] of any **private** interpretation

2Pet.3:16They that are unlearned & unstable **wrest**...the Scriptures, unto their own destruction

F. Stick to solid Scriptural doctrines:

1Tim.4:6,7Nourished up in the words of faith & of good doctrine

1Tim.6:3,4If any man...consent not to...the Words of our Lord Jesus...he is proud, knowing nothing

Tit.1:14Not giving heed to...commandments of men, that turn from the truth

(See also Col.2:8,9; 2Tim.1:13; 2:14-16,23; Tit.1:9; 2:1,8; 3:9.)

G. Beware of unbelieving modernism:

Jer.8:9The wise men...have rejected the Word of the Lord; & what wisdom is in them?

Acts 23:8(They) say there is no resurrection...angel, nor spirit

1Cor.15:12-17How say some among you that there is no resurrection

Gal.1:9If any preach any other gospel...let him be accursed

2Tim.3:5Having a **form** of godliness, but denying power thereof

2Pet.2:1Damnable heresies, even denying the Lord

4. The dwelling place of God:

A. Your body is the true temple of the Holy Spirit:

Jn.4:20-24 Neither in this mountain, nor at Jerusalem, worship... true worshippers shall worship the Father in **spirit**

1Cor.3:16 **Ye** are the temple of God...the Spirit dwelleth in you

1Cor.6:19 Your **body** is the temple of Holy Ghost which is in you

2Cor.6:16 Ye are temple of the living God...I will dwell **in** them

B. The true church is the body of believers:

Acts 2:41-47 [Scriptural definition of what the "church" is]

Rom.12:4,5 We, being many, are one body in Christ

1Cor.12:13-28 Ye are the body of Christ, & members in particular

Col.1:18,24 He is the head of the body, the church

1Pet.2:5a Ye...as lively stones, are built up [into] a spiritual house (church)

(See also 1Cor.10:17; Eph.4:4,12,15,16.)

C. The early church only had homes to meet in:

(See Rom.16:3,5; 1Cor.16:19; Col.4:15; Phlm.2.)

D. Does God dwell in church buildings?

1Ki.8:27 The heaven of heavens cannot contain Thee; how much less this house that I (Solomon) have builded?

Isa.66:1 Earth is My footstool: where is the house ye build Me?

Hos.8:14 Israel hath forgotten his Maker, & buildeth temples

Acts 7:48 The most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands

Heb.9:24 Christ is not entered into holy places made with hands

5. The danger of complacency:

A. Lukewarmness & satisfaction with material things:

Rev.3:15,16 I know thy works, that thou art...lukewarm

Jer.5:31The prophets prophesy falsely, & the priests bear rule by their means; & My people love to have it so

1Tim.6:5Supposing that gain is godliness [the "abundant life"]

Rev.3:17Thou sayest, I am rich, & increased with goods, & have need of nothing, & knowest not thou art wretched

B. Closing our minds to the truth is spiritual blindness:

Mat.15:14They be blind leaders of the **blind**

Isa.30:9Rebellious people...that will not hear law of the Lord Zech.7:11,12 They refused to hearken...& stopped their ears...lest they should hear...the words (given) by the prophets

Mat.13:14,15Their eyes they have closed; lest...they should see

(See also Mat.23:16,17,24,26; Rom.10:3; 2Cor.4:4; Eph.4:18.)

C. Even many who boast that they "see" are blind:

Jn.9:40,41Are we blind also? Jesus said, Ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth

Rev.3:17Thou knowest not that thou art...blind

D. Compromise due to fear of man:

Jn.12:42,43Many believed but...did not confess Him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue

Mk.8:38Whosoever shall be ashamed of Me...of him shall the Son of man be ashamed

6. Disobedience to the great commission:

A. What we as Christians are supposed to do:

Mk.16:15Go ye into all the world, & preach the gospel to every creature

B. Beware of no concern to win the lost:

Isa.56:10,11His watchmen are blind: dumb dogs, they cannot bark...shepherds that...look to their own way...for gain

Jer.50:6Lost sheep...shepherds have caused them to go astray

Ezk.34:4-6Neither have ye sought that which was lost

Ezk.34:8Neither did My shepherds search for My flock, but the shepherds fed themselves, & fed not My flock

Jn.10:12,13The hireling fleeth...& careth not for the sheep

(See also Ezk.33:6)

C. Hypocrisy among believers turns men from salvation:

Rom.2:17-24The name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you (See also Mat.23:13; Lk.11:52.)

7. Failure to shepherd the flock:

A. Jesus' commands to pastors:

Pro.27:23Be thou diligent to know the state of thy flocks

Jn.21:16Lovest thou Me? Feed My sheep

Acts 20:28Feed the church of God, which He hath purchased with His Own blood

1Pet.5:2Feed the flock of God which is among you

B. Many neglect to spiritually feed their flocks:

Ezk.34:2,3Should not the shepherds feed the flocks? Ye feed not

Ezk.34:18,19My flock...drink that which ye fouled with your feet

C. They don't minister to & care for them:

Jer.6:14They have healed the hurt...of My people **slightly**

Ezk.34:4The diseased have ye not strengthened, neither healed... neither bound up...neither brought again

D. Unshepherded members are a scattered flock:

Jer.23:2The pastors that feed My people...have scattered My flock...& have not visited them

Jer.13:17,20bWeep...because Lord's flock is carried away captive. Where is the flock...thy beautiful flock?

Ezk.34:5-8They were scattered, because there is no shepherd

Mat.9:36(Jesus) was moved with compassion on them, because they...were scattered, as sheep having no shepherd

8. Warning against coveting financial gain:

A. Preaching for money, not to win souls or feed the flock:

1Pet.5:2Feed the flock of God...**not** for filthy lucre

Jer.6:13Given to covetousness...from the prophet even unto the priest every one dealeth falsely

Mic.3:11Priests teach for hire, & prophets divine for money

Mat.6:24No man can serve...God **&** mammon (materialism)

Tit.1:10,11Vain talkers...teaching...for filthy lucre's sake

2Pet.2:1a,3aFalse teachers...through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you

(See also Zech.11:4,5)

B. Unjustly robbing the poor:

Isa.56:11bThey all look to their **own** way, every one for his **gain**

Ezk.33:31bWith their mouth they show much love, but their heart goeth after their covetousness

Ezk.34:2,3Woe be to the shepherds...that do feed themselves! Ye eat the fat, & ye clothe you with the wool

Mat.23:14Ye devour widows' houses, & for pretence make long prayer

C. Selfishness towards the needy shows a lack of love:

Mat.25:42,43I was an hungred, & ye gave Me no meat

1Jn.3:17Whoso hath world's good & seeth his brother hath need [& doesn't help] how dwelleth the love of God in him?

(See also Jam.2:15,16)

9. Warnings against hypocrisy:

A. To those that pretend to be Christians, but are not:

Jer.7:4 Lying words, saying, The temple of the Lord are these

Mat.7:21 Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter Heaven...but he that doeth the will of My Father

Mat.15:9a In **vain** they do worship Me

Mat.23:2,3 Do not ye after their works: for they **say**, & do **not**

Mat.23:14b For a **pretence** make long prayer

Lk.6:46 Why call ye Me, Lord, Lord, & do not the things I say?

Tit.1:16 They profess they know God; but in works deny Him

(See also Mat 7:22,23)

B. Some appear outwardly good, but are inwardly wicked:

Mat.7:15 In sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravening wolves

Mat.23:5 All their works they do for to be seen of men

Mat.23:27,28 Like whited sepulchres...appear beautiful outward... within are full of hypocrisy & iniquity

Lk.18:11,12 I thank Thee, that I am not as...this publican. I fast

(See also Jer.7:9,10)

C. False holiness & religious standards:

Mat.23:4 They bind heavy burdens...on men's shoulders

Acts 15:10 Why...put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples

(See also Mat.6:2,5,16)

D. False professions of love for God:

Isa.29:13 This people draw near Me with their mouth, & with their lips honour Me, but removed their heart far from Me

Jer.2:32 My people have forgotten Me days without number

Jer.5:1,2 Though they say, The Lord liveth; surely they swear falsely

Ezk.33:31a,32They come...as My people, & they hear thy words, but they will not do them

Mat.15:8Draweth nigh unto Me with mouth, & honoureth Me with lips; but their heart is far from Me (See also Mk.7:6)

1Jn.4:20If a man say, I love God, & hateth his brother...liar

(See also Mal.1:6b; Isa.58:1,2.)

10. Religious persecution:

A. Misled religious zeal frequently results in persecution:

Gen.4:3-8[God accepted Abel's offering & rejected Cain's.—In a jealous rage, Cain murdered Abel]
(See 1Jn.3:12,13)

Isa.66:5Your brethren...cast you out for My name's sake

Mat.23:31-35Children of them which killed the prophets...from the blood of righteous Abel unto...Zacharias

Jn.16:2Whosoever killeth you will think he doeth God service

Gal.4:29He that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now

(See also Lam.4:13,14; Mat.27:40-43; Jn.19:6,7.)

B. Religious jealousy motivates persecution:

Mk.15:10The chief priests had delivered Him (Jesus) for envy (See also Jn.11:47-50,53.)

Acts 13:44,45When Jews saw multitudes, they were filled with envy

Key chapters: Ezk.13 & 34; Jer.23; Mat.23; Rev.2 & 3.

Law of Christ, The

"The perfect law of liberty" vs. religious legalism

1. Salvation is purely by grace, not works:

Rom.3:28A man is justified by faith **without** the deeds of the law

Eph.2:8,9By grace (undeserved mercy) are ye saved through faith; it is the gift of God: Not of works

Tit.3:5aNot by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us

A. Salvation is not partly by grace & partly by good works:

Rom.11:6If by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace

B. Salvation was always by grace, even in the Old Testament:

Gen.6:8But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord

Gen.15:6(Abraham) believed in the Lord; & He counted it to him for righteousness (See also Rom.4:3,5-8,21,22)

Hab.2:4The just shall live by his faith

Heb.11:13[Old Testament saints] all died in faith...having seen (the promises) afar off...& were persuaded of them

C. Scrupulously keeping the Mosaic law never saved anyone:

Jn.1:17Law given by Moses, but grace & truth came by Jesus

Rom.3:20By the deeds of the law shall **no** flesh be justified

Rom.9:31Israel, which followed after the law...hath not attained unto the law of righteousness

Gal.2:16A man is **not** justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ (See also Gal.3:11)

Heb.7:19The law made nothing perfect, but...a **better** hope did

2. What was the Mosaic law?

A. It was a legal code that God gave Moses upon Mt. Sinai:

Exo.24:12The Lord said unto Moses, Come up to Me into the mount...& I will give thee a law...[to] teach them

(See also Exo.31:18; 32:15,16,19; 34:1,28.)

B. It was a strict code of justice & retribution:

Exo.21:23-25 Thou shalt give life for life...eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand...burning for burning

Heb.10:28 He that despised (broke) Moses' law **died** without mercy

C. The ten commandments were not merely "helpful moral guidelines", but strict laws carrying the death penalty:

Exo.20:2,3(1) Thou shalt have no other gods before Me [Death penalty: Exo.22:20; Deut.13:1-18.]

Exo.20:4,5(2) Thou shalt not make any graven image (Death penalty same as (1). See also Lev.26:1,30; Deut.4:23-26.)

Exo.20:7(3) Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord in vain [Death penalty: Lev.24:10-16]

Exo.20:8-10(4) Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy [Death penalty: Exo.31:14,15; 35:2.]

Exo.20:12(5) Honour thy father & thy mother [Death penalty: Exo.21:15,17; Lev.20:9; Deut.21:18-21.]

Exo.20:13(6) Thou shalt not kill (murder) [Death penalty: Exo. 21:12; Lev.24:17,21; Num.35:16-31.]

Exo.20:14(7) Thou shalt not commit adultery [Death penalty: Lev. 20:10; Deut.22:22.]

Exo.20:15(8) Thou shalt not steal [Punishment: Exo.22:7; Pro. 6:30; death penalty: Exo.21:16.]

Exo.20:16(9) Thou shalt not bear false witness [Punishment &/or death penalty: Deut.19:16-21]

Exo.20:17(10) Thou shalt not covet anything (of) thy neighbours'

Gal.4:21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not **hear** the law?

D. The ten commandments were only the beginning; Moses' law contained hundreds of other commandments:

Deut.27:26 **Cursed** be he that confirmeth not **all** the words of this law to do them (See also Gal.3:10)

(See also Deut.4:13,14a)

E. It was impossible to avoid guilt or to keep the whole law:

Jam.2:10 Whosoever shall keep the **whole** law, & yet offend in **one** point, he is guilty of **all**

3. The law served a purpose only for a time:

Gal.3:19 Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions till the Seed (Jesus) came

Gal.3:23 Before faith came, we were kept under the law

Heb.9:10 Carnal ordinances, imposed on them **until** the time of reformation

A. It was merely a copy, a shadow, of the real thing:

Col.2:16,17 Sabbath days...are a shadow of things to come; but the body [the reality that casts the shadow] is Christ

Heb.8:5 The example & shadow of Heavenly things

Heb.9:8b,9 First tabernacle...a figure for the time then present

Heb.10:1 The law (had) a shadow of good things to come, & not the very image of the things

1Jn.2:8 A new commandment...because the darkness is past, & the true light now shineth

B. The law was impossible to keep:

Jn.7:19 Did not Moses give you the law, & yet **none** of you keepeth the law? (See also Acts 7:53)

Acts 15:10 A yoke upon the neck...which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear

Rom.7:14-19 The law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. How to perform that which is good I find not

C. This showed man he was a sinner in need of grace:

Rom.3:20b By the law is the knowledge of sin

Rom.7:7 I had not known sin, but by the law

Rom.3:19 That...all the world may become guilty before God

Gal.3:24 The law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ

(See also Rom.4:15)

D. The old law was unprofitable & eventually to be replaced:

Rom.8:3 What the law could not do, in that it was **weak**

Heb.7:18 There is verily a disannulling of the [Mosaic law]...for the weakness & unprofitableness thereof

4. Atonement (payment) for breaking the law:

A. Because men constantly broke the law, forgiveness was needed, & a blood sacrifice was required:

Lev.4:1-4 If a soul shall **sin**...against the commandments of Lord ...bring a (bull)...kill the (bull) before the Lord

Lev.17:11 It is the **blood** that maketh an atonement for the soul

Heb.9:22 Without shedding of blood is **no** remission

(See also Lev.6:2,3,6,7; 16:3,5-11,15-22.)

B. But this never permanently freed man from sin:

Heb.10:1-4,11 It is not possible that the blood of bulls & of goats should take away sins...can never take away sins

C. But Jesus made a perfect & permanent sacrifice:

Mat.26:28 This is My blood...which is shed for remission of sins

Heb.9:7-14 By His Own blood...obtained **eternal** redemption for us

Heb.9:25-28a Christ was **once** offered to bear the sins of many

Heb.10:10-12 We are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all

1Pet.1:18,19 Ye were redeemed with the precious blood of Christ

1Jn.1:7b The blood of Jesus Christ...cleanseth us from **all** sin

(See also Jn.1:29; Rom.5:9.)

5. The new law, the law of Christ:

A. God promised a new law to replace the old Mosaic law:

Jer.31:31-33 The days come that I will make a new covenant...I will ...write (My law) in their **hearts**

Heb.8:7-10 Finding fault with (that first covenant), He saith, I will make a new covenant

B. Names of the new law:

A new covenant (Jer.31:31); the law of faith (Rom.3:27); the law of the Spirit of life (Rom.8:2); the law of righteousness (Rom.9:31); the law of Christ (Gal.6:2); the new testament (Heb.9:15); the perfect law of liberty (Jam.1:25); the royal law (Jam.2:8); the holy commandment (2Pet.2:21).

C. Jesus' death on the cross fulfilled & ended the law:

Mat.5:17 I am not come to destroy (the law), but to fulfil

Jn.19:30 (Jesus) said, It is finished [When He died for our sins, the Mosaic law ended for believers]

Rom.10:4 For Christ is the **end** of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth

Col.2:14 Blotting out [wiping the slate completely clean of] the ordinances (the law)...nailing it to His cross

D. The old Mosaic law is now discarded (for believers in Jesus):

Heb.8:13 He hath made the first (covenant) old. That which **decayeth** & waxeth **old** is ready to vanish away

Heb.10:9 He taketh away first (law), that He may establish second

Heb.8:6 A better covenant...established upon better promises

E. True believers are no longer bound by the rigid Mosaic law:

Rom.6:14b Ye are not under the law, but under **grace**

Gal.3:24,25 The law was our schoolmaster. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster

1Tim.1:9 The law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless...ungodly...profane...murderers

F. Jesus has liberated us from the Mosaic law:

Rom.7:4 Ye...are become dead to the law by the body of Christ

Rom.7:6 Now we are delivered from the law

Rom.8:1,2 The law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin & death

Gal.3:13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law

G. Jesus' Spirit & truth gives us freedom:

Jn.8:36 If the Son shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed

2Cor.3:17 Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty

Gal.5:1 The liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free

Gal.5:5 Through the Spirit...hope of righteousness by faith

Gal.5:18 If ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law

H. Read Jesus' liberating Words to be set free:

Jn.8:31,32 Ye shall know the truth, & truth shall make you free

Rom.10:17 Faith cometh by hearing...the Word of God

Jam.1:25 Whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, & continueth therein...shall be blessed in his deed

6. Now the commandment is to love God & our neighbour:

A. This fulfils the law, & fulfils your only obligation:

Mat.7:12 All things...ye would that men should do to you, do...to them: for this **is** the law (See Lk.6:31)

Mat.22:36-40 Thou shalt love God...thou shalt love thy neighbour. On these two commandments (depend) **all** the law

Rom.13:8 He that loveth another hath fulfilled the law

Rom.13:10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law

Gal.5:14 All the law is fulfilled in **one** word, even in this; Thou shalt **love** thy neighbour as thyself

Jam.2:8 If ye fulfil the royal law... Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well

(See also Mk.12:29-31)

B. Deeds done in pure, unselfish love are lawful:

Gal.5:22,23 Fruit of the Spirit is love...against such there is no law

1Cor.6:12 All things are lawful unto me (See also 1Cor.10:23)

Tit.1:15a Unto the pure, all things are pure

Lk.11:41bBehold, all things are clean unto you

C. But you have to have faith for your actions:

Rom.14:14To him that esteemeth (thinks) any thing to be unclean, to him it is unclean

Rom.14:22Happy is he that condemneth **not** himself in that thing which he alloweth

Rom.14:23He that doubteth is damned (judged)...for whatsoever is not of faith is sin

Tit.1:15bUnto (the) defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure

7. Living the new law:

A. In some ways, the law of Christ is stricter than Moses' law:

Mat.5:38-42[Exo.21:24 said:] An eye for an eye, & a tooth for a tooth: but I say unto you, resist not evil

Mat.5:43-45[The law] said, Love thy neighbour, & hate thine enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies

Lk.10:25-37Thou shalt love...thy neighbour as thyself. Who is my neighbour? [Even those you'd normally dislike]

Jam.4:17Him that knoweth to do good & doeth it not...it is sin

B. Only Jesus can give you the power to live His law:

Phi.2:13For it is God which worketh in you both to will & to do of His good pleasure

Phi.4:13I can do all things through Christ which strengthens me

2Cor.5:14aThe love of Christ constraineth (compels) us

2Cor.12:9My (God's) grace is sufficient for thee

8. Warnings against misusing the new law:

A. Selfish, unloving liberties:

Rom.14:15If thy brother be grieved...now walkest thou not (in love). Destroy not him with thy [liberty]

Rom.14:20All things indeed **are** pure; **but** it is evil for that man who eateth with offence

1Cor.6:12All things **are** lawful...but all things **not** expedient

1Cor.8:9,12Take heed lest...this liberty of yours become a stumblingblock to them that are weak
(See 1Cor.8:all)

1Cor.10:23All things are lawful for me, but all things edify not

B. Walk in love, not in lust & sin:

Rom.6:1,2Shall we...sin, that grace may abound? God forbid

Gal.5:13Use not liberty as an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another

1Pet.2:16As free, & not using your liberty for a cloak of maliciousness, but as the servants of God

(See also Rom.3:8; 14:all; 15:1,2.)

9. Beware of falling into religious legalism:

A. The concision: Believers still bound by the law:

Acts 21:20Many thousands of Jews...which believe (in Jesus); & they are all zealous of the (Mosaic) law

Phi.3:2,3Beware of evil workers, beware of the concision

(See also Acts 15:1,24; Gal.6:12,13; Rom.2:28,29.)

B. Don't be entangled again by the law:

Gal.3:1,3Are ye so foolish? Having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

Gal.5:1Stand fast therefore in the liberty...& be not entangled again in the yoke of bondage [to the law]

Col.2:20-22If ye be dead with Christ...**why** are ye subject to ordinances...the commandments & doctrines of men?

C. Legalism is self-righteousness & denies Jesus' sacrifice:

Rom.10:3Going about to establish **their** righteousness, have not submitted unto the righteousness of **God**

Gal.2:21If righteousness come by the law, then Christ (died) in **vain** (for no reason) (See also Gal.5:4)

D. The law can't save you or make you righteous:

Acts 13:39 By Him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could **not** be justified by the law

Rom.9:31,32 Israel, which followed after the law...hath **not** attained to the law of righteousness

Phi.3:3-9 Not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ

E. Those who attempt to obey the law are under bondage:

Gal.3:10 Cursed is everyone that continueth not in **all** things

Gal.4:21-31 [The allegory of the two covenants, one of freedom, the other of bondage]

Gal.5:2-4 [Who tries to keep the law]...is a debtor to do **whole** law

Jam.2:10 Whosoever shall keep the whole law, & yet offend in one point, he is guilty of **all**

10. Trying to legalistically keep the law is not God's will:

A. Legalists completely miss the main issue:

Mat.15:2-6 Why do Thy disciples transgress tradition of elders? Ye transgress commandment of God by your tradition

Mat.23:23 Woe! For ye pay tithes of [tiny spices but] have omitted weightier (more important) matters...mercy & faith

Mat.23:24 Ye...strain at a gnat, & swallow a camel

Mk.7:6-8 Their heart is **far** from Me...ye hold the tradition of men, [such] as the washing of pots & cups

Jn.5:8-11 [Jesus told a lame man, Take up thy bed & walk. The legalists ignored the miraculous healing & told him it was not lawful to carry his bed on the Sabbath]

B. Legalism is a crushing weight to those it is imposed upon:

Mat.23:4 They bind **heavy** burdens & grievous to be borne, & lay them on men's shoulders

2Cor.3:6b The letter **killeth**, but the Spirit giveth life

C. The solution: Walk in God's love & Spirit:

Mic.6:8What doth the Lord require of thee, but to...love mercy, & to walk humbly with thy God?

Jn.6:63aIt is the Spirit that quickeneth (makes alive); the flesh profiteth **nothing**

Rom.7:6We should serve in newness of spirit, & not in the oldness of the letter [of the law]

2Cor.3:6aNot...the letter [of the law], but of the Spirit

Gal.6:2Bear one another's burdens, & **so** fulfil law of Christ

11. Even under the Mosaic law, God's love & mercy prevailed:

A. God always wanted love & mercy more than legalism:

Hos.6:6I desired mercy, & not sacrifice; & the knowledge of God more than [sacrifices] (See also Mat.12:7)

Mic.6:6-8Shall I come before Him with...offerings? What doth the Lord require of thee, but to...love mercy

Mk.12:33To love Him with all the heart...& to love his neighbour... is **more** than all...offerings & sacrifices

(See also Deut.10:12; 1Sam.15:22; Psa.40:6; 51:16,17; 69:30,31; Isa.1:11-16; Jer.7:22,23.)

B. He allowed exceptions & the Mosaic law to be broken:

2Chr.30:1-3[King Hezekiah celebrated the passover in second month, in stead of first—Exo.12] (Also Num.9:1-11)

2Chr.30:16-18aMany in the congregation were not sanctified...yet did they eat the passover **otherwise** than it was written

2Chr.30:18b-20Hezekiah prayed, The Lord pardon every one...though he be not cleansed. The Lord hearkened to Hezekiah

Mat.12:5On the Sabbath days the priests...profane the Sabbath, & are blameless (See also Jn.7:22,23)

Mat.12:1-4David...did eat the shewbread, which was **not** lawful for him to eat (See 1Sam.21:6)

C. Even the highly religious, those bound by the law, broke it:

Exo.31:14,15[The Mosaic law:] Whosoever doeth **any** work in the Sabbath day, he shall surely be put to death

Mat.12:11[They pulled their sheep out of a pit on the Sabbath]

Lk.13:15[All of them led their ox or ass away to watering then]

Jn.7:22,23Ye on the Sabbath day circumcise a man

D. Certainly then, we who are not bound by it, can break it:

Mat.12:10-13It is lawful to do **well** on the Sabbath days [even if it means breaking the Mosaic law]

Lk.13:11-16Ought not this woman...be [freed] on the Sabbath day?

Jn.7:22-24[If **ye** break the Sabbath, why] are ye angry at **Me**, because I have made a man whole on the Sabbath day?

(See also Jn.9:14-16)

Key chapters: Rom.3,4,5,7,9,10,14; Gal.2-5; Heb.3-11.

Creation vs. Evolution

1. God created the world, not chance evolution:

Gen.1:1In the beginning **God** created the heaven & the earth

Neh.9:6Thou hast made the earth, & all things therein

Isa.45:12I have made the earth, & created man upon it

Jn.1:1-3All things were made by Him (Jesus); & without Him was not anything made that was made

Col.1:16For by Him (Jesus) were all things created

Heb.1:2bHis Son...by Whom also He made the worlds

(See also: Eph.3:9b; Psa.102:25; Isa.48:13; Acts 4:24; 14:15; 17:24.)

2. God's Word created (& maintains) the universe:

Psa.33:6By the Word of the Lord were the heavens made

Psa.33:9He spake, & it was done; He commanded, & it stood fast

Col.1:17He (Jesus) is before all things, & by Him all things **consist** [hold together]

Heb.1:3aUpholding all things by the Word of His **power**

Heb.11:3The worlds were framed by the Word of God

3. God's creation is proof of His existence:

Job 12:7-9The earth...shall teach thee. Who knoweth not...that the hand of the Lord hath wrought this?

Psa.19:1The heavens declare the glory of God; & the firmament (universe & stars) sheweth His handiwork

Rom.1:20The invisible things of Him are...understood by the things that are made...so they are without excuse

4. Jesus believed in & quoted from Genesis:

Mat.19:4,5Have ye not read...He...made them at the beginning (See also Gen.1:27; 2:24.)

Jn.5:46,47If ye believe not **his** (Moses') writings [Genesis], how shall ye believe **My** Words?

5. False science doesn't have the answers:

1Tim.6:20Avoiding...oppositions of science **falsely** so called

2Tim.3:7Ever learning, & never able to come to a knowledge Psa.14:1 The **fool** hath said in his heart, "There is no God"

Isa.44:24,25The Lord turneth...wise men backward, & maketh their knowledge foolish

Jer.2:27Saying to a stone, "Thou hast brought me forth"

Jer 8:9The [so-called] wise men have rejected the Word of the Lord; what wisdom is there in them?

Rom.1:21-23When they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, professing themselves to be wise, they became fools

Rom.1:25They changed truth [of creation] into a lie [evolution] & worshipped the creature more than the Creator

1Cor.1:18-21Hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?

6. The Bible & true science:

A. The days of Genesis chapter one were not geological ages:

Gen.1:11-19[Plants created on day 3, the sun on day 4. Plants could live 24 hours without sun, but not eons]

Exo.20:9-11[Rest the 7th **day**, not eon] For in 6 days the Lord made heaven & earth...& rested the 7th day

B. Prophetic descriptions of recent "discoveries" about creation:

Job 36:27,28[Water cycle:] **Rain** according to the **vapour** thereof: which the clouds do drop & **distill**

Eccl.1:7All the rivers run into the sea...from whence the rivers come, thither they return again

Job 38:22Hast thou entered into the **treasures** of the snow? [No two snowflake crystals on earth are alike]

Eccl.1:6[Jet stream:] The wind...whirleth about continually, returneth according to his **circuits**

Heb.11:3bThings which are seen [material world] were **not** made of things which do appear

Job 26:7He...hangeth the earth upon **nothing**

Isa.40:22It is He that sitteth upon the **circle** of the earth

C. "Prehistoric" beasts are mentioned in the Bible. They co- existed with man before the flood:

Gen.1:21God created great whales [Heb: "great **sea monsters**"]

Job 40:15-24Behold now **behemoth**...he moveth his tail like a cedar

Job 41:1-34**Leviathan**...shall not one be cast down even at the **sight** of him? When he raiseth up himself...

D. Each species created distinct & separate; the unbridgeable gap of sterility separates species:

Gen.1:11,12,21,24,25Every (plant &) living creature...brought forth after their **kind** (species)

E. The age of the earth:

NOTE: Secular history tells us that Solomon finished building the Jew-ish temple in 1012 BC.— And the genealogies listed in Gen.5:1-29; 7:6; 11:10-26; 21:5; 25:26; 47:5-12; Exo.12:40,41 & 1Ki.6:1,38 which cover from Adam to Solomon show that the earth was created only around **4,000 BC**, about 6,000 years ago, **not** billions of years ago.

7. God, as the Creator, has rights of ownership of everything:

Job 41:11 Whatsoever is under the whole heaven is Mine

Psa.24:1,2 Earth is the Lord's...& they that dwell therein

Psa.50:10-12 Every beast of the forest is Mine...the world is Mine

Psa.89:11 The heavens are Thine, the earth also is Thine

Psa.95:3-5 Sea is His...He made it: His hands formed the land

(See also Psa.102:25; Isa.45:18.)

8. He expects & deserves reverence & worship from His creations:

Psa.33:6-9 By the Word of the Lord were the heavens made...Let all the earth fear the Lord (&) stand in awe of Him

Psa.148:5 Praise the name of the Lord: for He...created

Eccl.12:1 Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth

Isa.45:9 Woe unto him that striveth with his Maker

Isa.48:12,13 Hearken unto Me...Mine hand hath laid the foundation of the earth, &...spanned the heavens

Jer.32:17 Thou hast made the heaven & the earth by Thy great power...& there is nothing too hard for Thee

Jer.33:2,3 Thus saith the Lord, the maker, Call unto Me

Acts 14:15 Turn from vanities...unto God, which made heaven, & earth, & the sea, & all things that are therein

(See also Jer.5:22; Isa.42:5; Amos 4:13.)

9. God has power to control His creation:

Job 38:8-11 Here shall thy proud waves be stayed [must stop]

Psa.104:5-35 [A description of God's control of creation]

Psa.135:5-7 Whatsoever the Lord pleased, that did He... in earth

(See also Job chaps. 26,28,38-41; Psa.148:6-14; Mat.8:26; Mk.4:39; Lk.8:24.)

10. As Creator, God is above all "gods":

1Chr.16:26The gods of the people are idols: but Lord made heavens

Psa.95:3The Lord is a great God...above all gods

Jer.10:11-13The gods...have not made the heavens & the earth, (God) hath made the earth by His power

Endtime, The

1. The last days; signs of the times:

A. We should discern the signs of the times:

Mat.16:3bCan ye not discern the signs of the times?

Mat.24:3What shall be the sign of Thy coming, & of the end of the world?

Mat.24:39(Unbelievers) knew not until the flood came

1Thes.5:2,4**Ye**, brethren, are **not** (to be) in darkness

2Pet.3:3-4Scoffers saying, "Where is His coming? All things continue as they were..."

B. Greatly increased learning:

Dan.12:4Time of the end: Many shall run to & fro, & knowledge shall be increased

2Tim.3:1,7[Modern education:] Ever learning & never able to come to the knowledge of the truth

Mat.24:14Gospel preached in **all** the world [now possible by radio, TV, world travel, etc.]...**then** the end

C. Greatly increased natural disasters:

Mat.24:7There shall be famines, & pestilences & earthquakes [Increasing in number & severity; famines worsened by world economic troubles]

Lk.21:26Men's hearts failing them for fear [unprecedented rate of heart attacks today]

D. Greatly increased wickedness & wars:

2Tim.3:1,13In the last days...evil men shall wax worse & worse

Mat.24:6Wars & rumours of wars...nation against nation

Mat.24:37,38As the days of Noah were (corrupt & violent) so shall

Lk.21:25bUpon earth distress of nations [civil unrest]

E. Rampant homosexuality in the end time:

Lk.17:28-30As it was in the days of Lot [rampant sodomy]...even thus shall it be in the day when (Jesus returns)

Rom.1:24,26-28Uncleanness...lusts...dishonour their bodies...vile affections...against nature...working that which is unseemly

2Tim.3:1-3aIn the last days...men shall be without **natural** affection

(See also Gen.9:20-27; 13:12,13; 18:18-33; 19:1-30; 2Pet.2:6-8.)

F. Great falling away from true faith:

2Thes.2:2,3The day of Christ shall not come except there come a falling away (apostasy) first

Mat.24:12Iniquity shall abound...the love of **many** shall wax cold

Mat.24:5,11,24Arise false Christs, & false prophets...deceive many

1Tim.4:1In latter times some shall depart from the faith... giving heed to doctrines of devils

G. Increased persecution of true Christians:

Mat.24:9,10Ye shall be hated of all nations...many be offended

Lk.21:16,17Ye shall be betrayed...& some of you...put to death

H. What all these fulfilled signs mean:

Mat.24:33When ye see all these things...(Jesus' coming) **near**

Lk.21:28When these things **begin** to come to pass

Lk.21:31,32**This** generation not pass till **all** be fulfilled

2. How to recognise the Antichrist world government:

Dan.8:25By peace (he) shall destroy many

Dan.11:21Come in **peaceably**, & obtain the kingdom by flatteries [lying propaganda]

Dan.11:23Work **deceitfully**...become strong with (deceive & use) a small people (the poor)

Dan.11:24Enter **peaceably** even upon the fattest (nations)

Dan.11:24He shall scatter among them (the poor)...the riches

Dan.11:24He shall forecast his devices against the strongholds

Dan.11:39bHe shall divide the land for gain (popularity)

Dan.11:36,37Exalt himself...speak things against the God of gods

3. The Antichrist & his rise:

1Jn.2:18It is the last time: (the) Antichrist shall come

2Thes.2:1-4That day (of Jesus' coming) shall not come except... that man of sin be revealed

2Thes.2:9Whose coming is after (according to) working of Satan

2Thes.2:10-12God shall send them strong delusion (the Antichrist)... who believed not the truth

Dan.8:23In the latter time...a king of fierce countenance...shall stand up

Rev.13:4The dragon (Satan) which gave power unto the beast

Rev.13:7Power was given him over...all nations

Dan.11:37Neither shall he regard God of his **fathers**

Dan.11:37Neither...regard...desire of women

Dan.11:37Neither shall he regard...any god

4. Signing of the covenant:

Dan.9:27aHe shall confirm the covenant for one week (7 years)

Dan.11:30bThe holy covenant [It's a **religious** pact]

5. Breaking of the covenant & daily sacrifice (Jewish worship) stopped:

Dan.8:11,12By him (the Antichrist) daily sacrifice was taken away

Dan.9:27bIn midst of the week [after 3-1/2 years of the 7-year covenant] shall he cause the sacrifice to cease

Dan.11:31Take away the daily sacrifice; place the abomination that maketh desolate

2Thes.2:4He (the Antichrist) as God sitteth in the temple of God

6. Great tribulation:

A. A time of intense trouble & persecution:

Dan.12:1bThere shall be a time of trouble such as never was

Mat.24:15,21When ye see the abomination of desolation...**then** shall be great tribulation

Mat.24:22Except those days be shortened (cut off), there should no flesh be saved

B. Antichrist blasphemes, says he is God:

Dan.7:25a(Antichrist) speaks great words against the most High

2Thes.2:3b,4(Antichrist) exalteth himself above all that is called God

Rev.13:6(Antichrist) opened mouth in blasphemy against God

C. Much of the world worships him:

Rev.13:8All that dwell upon the earth worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life

Rev.13:13,14(Antichrist) doeth great wonders...& deceiveth them that dwell on the earth

D. The mark, the image & enforced worship of the beast:

Rev.13:15Image of the beast...speak & cause that as many as would not worship (it)...be killed

Rev.13:16,17No man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark or the number of his name

Rev.13:18The number of the beast...is **666**

Rev.14:9-11If any man receive his mark...shall be tormented

E. The false prophet:

Rev.13:11-16He causeth the earth to worship the (Antichrist)... deceiveth them

Rev.19:20False prophet wrought miracles...he deceived them

F. The Antichrist's persecution of Christians:

Rev.13:7To make **war** with the saints, & to overcome them, & power given him over...all nations

Dan.7:21Made war with the saints, & prevailed against them

Dan.7:25He shall...wear out the saints of the most High (God)

Dan.8:24He shall...destroy the mighty & the holy people

Dan.11:33They that understand...shall fall by the sword

Dan.11:35**Some** of them of understanding (teachers) shall fall

Dan.12:7bHe shall...scatter the power of the holy people

G. Why God allows us to suffer tribulation:

Dan.11:35To try them, & to purge, & to make them white

Dan.12:10Many shall be purified, & made white, & tried

Isa.48:10I have refined thee...in the furnace of affliction (See also Pro.17:3; Eph.5:27.)

H. Future Heavenly reward for enduring tribulation:

Rev.7:9,13-17These...came out of great tribulation...therefore are they before the throne of God day & night

Rev.20:4Them...which had not worshipped the beast...lived & reigned with Christ

I. Christians overcome & survive despite persecution:

Rev.12:11They overcame him (Antichrist) by blood of the Lamb & by the word of their testimony

Dan.11:32bPeople that know God shall be strong & do exploits

Rom.8:35-37In all these things we are more than conquerors

1Cor.15:51,52We shall **not all** sleep (die)...we shall be changed

1Thes.4:16,17We which are alive and remain [**Many** Christians still alive at Jesus' 2nd coming]

J. Protection & provision during tribulation:

Rev.9:3,4[The wicked will be tormented, but we will be spared]

Rev.11:3,5-7Two witnesses have power to smite earth with plagues

Rev.12:6Fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there

Rev.12:14Fly into the wilderness...where she is nourished

K. Witnessing during the tribulation:

Dan.11:33aThey that understand...shall instruct **many**

L. Length of the great tribulation:

Dan.7:25;12:7A time, times, and a half (3-1/2 years)

Rev.12:14A time, & times & half a time (3-1/2 years)

Rev.11:2; 13:5Forty two months (= 3-1/2 years)

Rev.11:3;12:61,260 days

7. The second coming of Jesus Christ:

A. After the great tribulation (but before the wrath):

Mat.24:29-30Immediately **after** the tribulation...they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds

2Thes.2:1-3That day (of Jesus' coming) shall not come, except... first...that man of sin (the Antichrist) be revealed

B. Jesus' coming will not be a secret event:

1Thes.5:1-4**Ye**...are not in darkness, that that day...[**We** will be expecting Jesus, but **world** will be surprised] (See also Mat.24:38,39)

Mat.24:23-26If any say unto you, Here is Christ, or there...He is in the secret chambers; believe it not

Mat.24:30The tribes of the earth shall mourn, & **see** the Son of man coming...with **power** & great **glory**

Acts 1:9-11Jesus...shall so **come** in **like** manner (in the clouds)

Rev.1:7He cometh with clouds, & **every** eye shall see Him

C. The tremendous signs of His coming:

Mat.24:27As the **lightning** shineth from east to west...so shall the coming...be [Jesus lights up entire sky]

Mat.24:29Sun be darkened...moon not give light [**Jesus** shines]

1Thes.4:16Lord shall **shout...voice** of archangel...**trump** of God [Lots of noise & commotion]

8. The resurrection & rapture:

A. The living raptured, the dead resurrected:

1Thes.4:14Them which sleep in Jesus (departed saints) will God bring **with** Him

Isa.26:19Thy dead men shall live, together with my dead body shall they arise

1Thes.4:15,16The dead in Christ (their bodies) shall rise first

1Thes.4:17**Then** we which are **alive** shall be caught up (raptured)

Mat.24:31Sound of a trumpet...gather together [rapture] elect

1Cor.15:51We shall not all (die), but we shall **all** be changed

1Cor.15:52At last trump, dead shall be **raised** incorruptible, & **we** shall be **changed** (transformed)

Job 19:25-27In my **flesh** shall I see God...though (I) be consumed [Resurrected in bodies long dead]

Rev.20:6aBlessed & holy...hath part in **first** resurrection

(See also 1Cor.15:53,54; 2Cor.5:1-4.)

B. Our powerful, immortal resurrection bodies:

Lk.20:36Neither can they die any more...equal unto angels; being the children of the resurrection

Phi.3:20,21Jesus...change our bodies...like **His** glorious body

1Jn.3:2When He shall appear, we shall be like **Him**

Lk.24:36-40A spirit hath not **flesh & bones**, as ye see **Me** have

Jn.20:19,26The doors were shut...Jesus...stood in the midst

Lk.24:30,31As He sat at meat...He vanished out of their sight

Lk.24:42,43He took it (fish & an honeycomb) & did eat

Acts 10:40,41We did eat & drink with Him after He rose from dead

1Cor.6:14God hath raised up (Jesus), & will also raise us up

(See 1Cor.15:19-55—"The Resurrection Chapter")

9. The marriage supper of the Lamb:

Rev.7:9,13-17Great multitude (of Christians)...which came out of great tribulation...stood before the throne

Rev.19:1,6-9Much people in Heaven...marriage of the Lamb is come

Rom.7:4[The church, all true Christians, marry Jesus]

Hos.2:19,20I (God) will betroth thee unto Me for ever(See also Isa.62:5; 2Cor.11:2.)

10. The judgment seat of Christ:

A. Christians rewarded or punished for their works:

Rom.14:10-12Judgement seat...every one give account of himself

2Cor.5:10We (Christians) must appear before the judgment seat of Christ...receive (rewards for) things done

Rev.22:12My reward is with Me, to give every man according as his work shall be

B. Jesus praises & rewards some, is ashamed of others:

Dan.12:3They that turn many to righteousness...**shine** as stars

Mat.25:21Well done, thou good & faithful...enter **joy** of Lord

1Cor.3:11-14If any man's works abide, he shall receive a **reward**

1Cor.3:15If any man's work burned...**suffer loss**...be saved

Mk.8:38Of him (some Christians) shall the Son...be **ashamed**

Dan.12:2Many shall awake...**some** to shame & contempt

C. The crown of life—A reward for faithful service:

Rev.2:10bBe thou faithful...I will give thee a crown of life

Jam.1:12Crown of life...Lord promised to them that love Him

2Tim.4:7,8I have kept the faith...a crown of righteousness

11. The wrath of God upon the earth:

A. God's wrath upon the remaining unsaved:

Isa.26:19-21Dead men shall live [resurrection of saved]...(then) the Lord cometh to punish inhabitants of the earth

Isa.13:9-11The day of the Lord cometh with wrath & anger...He shall destroy the sinners...punish the world

Rev.14:9,10If any man worship the beast...the same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God

Rev.16:1-21[Description of the plagues of God's wrath]

B. The utter destruction of Babylon by fire:

Rev.17:1,5,18The great whore...Babylon the great...that great city which reigneth over the kings of the earth

Rev.18:2,3,11[Babylon is the world merchant/commercial system]

Rev.18:8In **one day**...she shall be **utterly** burned with fire

Rev.18:17In **one hour** so great riches is come to nought

Rev.17:1610 horns (nations) shall...make her desolate & burn her with fire

12. The battle of Armageddon:

A. The Antichrist, his allies & eastern kings gather to fight:

Rev.16:12Euphrates...water thereof dried...the way of the kings of the east prepared

Rev.16:13,14Devils...go forth unto (Antichrist's) kings of the whole world, to gather them to the battle

Rev.16:16He gathered them into a place called...Armageddon

Rev.19:19Kings of the earth gathered to make war against Him Rev.17:12-14 Ten kings...these shall make war with the Lamb

Ezk.38:1-9Magog (Russia)...in the latter years thou shalt come into Israel...many people (allies) with thee

B. The Lord & His armies destroy the Antichrist's forces:

Deut.32:41-43Rejoice...for He will avenge blood of His servants

2Thes.1:7-9Jesus shall be revealed from Heaven...taking vengeance on (the wicked)

Jude 14,15The Lord cometh with ten thousands of His saints to execute judgement upon all

Rev.19:11[Jesus comes riding on a white horse to make **war**]

Rev.19:14,15Armies in Heaven (saints) followed Him on white horses

Rev.19:19,21The remnant (of the Antichrist's armies) were **slain**

Isa.11:4With the breath of His lips shall He slay wicked

Rev.19:20The beast was taken...& the false prophet...these both were cast alive into a lake of fire

C. The cleanup after the battle:

Isa.66:15,16The slain of the Lord shall be many

Rev.19:17,18Saying to fowls, Come...that ye may eat (corpses)

Ezk.39:17-20(Birds of carrion) filled...with men of war

Ezk.39:11,127 months shall (Jews) be burying them...in Israel

13. The millennium:

A. One thousand years of peace:

Rev.20:1-3Satan...bound 1,000 years...cast into bottomless pit

B. The saints rule with Jesus over all the earth:

Dan.2:44In days of these kings shall...**God** set up a Kingdom

Dan.7:13,14Son of man...there was given Him a Kingdom, that all peoples, nations & tongues should serve Him

Dan.7:18,22,27The Kingdom...given to the people of the saints [true Christians]

Rev.20:4,6They lived and reigned **with** Christ a **1,000 years**

Rev.2:26I will give (overcomers) power over the nations

Rev.2:27He shall rule them with a rod of iron (authority)

Rev.5:10Made us kings & priests...we shall reign on earth

(See also 2Tim.2:12a; 1Cor.6:2; 15:24,25; Psa.22:27,28; 47:2,3,7,8; 72:6-8,11,19.)

C. His rule will be just & righteous:

Psa.67:4Let nations be glad...Thou shalt judge...righteously

Psa.72:3,4He shall judge the poor...He shall save the needy

Psa.98:8,9With righteousness shall He judge the world

(See Psa.45:6; Isa.14:5,7.)

D. Heavenly conditions of the millennium:

Isa.11:6-8[Peace with animals & nature during the millennium] The wolf shall dwell with the lamb...calf & the lion

Isa.11:9Shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain

Isa.65:25The wolf & lamb shall feed together...lion eat straw

Hos.2:18In that day will I make a covenant with the beasts...& I will...break the sword out of the earth

E. Men will live for centuries, like before the flood:

Isa.65:20For the child shall die an hundred years old

F. Peace on earth:

Isa.14:5-7The whole earth is at rest, & is quiet

Isa.2:4They shall learn war no more [true disarmament] (See also Mic.4:3)

Psa.46:9He maketh wars to cease [weapons are destroyed]

G. Everyone on earth will know about the Lord:

Isa.2:2,3 All nations flow unto [Kingdom to learn God's Word]

Jer.31:34 They shall teach no more...know the Lord: for they shall all know Me

Hab.2:14 Earth shall be filled with the knowledge of...the Lord

Psa.22:27 All the kindreds of the nations shall worship Thee

H. Some will disobey & be punished:

Zech.14:16,17 Whoso will not come...upon them shall be no rain

Psa.2:8-10 Shalt break them with a rod of iron [rule by force]

Isa.26:10 The wicked...will not learn righteousness; in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly

14. The battle of Gog & Magog:

Psa.2:1-5 The heathen rage [& rebel against Jesus' rule]

Rev.20:7 When the thousand years are expired...Satan loosed

Rev.20:8,9a He shall deceive the nations...gather them to battle

Rev.20:9b Fire came down from Heaven & devoured them [rebels]

2Pet.3:10-13 Elements melt with fervent heat...earth burned up... (atmospheric) heavens on fire shall be dissolved

Psa.78:69b The earth which He hath established **forever** [Only earth's **crust** melts; globe is permanent]

Isa.40:4 Every valley shall be exalted, every mountain low [Earth's surface melted down evenly]

15. Great white throne judgment:

Rev.20:10 The devil was cast (directly) into the lake of fire

Rev.20:11 And I saw a great white throne (in Heaven)

Jn.5:29 And they shall come forth...unto the resurrection of damnation (judgement)

Rev.20:5a Rest of the dead live not again until the 1,000 years finished [**this** resurrection at **end** of Millennium]

Rev.20:12,13The (unsaved) dead judged...according to their works

Lk.12:47,48He that knew not...shall be beaten with **few** stripes [Differences of punishment] (See also Rom.2:12,14)

Job 34:10,11For the work of a man shall He render unto him

Rev.20:15,21:8(Those) not written in book of life cast into lake of fire...the second death

16. New heaven & new earth:

A. The Heavenly city comes down to earth:

Rev.21:1I saw a **new** (atmospheric) heaven & a **new** earth...& there was no more sea [3-4 times more land area]

Rev.21:10Holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven (space)

Rev.21:2I saw...New Jerusalem, coming down (to earth)

Rev.21:3(City) of God is with men, & He will dwell (on **earth**)

B. Description of the Heavenly city:

Heb.11:10A city, whose builder & maker is God

Rev.21:16[The city is 1,500 miles high, wide & broad]

Rev.21:12,17[The wall around base of the city is 214 feet high]

Rev.21:14,18-20[The wall is made of 12 layers of precious stones]

Rev.21:12,21The 12 gates were 12 (gigantic) pearls

Rev.21:18The city was pure gold, like unto clear glass

Rev.21:21bThe street...was pure gold, as...transparent glass

Rev.21:23,25The city had no need of the sun...for the glory of God did lighten it...no night there

Rev.22:1A pure river of life [flows through city]

Rev.22:2On either side of the river, was...the tree of life

Jn.14:2-3In My Father's house (city) are many mansions

C. Only saved live in the city; unsaved nations outside:

Rev.21:24,27Only they which are written in the book of life

Rev.22:2Leaves of the tree for healing of the (sick) nations

Heb.11:13-16Pilgrims & strangers...God prepared for them a city

D. Eternal life & happiness in Heaven forever:

Rev.21:5Behold, I make all things new

Rev.22:3aAnd there shall be no more curse

Rev.7:17God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes

Rev.21:4Shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying... former things are passed away

Rev.21:7He that overcometh shall inherit all things

Psa.36:7-9Make them drink of the river of Thy pleasures

Heb.13:14Here we have no...city, but we seek one to come

Marriage & the Home

--Includes marital relations & parental duties

1. Marriage:

A. God has ordained & blessed marriage:

Gen.2:18The Lord God said, It is not good that man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him

Pro.5:18Be blessed: & rejoice with the wife of thy youth

Pro.18:22Whoso findeth a wife findeth a good thing, & obtaineth favour of the Lord

Eccl.9:9aLive joyfully with the wife whom thou lovest all the days of thy life...which He (God) hath given thee

Mat.19:4,5a(God) made them male & female...for this cause shall a man leave father & mother, & cleave to his wife

B. Marriage is the solution to many problems:

1Cor.7:2To avoid fornication (sexual immorality), let every man have his own wife, & every woman her...husband

1Cor.7:9Let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn

1Tim.5:14I will that younger women marry, bear children, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully

C. It gives strength & companionship:

Gen.2:18God said, It is not good that man should be alone

Eccl.4:9-11Two are better than one...they have a good reward

1Pet.3:7Heirs together of the grace of life

D. Marriage is a commitment:

Ezk.16:8I sware unto thee, & entered into a covenant with thee ...& thou becamest mine

(See also Hos.2:19,20)

2. A husband's responsibility toward his wife:

A. The husband is to tenderly love his wife:

Eph.5:25Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, & gave Himself for it

Eph.5:28So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies

Eph.5:33aLet every one of you...so love his wife even as himself

Col.3:19Husbands, love your wives & be not bitter against them

B. The husband is to honour, praise & please his wife:

1Pet.3:7Husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving **honour** unto the wife...the weaker vessel

Pro.31:28Her husband also (arises up), & he praiseth her

1Cor.7:33He that is married careth... how he may please his wife

C. He is to listen to & heed his wife's wise counsel:

Judg.13:19-23[Manoah's wife wisely explained that there was no need to fear]

1Sam.25:9-33[Abigail, the wife of Nabal, wisely pacified David]

2Sam.20:1,2,7,13b-22[Wise woman of Abel "went unto all the people in her wisdom" & spared her city from destruction]

2Ki.4:8-10[Woman of Shunem] said to her husband...[Elisha] is an holy man of God. Let us make (him) a chamber

(See also 2Sam.14:1-15; Dan.5:10-12; Mat.27:19.)

3. A wife's attributes & responsibilities:

A. The Bible's description of a virtuous wife:

Pro.11:16A gracious woman retaineth honour

Pro.12:4A virtuous woman is a crown to her husband

Pro.19:14bA prudent (wise, understanding) wife is from the Lord

Pro.31:10-12Who can find a virtuous woman? her price is far above rubies (See all of Pro.31:10-31)

Pro.31:26She openeth her mouth with wisdom: & in her tongue is the law of kindness

1Tim.3:11Their wives (should) be grave (reverent), not slanderers

Tit.2:4Teach the young women to be sober (serious)

Tit.2:5aTo be discreet (wise), chaste...good, obedient

B. Her duty to guide the home & children:

1Tim.5:14Marry, bear children, guide the house

Psa.128:3Thy wife shall be as a fruitful vine

Pro.14:1aEvery wise woman buildeth her house

Pro.31:27She looketh well to the ways of her household, & eateth not the bread of idleness

1Tim.3:11 Even so must their wives be...faithful in all things

Tit.2:4 Teach the young women...to love their children

Tit.2:5a To be...keepers at home (homemakers)

C. Examples of how wives should not be:

Pro.7:11 She is loud & stubborn, her feet abide not in her house

1Tim.5:13 They learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house...tattlers & busybodies

D. Virtue is more important than physical beauty:

Pro.11:22 As a jewel of gold in a swine's snout, so is a fair woman which is without discretion (good judgment)

Pro.31:30 Beauty is vain, but a woman that feareth the Lord, she shall be praised

1Pet.3:3-5 Whose adorning let it not be **outward**...(but) the ornament of a meek & quiet spirit which is (very precious)

4. Duties of wives toward their husbands:

A. To be a companion:

Pro.31:11 The heart of her husband doth safely trust in her

Mal.2:14b She (is) thy companion, & the wife of thy covenant

B. To love & please their husbands:

Pro.31:12 She will do him good & not evil all days of her life

1Cor.7:34b She that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband

Tit.2:4 Teach the young women to...love their husbands

C. To be subject unto the husband:

1Cor.11:3 Know, that...the head of the woman is the man

1Cor.11:8,9 Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man

Eph.5:33b (Let) the wife see that she reverence her husband

Col.3:18 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord

(See also Tit.2:5; 1Pet.3:1a .)

D. Submit out of love for Jesus:

Eph.5:22 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, **as** unto the **Lord**

1Pet.3:1-6 Wives, be in subjection to your own husbands [with]...a meek & quiet spirit...in the sight of God

5. Spiritual ministries not restricted to men:

A. Women's place in spiritual ministries may equal or surpass men's:

Gal.3:28 There is neither male nor female: for ye are all **one** in Christ Jesus

Rom.2:11 There is no respect of persons with God

B. Women disciples & leading workers of the early church:

Mk.16:9 [Mary Magdalene was honoured by being the **first** person to see Jesus after His resurrection] (See also Lk.8: 1-3; Jn.20:1-18.)

Jn.19:25 [When all His male followers—except John—fled & hid, faithful women stayed with Jesus at His crucifixion] (See also Mat.27:55,56)

Rom.16:1,2 I **commend** to you Phebe...receive her in the **Lord**...assist her in **whatsoever** business she hath need of you

Rom.16:3,4 Priscilla & Aquila my helpers [Priscilla, the wife, was often respectfully mentioned **first**—Acts 18:2,18]

1Cor.16:16 Submit yourselves unto...**every one** [women included] that help eth w/ us, & laboureth (Also 1Thes.5:12,13)

Phi.4:3a **Help** those women which laboured **with** me in the gospel

(See also Rom.16:6,12a,13; 1Tim.5:1,2; 2Tim.4:21.)

C. Paul's personal preferences were not intended to be taken as law:

1Cor.14:34,35 (Compare with Joel 2:28; Acts 2:17.)

1Tim.2:12 (Compare with 1Cor.7:6,12a,25)

D. Wives who were honoured & exalted:

Judg.13:1-10[Angel appeared to Manoah's wife twice, later to him]

1Sam.25:38,39[God slew wicked Nabal, but honoured his wife, Abigail, by having her marry David, future king of Israel]

2Ki.4:8-37[The "great woman of Shunem", not her husband, was the honoured one in this story]
(See also 2Ki.8:1-6)

Lk.1:26-35[Archangel Gabriel appeared to Mary **first**; three months later to Joseph—Lk.1:56; Mat.1:18-21]

Lk.1:46-48[Mary prophesied:] All generations shall call me blessed

(See also Judg.4:17-23; 5:24; 2Sam.20:1,2,7,13b-22.)

E. Women prophetesses, anointed of the Spirit:

Exo.15:20,21Miriam the prophetess [sang a victory song]

Judg.5:1-31[The victory song of the prophetess Deborah, & Barak] Lk.1:39-55 [Elizabeth & Mary, filled with the Spirit, prophesied]

Lk.2:36-38Anna, a prophetess... served God night & day

Acts 2:17I will pour out of My Spirit upon **all** flesh: your sons **&** your daughters shall prophesy (See also Joel 2:28)

Acts 21:8,9Philip...had four daughters...which did prophesy

F. A woman who judged & ruled God's people:

Judg.4:4Deborah, a prophetess...judged Israel at that time

Judg.5:6,7The inhabitants of the villages ceased...until Deborah arose...a mother in Israel (See Judg.4:1-10,23,24)

6. Harmony & marital peace:

A. Harmony is important to a Christian marriage:

Col.2:2Hearts...be comforted, being knit together in love

1Tim.3:4,5If a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?

1Pet.3:7Heirs **together** of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered

1Pet.4:8Have fervent charity (love) among yourselves: for (love) shall cover the multitude of sins

(See also Tit.2:5)

B. Arguments should be avoided:

Pro.17:9He that covereth (over) transgression seeketh love

Pro.17:14Leave off contention, before it be meddled with

Pro.21:19It is better to dwell in the wilderness, than with a contentious & an angry woman (See also Pro.25:24)

Pro.27:15A continual dropping (dripping) in a very rainy day & a contentious woman are alike (See also Pro.19:13b)

Phi.2:3Let nothing be done through strife

Col.3:13Forbearing one another, & forgiving one another, if any have a quarrel against any (See also 1Pet.3:9)

C. What marital strife & disharmony does to the home:

Pro.14:1Every wise woman **buildeth** her house: but the foolish plucketh (pulls) it **down** (See also Pro.24:3)

7. Marriage & lovemaking:

A. Sex in marriage is pure, holy & ordained of God:

Heb.13:4aMarriage is honourable in all, & the bed undefiled

1Cor.7:28aIf thou marry, thou hast not sinned (See also vs.36)

B. It was ordained for the procreation of the race:

Gen.1:27,28Male & female created He them. And God blessed them, & God said unto them, "Be fruitful, & multiply"

Mal.2:15Did not He make (them) one? Wherefore one? That He might seek a godly seed

(See also Jer.29:6)

C. In marriage, man & woman are joined as "one flesh":

Gen.2:23(She) is now bone of my bones, & flesh of my flesh

Mk.10:6-8God made them male & female...a man (shall) cleave to his wife; & they shall be one flesh (See Gen.2:24)

1Cor.6:16bTwo, saith He, shall be one flesh

Eph.5:31A man...shall be joined unto his wife, & they two shall be one flesh

D. Conjugal pleasures a gift from God:

Pro.5:18Let thy fountain be blessed with the wife of thy youth

Pro.5:19Let her breasts satisfy thee at all times, & be thou ravished always with her love

Song 7:6-12How pleasant art thou, O love, for delights

(See also Psa.19:5; Song 1:1,4,13; 2:3,6,16,17; 4:6,10,16; 5:4,5; 8:3,14.)

E. Sex is a marital right, not to be used to punish or reward:

1Cor.7:3Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: & likewise also the wife unto the husband

1Cor.7:4The wife hath not [exclusive] power over her body, but the husband [also]

1Cor.7:5Defraud (deprive) ye **not** one the other, except it be with (mutual) consent for a time

F. Husbands should treat wives with honour & love, not merely as sexual objects:

1Thes.4:4,5Possess his vessel (wife) in...honour; not in the lust of concupiscence (excessive desire)

8. Marriage vs. celibacy:

A. Those who forbid marriage are in error:

1Tim.4:1-3aSome shall depart from the faith...forbidding to marry

B. Even priests, bishops & church officials are advised to marry:

Ezk.44:21,22[Priests given specific instructions on how to marry]

Lev.21:10a,13[Even the **high** priest was instructed to marry]

Mat.8:14[Even the apostle Peter, considered "the first Pope" by some, was married] (See also 1Cor.9:5)

1Tim.3:2A bishop then must be...the husband of one wife (See also 1Tim.3:11,12)

C. Celibacy & forbidding to marry can lead to problems:

Gen.2:18God said, It is **not good** that the man should be alone

1Cor.7:9Let them marry: for it is bet ter to marry than to **burn**

Rom.1:27Men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another

9. Divorce, remarriage, marital infidelity & forgiveness:

(Regarding the Scriptures on divorce, remarriage, infidelity & forgiveness, there are such wide differences of opinion, interpretation & application between leading Christian theologians & denominations today, the editors felt it best to refrain from outlining them here in order to avoid appearing dogmatic about such a sensitive & personal issue. Some churches believe that the New Testament forbids divorce & remarriage in any form. Others feel that the passages in question are to be applied as guidelines tempered with love, mercy, understanding & judicial allowances. There are many sincere Christians on both sides of the fence, so the editors felt that the task of doctrinally defining this point was best left to the reader's personal faith & conviction.—"Let every man be fully persuaded in his **own** mind."—Rom.14:5b.)

10. Parental duties towards their children:

A. Parents should teach children in love:

Eph.6:4Fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture & admonition of the Lord

Col.3:21Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged

B. They should teach them God's Word:

Deut.6:7Thou shalt teach them (God's Words) diligently unto thy children (See also Deut.4:9; 11:18,19.)

Deut.31:12,13That their children...may learn to fear the Lord

Psa.78:5He commanded our fathers that they should make them known to their children

Pro.22:6aTrain up a child in the way he should go

Jn.21:15bFeed My lambs

C. The father should provide their needs:

2Cor.12:14The children ought not to lay up (provide) for the parents, but the parents for the children

1Tim.5:8If any provide not for his...own house, he hath denied the faith, & is worse than an infidel

(See also Acts 20:35; Eph.4:28.)

D. The father should govern his children with authority:

1Tim.3:4One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity (reverence)

1Tim.3:12bRuling their children & their own houses well

E. Parents should chastise children when necessary:

Pro.13:24He that spareth his rod hateth his son: but he that loveth him chasteneth him betimes (promptly)

Pro.19:18Chasten thy son while there is hope, & let not thy soul spare for his crying

(See also Pro.22:15; Pro.23:13 .)

F. The bad fruit of being an indulgent parent:

1Sam.3:13His sons made themselves vile, & he restrained them not

1Ki.1:1,5,6His father had not displeased him at any time...saying, "Why hast thou done so?" (See also vs.16-21)

Pro.29:15bA child left to himself bringeth his mother to shame

Lk.15:12,13[Father of the prodigal son gave him his share, & the son then went off & wasted it with riotous living]

G. The misguided family structure of "permissive societies":

Isa.3:4,5Children [will] be their princes, & babes shall rule over them...child behave proudly against the ancient

Isa.3:12Children are their oppressors, & women rule over them

H. Beware of partiality:

Gen.25:28Isaac loved Esau, because he did eat of his venison: but Rebekah loved Jacob (See also Gen.27:6-17)

Gen.37:3,4Israel loved Joseph more than all his children...his brethren saw [it &] hated him (Also Gen.48:21,22; 42:4.)

1Tim.5:21Without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality

I. Examples of parental concern for children:

(See Gen.37:14; 2Sam.18:29; Est.2:11.)

J. Examples of motherly love:

(See Gen.21:15,16; Exo.1:22 & 2:1,2 & Heb.11:23; 1Sam.1:22-28 & 2:18,19; 1Ki.3:23-27; 2Ki.4:17-20,27; Isa.49:15a; Mat.15:22-28; Jn.19:

17,18,25.)

K. Examples of fatherly love:

(See Gen.37:33-35; 2Sam.12:15-18; Mk.5:22,23; Lk.15:20-24.)

11. A word of caution to parents:

A. Love & care makes a true parent, not merely flesh parenthood:

1Ki.3:26,27Her (heart) yearned upon her son...Then the king answered...**she** is the mother thereof

Est.2:7,20[Esther's uncle raised her as his own daughter]

(See also Pro.29:21)

B. God blesses the children of obedient, godly parents:

Deut.12:28Observe...all these Words...that it may go well with thee, & with thy children

Pro.20:7The just man walketh in his integrity: his children are blessed after him

(See also Psa.144:12)

C. God may punish parents by afflicting their children:

Exo.34:7bVisiting iniquity of the fathers upon the children (See also Exo.20:5; Num.14:18.)

Job 21:19God layeth up (the punishment of) his iniquity for his children

Jer.32:18Thou...recompensest the iniquity of the fathers into the bosom of their children after them

(See also Num.14:33; Lev.26:39; 2Sam.12:13-18; 24:17; Isa.14:21)

D. Severe warning against offending children's faith:

Mat.18:6 Whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in Me, it were better...that a millstone

1Cor.8:9,11,12 When ye...wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ (See also Rom.14:13-21)

12. The importance of training your children right:

A. Children will often be no better than their parents:

Ezk.16:44 As is the mother, so is her daughter

B. Good influence of parents:

1Ki.9:4 Walk before Me, as David thy father walked, in integrity of heart, & in uprightness (See also 2Chr.17:3)

2Chr.26:4 He did that which was right in the sight of the Lord...(as) his father...did (See also 2Chr.20:32)

2Tim.1:5 The unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother...& thy mother

C. Evil influence of parents:

1Ki.22:52 He did evil...walked in way of his father...& mother

2Chr.22:3 His mother was his counsellor to do wickedly

Jer.9:14 (They) have walked...after Baalim, which their fathers taught them

(See also Ezk.20:18; Amos 2:4; Mat.14:8.)

13. Parents as "good shepherds":

A. Parental responsibility to protect their children:

Exo.2:1,2 [Moses' mother defied Pharaoh & hid her baby] (See also Heb.11:23)

2Ki.11:1-3 [Baby Joash's aunt hid him from the wicked queen]

Mat.2:13-22 [Joseph was warned of God to flee into Egypt with Mary & baby Jesus, & only to return when it was safe]

B. Parents' responsibility to defend their children:

Jn.10:11-13The good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep

Neh.4:14bRemember the Lord...& **fight**...for your sons & daughters

C. God will help you:

Isa.49:24,25I will contend with him that contendeth with thee, & I will save thy children

Children

--Includes pregnancy, the "right to life", childbirth, raising & training children

1. Pregnancy:

A. Children are a blessing from God:

Psa.127:3Children are an heritage of the **Lord**: & the fruit of the womb is His **reward**

Gen.49:25God...shall bless thee with blessings of...the womb

Psa.113:9He maketh the barren woman to keep house, & to be a joyful mother of children

Psa.127:4,5As arrows...so are children...Happy is the man that hath his quiver **full** of them

Psa.128:1,3Blessed is every one that feareth the Lord. Thy wife shall be as a fruitful vine

Pro.17:6Children's children are the crown of old men

1Tim.5:14I will therefore that...women marry, bear children

(See also Gen.30:1; Deut.33:24; 1Sam.1:1-18; Lk.1:42.)

B. People do their part, but conception is still God's doing:

Gen.25:21Isaac entreated the Lord for his wife, because she was barren...& Rebekah his wife conceived

Gen.30:22,23God remembered Rachel...& opened her womb. And she conceived, & bare a son

1Sam.1:27For this child I prayed; & the Lord hath given me

Heb.2:13Behold I & the children which God hath given me

Lk.1:7,13Thy prayer is heard; & thy wife...shall bear thee a son

(See also Gen.29:31; 33:5; Judg.13:3; Psa.115:14.)

C. God is the One Who blesses women with pregnancy:

Gen.4:1Adam knew Eve...& she conceived, & bare Cain, & said, I have gotten a man from the **Lord**

Gen.4:25Adam knew his wife again; & she bare a son...God, said she, hath appointed me another seed

Ruth 4:13When (Boaz) went in unto (Ruth), the **Lord** gave her conception, & she bare a son

(See also 1Sam.1:19,20)

D. It is God Who keeps some women from having children:

1Sam.1:5But the Lord had shut up (Hannah's) womb

(See also Gen.30:1,2)

E. In the Bible, it was considered a reproach not to have children:

(See Gen.20:17,18; 2Sam.6:23; Jer.22:30.)

2. The Lord's hand on children before birth:

A. God forms children in the womb:

Job 31:15Did not He that made me in the womb make him? And did not One fashion us in the womb?

Job 33:4The Spirit of God hath made me, &...given me life

Psa.71:5,6By Thee I have been holden up from the womb

Psa.139:14-16I am wonderfully made...in Thy book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned

(See also Isa.44:24a)

B. It is God Who gives life & a soul to unborn children:

Job 33:4The breath of the Almighty hath given me life

Gen.2:7God...breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; & man became a living soul

Acts 17:25bHe giveth to all life, & breath

C. His care of children in the womb:

Psa.139:13Thou hast covered me in my mother's womb

Isa.40:11He...shall gently lead those that are with young

D. God loves & knows children, even before birth:

Psa.22:10I was cast upon Thee from the womb: Thou art my God from my mother's belly

Isa.49:1The Lord hath called me from the womb; from the (womb) hath He made mention of my name

Jer.1:5Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; before thou camest out of the womb I sanctified thee

Lk.1:13[Angel said:] Thy wife...shall bear thee a son, & thou shalt call his name John

3. The Bible on "the right to life":

A. Abortion is murder & infanticide:

Psa.106:38Shed innocent blood...of their sons & daughters

Deut.27:25Cursed be he that taketh reward to slay an innocent

Jer.2:34,35In thy skirts is found the blood...of poor innocents

Acts 7:19They cast out their young (literally: "newly-born or **unborn**") children, to the end they might not live

2Tim.3:1-3In the last days...men [& women] shall be lovers of their selves...without natural affection (love)

B. Don't worry about overpopulating the earth:

Gen.1:28Be fruitful, & multiply, & replenish the earth

Jam.5:8bFor the coming of the Lord draweth nigh

C. God promises to take care of believers' children:

Psa.37:25I have been young & now am old, yet have I not seen the righteous forsaken, nor his seed begging bread

Pro.11:21bThe seed of the righteous shall be delivered

Isa.65:23bThey are the seed of the blessed...& their offspring

(See also Psa.25:12,13; 102:28; 112:1,2; Pro.14:26; Phi.4:19.)

4. Childbirth:

A. God's people often blessed with easy childbirth:

Exo.1:19The Hebrew women are...lively, & are delivered ere (before) the midwives come

Isa.66:7Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a child

B. God can help in the delivery:

Psa.22:9aThou art He that took me out of the womb

Psa.71:6Thou art He that took me out of my mother's bowels

Isa.46:3(They) are borne by Me from the belly...from the womb

C. Promises to claim during long labour:

Isa.65:23They shall not labour in vain, nor bring forth for trouble; for they are the seed of the blessed

Isa.66:9Shall I bring to the birth, & not cause to bring forth? shall I cause to bring forth, & shut the womb?

Jn.16:21As soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born

Heb.11:11Through faith Sara...was delivered of a child...because she judged Him faithful Who had promised

D. Promises for strength:

Isa.40:29-31He giveth power to the faint; & to them that have no might He increaseth strength...renew their strength

Isa.41:10Be not dismayed...I will strengthen thee

E. Conditions for claiming God's promises:

Dan.6:16b God Whom thou **servest continually**, will deliver thee

1Tim.2:15 She shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in **faith & charity** (love)

5. Teaching & training your children:

Judg.13:8 Teach us what we shall do unto the child that shall be born

A. God's care of young children:

Mat.18:10 In Heaven their angels always behold the face of (God)

1Cor.7:14 [Even if only one parent is a believer, the children are sanctified by God]

B. Their early training will guide them all through life:

Pro.22:6 Train up a child in the way he should go: & when he is old, he will not depart from it

C. Give the care & training of your children priority:

Mk.7:27 Let the children **first** be filled

3Jn.4 I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth

D. If you neglect them for other things, you'll both suffer:

Pro.29:15b A child left to himself bringeth his mother to shame

1Ki.20:40a As (I) was busy (with other things) here & there, he was gone (See also Mat.23:23b)

E. You should teach your children the Word:

Deut.6:6,7 These Words...teach them **diligently** unto thy children

Deut.11:18-20 Lay up these My Words in your heart & in your soul...& teach them (to) your children

Isa.38:19b The father to the children shall make known Thy truth

Joel 1:3 Tell ye your children...& let your children tell their children, & their children another generation

Jn.21:15 Lovest thou Me more than these? Feed My lambs

2Tim.3:15 From a child (infancy) thou hast known the Scriptures

(See also Deut.31:12,13; Psa.78:1-6; 1Jn.2:13.)

F. Teach your children to trust in God:

Psa.22:9bThou didst make me hope when I was upon my mother's breasts

Psa.34:11Come, ye children, hearken unto me: I will teach you the fear (reverence) of the Lord

Psa.78:6,7Declare them to [your] children: that they might set their hope in God

Acts 2:39For the promise is unto you, & to your children

Heb.2:13I will put my trust in Him...I & the children

G. Lead them to receive Jesus:

Mk.10:14Suffer (allow) the little children to come unto Me

Gal.4:19My little children, of whom I travail in birth...until Christ be formed in you

1Jn.2:12I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for His name's sake

H. God's Word teaches them how to have eternal life:

Jn.5:39Search the Scriptures; in them...ye have eternal life

2Tim.3:15Scriptures...are able to make thee wise unto salvation

I. Only God can teach life's most important lessons:

Psa.25:5Lead me in Thy truth, & teach me: for Thou art...God

Pro.8:32,33Hearken unto Me, O ye children...keep My ways. Hear instruction, & be wise, & refuse it not

Isa.54:13All thy children shall be taught of the Lord; & great shall be peace of thy children (See also Jn.6:45)

1Cor.2:13We speak...words...which the Holy Ghost teacheth

J. Children worshipping with their parents:

Josh.8:35["Little ones" listen to Bible reading with parents]

2Chr.20:13[Children included in serious prayer meeting]

(See also Joel 2:12,15,16)

6. Children's obedience & disobedience:

A. Children are to obey their parents:

Pro.1:8,9 My son, hear the instruction of thy father, &...mother

Eph.6:1 Children, obey your parents in the Lord: this is right

Col.3:20 Children, obey your parents in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord

B. Children are to honour & reverence their parents:

Exo.20:12 Honour thy father & mother: that thy days may be long

Lev.19:3 Ye shall fear every man his mother, & his father

Eph.6:2 Honour thy father & mother; [this] is the first commandment with promise

(See also Pro.20:20; 23:22.)

C. The blessing of having obedient, wise children:

Pro.10:1a A wise son maketh a glad father

Pro.13:1a A wise son heareth his father's instruction

Pro.23:15,16 Son, if thine heart be wise, my heart shall rejoice

Pro.23:24,25 He that begetteth a wise child shall have joy

Pro.28:7 Whoso keepeth the law is a wise son

3Jn.4 I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth (See also 2Jn.4)

D. The grief of having disobedient, foolish children:

Pro.17:21 The father of a fool hath no joy

Pro.17:25 A foolish son is a grief to his father, & bitterness to her that bare him (his mother)

Pro.19:13 A foolish son is the calamity of his father

Pro.10:1b A foolish son is the heaviness of his mother

7. Loving instruction balanced with firm discipline:

A. Treat your children gently & in love:

Lk.1:17He shall...turn hearts of the fathers to the children

Eph.6:4aFathers, provoke not your children to wrath

Col.3:21Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged

1Thes.2:7We were **gentle**...as a nurse cherisheth her children

Tit.2:4Teach the young women...to **love** their children

B. Patience, mercy & truth are the most effective:

Eph.6:4bBring them up in the nurture & admonition of the Lord

1Thes.2:11We exhorted & comforted & charged (testified to) every one of you, as a father doth his children

Rom.2:4The goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance

Pro.16:6By mercy & truth iniquity is purged

C. Each child is different; seek God how to train & discipline:

Judg.13:12How shall we order the child, & how shall we do?

(See also Lk.12:47,48)

D. The Scriptural admonition to chastise naughty children:

Pro.13:24He that spareth his rod hateth his son: but he that loveth him chasteneth him betimes (promptly)

Pro.19:18Chasten thy son while there is hope, & let not thy soul spare for his crying

Pro.22:15Foolishness is bound in the heart of a child; but the rod of correction shall drive it far from him

Pro.23:13Withhold not correction from the child

Pro.29:17Correct thy son, & he shall give thee rest...delight

E. Responsible Christians required to restrain their children:

1Tim.3:4That ruleth well his own house, having his children in **subjection** with all gravity

1Tim.3:12bRuling their children & their own houses well

Tit.1:6Blameless...having faithful children not...unruly

(See also Gal.4:1,2)

F. When children are not corrected or restrained:

1Sam.2:22-25,I will **judge** his house...because his (Eli's) sons made

3:13themselves **vile**, & he restrained them not

1Ki.1:1,5,6His father had not displeased him at any time...saying, "Why hast thou done so?" (See also vs.16-21)

Pro.29:15bA child left to himself bringeth his mother to shame

Lk.15:12,13[Father of the prodigal son gave him his share, & the son then went off & wasted it with riotous living]

G. Such a lack of discipline means a lack of fearing God:

1Sam.2:29,30Wherefore kick ye at...Mine offering...& honourest thy sons above **Me**? (See the reason in 1Sam.2:12-17)

H. Even with right training, some children will go wrong:

1Sam.8:1-3,5a[Righteous Samuel's sons became corrupt & covetous]

Mk.13:12,13[In the last days, some backslidden children will betray their Christian parents—See also Mat.24:10]

(See also Pro.2:16-18)

I. Partiality & favouritism cause problems:

Gen.25:27,28Isaac loved Esau...but Rebekah loved Jacob [& helped Jacob deceive old father Isaac—Gen.27:1-18]

Gen.37:3,4Israel loved Joseph more than all his children...when his brethren saw (it), they hated him

8. The growing years:

A. Be considerate of children's limitations:

Gen.33:12-14The children are tender (young)...I will lead on softly according as the...children be able to endure

B. Growing up & maturing:

Isa.28:9Whom shall he teach knowledge? And...make to understand doctrine? Them that are weaned

Heb.5:14Strong meat (doctrine) belongeth to them...of full age

C. Becoming a teen, a young adult:

1Cor.13:11When I became a man, I put **away** childish things

Eph.4:14aThat we henceforth be no more children

1Cor.14:20Be not children in understanding: in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men (mature)

D. Teen years: A time of dedication & commitment:

2Chr.34:1-7[Josiah, when 16 years old, sought God in earnest, dedicated his life to Him & zealously served Him]

Ecc1.12:1Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth

1Tim.4:12Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an **example** of the believers, in conversation, charity, faith

9. Children in God's service:

A. Babies & small children touch unbelievers' hearts:

Exo.2:1-6,10[Pharaoh's daughter was touched by baby Moses, & she disobeyed Pharaoh's order & saved him—Exo.1:22]

B. Examples of young children serving God:

1Sam.2:11,18Samuel ministered before the Lord, being a child

Exo.2:1-8[Miriam, as a young child, watched out for her baby brother, Moses]

2Ki.5:1-4[The "little maid" witnesses to her heathen master about God's power—See also vs.14,15a,17]

Dan.1:17-20[The four Hebrew children, full of God's wisdom, counselled king Nebuchadnezzar]

C. Examples of older children & young teens serving God:

Jer.1:4-9[Teenage Jeremiah called to proclaim God's Words]

1Sam.16:1,10-13[David anointed to be king when just a teen] (See also 16:14-23; 17:32-37,49.)

Acts 23:12-24[The apostle Paul's teenage nephew saves his life]

D. Young men serving God in positions of responsibility:

Acts 16:1-3a[Paul chose young Timothy to be his helper & travelling companion] (See 1Tim.4:12a)

E. If trained right, children will be a great blessing:

Psa.127:4,5As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children...they shall speak (contend) with the enemies

Isa.8:18I & the children...are for signs & for wonders

Mat.18:5Whoso shall receive one such little child in My name receiveth Me (See also Mk.9:36,37)

F. God's Spirit can even use small children to lead:

Isa.11:6bA little child shall lead them

G. Children proclaiming God's praise:

Mat.21:15,16The children crying (out)...& saying, Hosanna! Out of the mouth of babes Thou hast perfected praise

Neh.12:43God made them rejoice...the children (also) rejoiced

Psa.148:12,13Children: Let them praise the name of the Lord

H. Dedicating your children to God's service:

1Sam.1:28I have lent him to the Lord; as long as he liveth he shall be lent to the Lord

10. Becoming like children:

A. You must have the faith of a child to be saved:

Mat.18:3Except ye be converted, & become as little children, ye shall not enter into the Kingdom of Heaven

Mat.18:4Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child...is greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven

Mk.10:15Whosoever shall not receive the Kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein

B. In relation to God, we are children:

Deut.8:5As a man chasteneth his son, so the Lord thy God chasteneth thee

1Ki.3:7[King Solomon told God:] I am but a little child

Psa.103:13Like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear Him

Eph.5:1Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children

(See also Isa.63:15,16; Mal.3:17; Gal.4:3-7.)

Sleep

1. Sleep considered a blessing:

A. Trust in God to bless you with sleep:

Psa.3:5I laid me down & slept; for the Lord sustained me

Psa.4:8I will both lay me down in peace, & sleep

Psa.127:2bHe giveth His beloved sleep

Eccl.5:12aThe sleep of a labouring man is sweet

Jer.31:26I awaked, & beheld; & my sleep was sweet unto me

B. God gives freedom from fear & sweet sleep:

Psa.91:5Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night

Pro.3:24Not be afraid...shalt lie down, & thy sleep be sweet

Acts 12:6[Peter able to sleep in prison] bound with two chains

C. The Lord can miraculously give you deep sleep:

Gen.2:21The Lord caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam

1Sam.26:12A deep sleep from the Lord was fallen upon them

D. Rest in the Lord & sleep through anything:

Ezk.34:25Dwell safely in the wilderness, & sleep in the woods

Mat.8:24Tempest...ship covered with waves: but He was asleep

2. If you can't sleep, pray:

Psa.42:8In the night His song shall be with me, & my prayer

Psa.63:5,6When I...meditate on Thee in the night watches

Isa.26:9aWith my soul have I desired Thee in the night

Lam.2:19Arise, cry out in the night...pour out thine heart

(See also Psa.4:4; 119:55.)

3. Some reasons for not being able to sleep:

A. When the Lord wants to speak to you:

1Sam.3:3-10Samuel was laid down to sleep...the Lord called

Job 4:12-17In the night, when deep sleep falleth on men, a spirit passed before my face...I heard a voice

B. Sometimes God allows it to work out His will:

Est.6:1-3On that night could not the king (Ahasuerus) sleep

C. When worried or troubled:

Psa.77:3,4Thou holdest mine eyes waking: I am so troubled

Eccl.2:23His days are sorrows...taketh not rest in the night

Eccl.5:12bAbundance of the rich will not suffer him to sleep

Dan.6:14-18[King Darius passed the night fasting, unable to sleep]

(See also Psa.6:6)

D. Because of unusual dreams:

Dan.2:1 His spirit was troubled, & his sleep brake from him

Job 7:13,14 Then Thou scarest me with dreams, & visions

E. When God is testing you, as He did Job:

Job 7:3,4 Wearisome nights are appointed unto me...I am full of tossings to & fro unto the dawning of the day

F. Punishment for disobeying God:

Deut.28:58,66,67 If thou wilt not observe...thou shalt fear day & night... shalt say, "Would God it were morning"

G. Be considerate of those who are sleeping:

Pro.27:14 He that blesseth his friend with a loud voice, rising early...it shall be counted a curse to him

Song 2:7 Stir not up, nor awake my love, till he please

4. Good reasons for missing sleep:

A. To pray desperately:

1Sam.15:11 It grieved Samuel; & he cried unto the Lord all night

Lk.6:12 (Jesus) continued all night in prayer to God

1Thes.3:10 Night & day praying exceedingly (to) see your face

B. To rise early & pray:

1Sam.1:19 They rose up in the morning early, & worshipped Mk.1:35 Rising up a great while before day...Jesus prayed

Psa.57:8,9 Awake, psaltery & harp: I myself will awake early. I will praise Thee, O Lord

Psa.119:147 I prevented (was up before) the dawning of the morning, & cried: I hoped in Thy Word

C. To do your job:

Gen.31:38-40 [Jacob frequently sacrificed sleep for 20 years because of diligent shepherding]

D. Caution about getting overtired:

Psa.127:2It is vain for you to rise up early, to sit up late...for so He giveth His beloved sleep

Acts 20:7-9Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep...fell down

5. When it is not good to sleep:

A. Don't oversleep when you should be working:

Pro.6:9How long wilt thou sleep, O sluggard? When arise...?

Pro.6:10,11A little sleep, a little slumber...folding of hands: so shall thy poverty come (See also Pro.24:33,34)

Pro.10:5He that sleepeth in harvest...son that causeth shame

Pro.20:13Love not sleep, lest thou come to poverty

Pro.26:14As the door turneth upon hinges, so doth the slothful

B. Times to rise & pray:

Jon.1:4-6O sleeper...arise, call upon thy God

Mk.14:37-41Sleepest thou? Couldst thou not watch one hour? Watch ye & pray, lest ye enter into temptation

Lk.22:46Why sleep ye? Rise & pray, lest ye enter temptation

C. When something important needs to be done first:

Psa.132:3-5I will not give sleep to mine eyes, until I find

Pro.6:1-4Do this now...give not sleep to thine eyes, nor slumber

D. Oversleeping can be caused by laziness or unconcern for others:

Pro.19:15Slothfulness casteth into a deep sleep

Isa.56:10,11Watchmen are blind...sleeping, loving to slumber

E. Sleep can symbolise spiritual insensitivity:

Rom.13:11,12Knowing the time...now it is high time to awake

Eph.5:14Awake thou that sleepest...Christ shall give thee light

1Thes.5:4-8Let us not sleep...let us watch & be sober

6. Trusting the Lord to awaken you:

A. When you've slept enough & need to rise:

Isa.50:4(God) wakeneth (me) morning by morning...to hear

Zech.4:1And the angel that talked with me...waked me

B. To flee danger:

Mat.2:13,14Angel...appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise... flee. He arose...by **night**, & [left with Jesus & Mary]

Acts 12:4-7Peter (slept)...angel of the Lord...smote Peter on the side, & raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly

C. To give you something you need:

1Ki.19:5-7[Angel woke Elijah up twice to give him food & water]

D. He awakens you after giving you an important message:

Mat.1:24Joseph being raised from sleep did as angel had bidden

Old Age

1. The blessings of old age:

A. Old age has its own special beauty & glory:

Pro.16:31The hoary (grey) head is a **crown** of **glory**, if it be found in the way of righteousness

Pro.20:29bThe beauty of old men is the grey head

B. God's Word says that the elderly should be honoured & respected:

Lev.19:32Thou shalt rise up [in respect] before the hoary head, & honour the face of the old man

Job 32:4,6Elihu had waited till Job [& the others] had spoken, because they were elder than he

Pro.23:22Hearken unto thy father...& despise not (respect) thy mother when she is old

C. The passing of years usually brings wisdom:

Job 12:12 With the ancient is wisdom; & in length of days understanding

Job 32:7 Days should speak, & multitude of years...teach wisdom

1Ki.12:1-16 [King Rehoboam's folly in not following the wise advice of the old men]

D. Long years of trusting the Lord brings assurance:

Psa.37:25 I have been young, & now am old; yet have I not seen the righteous forsaken

E. We shouldn't be sad about old age:

Eccl.11:10 Remove sorrow from thy heart...for childhood & youth are vanity

2. God's special help in our old age:

Isa.46:4 Even to your old age I am He; & even to hoar hairs will I carry you...& will deliver you

(See also Psa.71:8,9,17,18)

3. Desiring long life:

A. Before the flood, men lived to very great ages:

(See Gen.5:1-32; 7:11; 9:28,29.)

B. After the flood, lifespans began to shorten:

(See Gen.11:10-32; 25:7,8,17; 35:28; 47:8,9; Deut.34:7a; Josh.24:29.)

C. Today's average lifespan:

Psa.90:10 The days of our years are (seventy); & if by reason of strength they be (eighty) years

D. Old age a blessing for a righteous life:

2Chr.24:15 [Godly Jehoidah lived to 130 years of age, at a time when most men only lived to be 70]

Gen.15:15 Thou shalt go to thy fathers in peace...in good old age

Gen.25:8 Abraham...died in a good old age...full of years

Deut.34:7 Moses was an 120 years old when he died: his eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated

1Chr.29:28He died in a good old age, full of days, riches, & honour

Job 5:26Thou shalt come to thy grave in a full age, like as a (sheave of grain is gathered) in his season

Psa.91:14,16He hath set his love on Me...with long life will I satisfy him

Isa.65:22As the days of a tree are the days of My people, & Mine elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands

Zech.8:3,4There shall yet [be] old men & old women...every man with his staff in his hand for very age

E. How to obtain the blessing of longevity:

Deut.5:33Walk in all the ways which the Lord...commanded you, that ye may live...prolong your days

Deut.30:20Love the Lord thy God...obey His voice...for He is thy life, & the length of thy days

Psa.34:12-14What man...desireth life, & loveth many days? Keep thy tongue from evil & guile...do good; seek peace

Pro.3:1,2Let thine heart keep My commandments: for length of days, & long life...shall they add to thee

Pro.9:10,11For by Me (wisdom) thy days shall be multiplied, & the years of thy life shall be increased

Pro.10:27The fear of the Lord prolongeth days

(See also Pro.3:13,16a; 4:7,10; 9:10,11; 1Pet.3:10,11; Exo.20:12.)

F. Praying for more time to live & serve the Lord:

2Ki.20:1-7[God revived ailing King Hezekiah & gave him 15 more years to live]

Psa.71:18Forsake me not; until I have shewed Thy strength unto this generation, &...to everyone that is to come

G. Keeping up the will to live to help others:

Phi.1:23-25Having a desire to depart, & to be with Christ...[but] to abide in the flesh is more needful for you

H. God sometimes revealed to men their time of departing:

Psa.39:4 Lord, make me to know...the measure of my days, what it is; that I may know how frail I am

Psa.90:12 Teach us to number our days, that we may apply our hearts unto wisdom

Lk.2:26 It was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen...Christ

2Tim.4:6,7 I am now ready...the time of my departure is at hand

2Pet.1:14 Shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me

2Ki.2:3 Knowest thou that the Lord will take (Elijah) away today?

I. They often gave parting instructions to their family:

Gen.49:1,33 [Dying Jacob called his sons & gave them instructions, & when finished, "gave up the ghost"]

(See also Gen.50:22-26; 1Ki.2:1-3,10.)

J. The futility of worrying that our time has come:

Gen.27:1-4 [Aged Isaac thought he was about to die, but lived many more years & died when 180—
Gen.35:28,29]

1Sam.27:1 [David despaired:] I shall perish one day by the hand of Saul [but lived over 40 years more]

(See also Heb.2:15)

K. Trusting God to keep you alive until His appointed time:

Job 7:1 Is there not an appointed time to man upon earth?

Psa.31:15a My times are in Thy hand

Psa.48:14 God...is our guide even unto death

L. Sometimes not living to old age is a greater blessing:

Gen.5:23,24 [Enoch lived only 1/3rd the lifespan of his day; God took him because he pleased Him—See also Heb.11:5]

Isa.57:1 Merciful men are taken away...the righteous is taken away from the evil to come (See also 1Ki.14:12,13)

4. God can mightily use aged believers:

A. Promises of fruitfulness:

Psa.92:13,14 They shall still bring forth fruit in old age; they shall be (fresh) & flourishing

B. Material ministering & good deeds:

2Sam.19:32-35 [Barzillai, 80 years old, helped support King David in his time of great need—See also 2Sam.17:27-29]

C. Spiritual ministries:

Exo.7:7 [Moses was 80 years old when he led the Exodus]

Joel 2:28 I will pour out My Spirit upon all flesh; &...your old men shall dream dreams (See also Acts 2:16,17)

Dan.9:1; 10:1 [Daniel received two of his greatest revelations between the ages of 85 and 90]

Rev.1:1,9 [The apostle John received the Book of Revelation in exile on Patmos, in his 80's or 90's]

D. Some conditions to being used of God:

Tit.2:2,3 Aged men be sober, (reverent), temperate, sound in faith, in love, in patience [that they may teach]

E. The ministry of prayer:

1Sam.12:1,2,16,19 [Samuel, aged & grey-headed, prayed & the Lord performed a miracle to punish the errant Israelites]

Lk.2:36,37 Anna, a prophetess...of about (84 years old), served God with fastings & prayers night & day

1Tim.5:5,9 [Prayer, a special ministry for women over 60]

F. Witnessing:

Lk.2:36-38 [Anna, 84 years old, witnessed to others about Jesus]

Phlm.9-11,16 Paul the aged [led Onesimus to receive Jesus]

Acts 28:30,31 [Paul witnessed to all those who came to visit him]

(See also 2Tim.1:5; 3:15—Witnessing to our children & grandchildren)

G. God can use those who think they are too old:

Gen.18:10-14;21:1,2[Sarah, at 90, laughs & doubts she can have a child] (See also Gen.17:15-17; Lk.1:36.)

H. God sometimes doesn't really use us until we're older & wiser:

Acts 7:23-34[Moses tried to start his life's work at 40, but was not really ready for it until he was 80]

I. Keep faithfully serving Jesus till our parting day:

2Pet.1:12-15I think it meet, as long as I am in this (body), to stir you up [& establish you in the truth]

J. Steadfastly enduring adversity in old age:

Phlm.9,10Paul the aged, & now also a prisoner...in bonds

Rev.1:9[John, in his 80's or 90's, exiled to the isle of Patmos]

5. Strength in old age:

A. God can give us strength & health:

Deut.33:25As thy days, so shall thy strength be

Deut.34:7Moses an 120 years old...his eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated

Isa.40:29To them that have no might He increaseth strength

Psa.103:5[He] satisfieth thy mouth with good things; so that thy youth is renewed like the eagle's

Josh.14:7,10,11I (Caleb) am this day (85) years old. As yet I am as strong this day as I was [when I was 40]

B. Courage & determination give strength & victory in old age:

Josh.14:10-14[Caleb, 85 years old, declared:] Give **me** this **mountain** [inhabited by **giants** in strongly-fortified cities] The Lord will be with me...I shall drive them out

C. Giving God the credit for keeping us during a difficult life:

Josh.14:10Behold, the **Lord** hath kept me alive, these (45) years... in the wilderness...& I am this day (85) years old

6. Cautions regarding old age:

A. We must not assume that age alone always makes us wiser:

Job 32:9 Great men are not always wise: neither do the aged [always] understand judgment

(See also Psa.119:100)

B. Without God, the wisdom of the aged comes to nought:

Job 12:13,20 With Him (God) is wisdom...He...taketh away the understanding of the aged

C. Caution against becoming too set in our ways:

Eccl.4:13 Better is a...wise child than an old & foolish king, who will no more be admonished

D. Caution against losing conviction in old age:

1Ki.11:4 When Solomon was old, his wives turned away his heart after other gods: & his heart was not perfect with God

E. Unwisely comparing former glories to the present:

Eccl.7:10 Say not thou, What is the cause that the former days were better than these? Thou dost not enquire wisely

Ezra 3:11,12 [People rejoiced to see the new temple, but the old men, remembering old temple, wept]
(See also Hag.2:3)

7. Joy in children & in grandchildren:

Pro.17:6 Children's children are the crown of old men; & the glory of children are their fathers

Gen.37:3 Israel loved Joseph more than all his children, because he was the son of his old age

Ruth 4:13-16 [Naomi's grandchild] a nourisher of thine old age

(See also Lk.1:5-7,13,18-20)

Condensed Word Basics

--The most basic verses from Word Basics!

The following Bible verses are arranged together under the same categories found in *Word Basics*. However, most of these Scriptures are not abbreviated, but are given in their entirety, thus you can grasp the full meaning of each reference without having to refer to your Bible.

You'll find that reading through these sections will provide you with a quick and easy-to-use means of reviewing the key sections of *Word Basics*. They can also serve as a very handy **witnessing tool** which will enable you to share the Bible's answers and guidance with others.

Because these Scriptures are spelled out in their entirety, and are some of the most basic and important verses found in the Bible, they can also serve as an excellent source of verses to be committed to memory.— "Thy Word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against Thee." (Psa.119:11.)

Contents (Alphabetically Arranged)

TOPICPAGE

SALVATION

Jn.1:12 As many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His name.

Jn.3:3 Except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of God.

Jn.3:16 For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

Jn.3:36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

Jn.6:37 All that the Father giveth Me shall come to Me; and him that cometh to Me I will in no wise cast out.

Jn.10:28 I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of My hand.

Jn.14:6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me.

Acts 16:31 Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved.

Rom.3:23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.

Rom.6:23 For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Rom.10:9,10 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised Him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

2Cor.5:17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

Eph.2:8,9 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.

Tit.3:5a Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us.

1Jn.5:12,13 He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life. These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.

Rev.3:20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me.

JESUS CHRIST, THE SON OF GOD

Isa.9:6 For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon His shoulder: and His name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

Jn.1:1,14 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.

Jn.3:17 God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through Him might be saved.

Jn.10:11 I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth His life for the sheep.

Jn.15:13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

Acts 10:38 God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: Who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil.

Rom.5:8 God commendeth His love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

(See Isa.53—The prophetic "Portrait of Jesus Chapter".)

THE HOLY SPIRIT

Lk.11:13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your Heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask Him?

Jn.7:38,39a He that believeth on Me, as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. But this spake He of the Spirit, which they that believe on Him should receive.

Jn.14:26 The Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, Whom the Father will send in My name, He shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

Jn.16:13 When He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth: for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak: and He will show you things to come.

Acts 1:8 Ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

Acts 2:17,18 And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of My Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams: and on My servants and on My handmaidens I will pour out in those days of My Spirit; and they shall prophesy.

Acts 4:31b And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the Word of God with boldness.

Acts 5:32 And we are His witnesses of these things; and so is also the Holy Ghost, Whom God hath given to them that obey Him.

Acts 19:2,6 He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto Him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost. And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

2Cor.3:17 Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

THE WORD OF GOD

Josh.1:8 This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success.

Job 23:12b I have esteemed the Words of His mouth more than my necessary food.

Psa.119:11 Thy Word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against Thee.

Psa.119:89 For ever, O Lord, Thy Word is settled in Heaven.

Psa.119:105 Thy Word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.

Jer.15:16a Thy Words were found, and I did eat them.

Mat.4:4 Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

Mat.24:35 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but My Words shall not pass away.

Jn.6:63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the Words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

Jn.8:31,32 If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My disciples indeed. And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

Rom.10:17 So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God.

1Cor.10:11 Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.

2Tim.2:15 Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth.

2Tim.3:16 All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.

1Pet.2:2 As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the Word, that ye may grow thereby.

2Pet.1:21 For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

PRAYER

Psa.66:18,19 If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me: But verily God hath heard me; He hath attended to the voice of my prayer.

Jer.29:13 Ye shall seek Me, and find Me, when ye shall search for Me with all your heart.

Jer.33:3 Call unto Me, and I will answer thee, and show thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest not.

Mat.7:7,8 Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

Mat.18:19 If two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of My Father which is in Heaven.

Mk.11:24 What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.

Jn.16:23b Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in My name, He will give it you.

Jam.1:6,7 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord.

Jam.4:2b Ye have not, because ye ask not.

1Jn.3:22 And whatsoever we ask, we receive of Him, because we keep His commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in His sight.

1Jn.5:14b If we ask any thing according to His will, He heareth us.

FAITH

Job 13:15a Though He slay me, yet will I trust in Him.

Pro.3:5 Trust in the Lord with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding.

Mat.9:29b According to your faith be it unto you.

Mk.9:23 If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

Rom.4:20,21 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; and being fully persuaded that, what He had promised, He was able also to perform.

Rom.10:17 Faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God.

2Cor.5:7 For we walk by faith, not by sight.

Heb.10:35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompense of reward.

Heb.10:38a Now the just shall live by faith.

Heb.11:1,6 Faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. But without faith it is impossible to please Him: for he that cometh to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him.

1Jn.5:4b This is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.

LOVE

Mat.7:12 Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them.

Mat.22:37-39 Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

Jn.13:35 By this shall all men know that ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another.

Jn.15:12 This is My commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.

1Cor.13:8a Love never faileth.

1Cor.16:14 Let all your things be done with love.

1Pet.4:8 Above all things have fervent love among yourselves: for love shall cover the multitude of sins.

1Jn.3:16 Hereby perceive we the love of God, because He laid down His life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

1Jn.3:18 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.

1Jn.4:8 He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love.

(See 1Cor.13—"The Love Chapter".)

FORGIVENESS

Mat.6:14,15 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your Heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Eph.4:32 Be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

1Jn.1:9 If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

OUR RELATIONSHIP WITH THE LORD

Psa.111:10a The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom.

Pro.8:17 I love them that love Me; and those that seek Me early shall find Me.

Mat.11:28-30 Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you, and learn of Me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For My yoke is easy, and My burden is light.

Mat.22:37,38 Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.

Jn.14:23 If a man love Me, he will keep My Words: and My Father will love him, and We will come unto him, and make Our abode with him.

Rom.7:4 Ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to Him Who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

2Cor.6:16b Ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people.

Eph.5:30 We are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones.

Jam.4:8a Draw nigh to God, and He will draw nigh to you.

FELLOWSHIP

Heb.10:25 Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

Psa.133:1 Behold, how good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity!

Eccl.4:9,10 Two are better than one; because they have a good reward for their labour. For if they fall, the one will lift up his fellow: but woe to him that is alone when he falleth; for he hath not another to help him up.

Mat.18:20 Where two or three are gathered together in My name, there am I in the midst of them.

1Jn.1:7a If we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another.

WITNESSING

Psa.126:6 He that goeth forth and weepeth, bearing precious seed, shall doubtless come again with rejoicing, bringing his sheaves with him.

Pro.11:30 The fruit of the righteous is a tree of life; and he that winneth souls is wise.

Ezk.3:17-19 Son of man, I have made thee a watchman unto the house of Israel: therefore hear the Word at My mouth, and give them warning from Me. When I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die; and thou givest him not warning, nor speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked way, to save his life; the same wicked man shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at thine hand. Yet if thou

warn the wicked, and he turn not from his wickedness, nor from his wicked way, he shall die in his iniquity; but thou hast delivered thy soul.

Dan.12:3 They that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.

Mat.4:19 Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men.

Mat.5:14-16 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven.

Mat.9:37,38 Then saith He unto His disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few; Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that He will send forth labourers into His harvest.

Mk.8:38 Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of Me and of My Words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when He cometh in the glory of His Father with the holy angels.

Mk.16:15 And He said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

Jn.15:16a Ye have not chosen Me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain.

1Cor.9:16 For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel!

2Tim.2:23 But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes.

2Tim.4:2 Preach the Word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.

1Pet.3:15b Be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear.

GIVING

Pro.3:27,28 Withhold not good from them to whom it is due, when it is in the power of thine hand to do it. Say not unto thy neighbour, Go, and come again, and to morrow I will give; when thou hast it by thee.

Pro.11:24,25 There is that scattereth, and yet increaseth; and there is that withholdeth more than it meet, but it tendeth to poverty. The liberal soul shall be made fat: And he that watereth shall be watered also himself.

Pro.19:17 He that hath pity upon the poor lendeth unto the Lord; and that which he hath given will He pay him again.

Mal.3:10 Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in Mine house, and prove Me now herewith, saith the Lord of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of Heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.

Lk.6:38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again.

Acts 20:35b It is more blessed to give than to receive.

2Cor.9:6,7 He which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully. Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver.

1Jn.3:17,18 Whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him? My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.

HOW TO FIND THE WILL OF GOD

Judg.6:37 Behold, I will put a fleece of wool in the floor; and if the dew be on the fleece only, and it be dry upon all the earth beside, then shall I know that Thou wilt save Israel by mine hand.

Psa.32:8 I will instruct thee and teach thee in the way which thou shalt go: I will guide thee with Mine eye.

Psa.119:130 The entrance of Thy Words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple.

Psa.143:8b Cause me to know the way wherein I should walk; for I lift up my soul unto Thee.

Pro.3:6 In all thy ways acknowledge Him, and He shall direct thy paths.

Pro.15:22 Without counsel purposes are disappointed: but in the multitude of counsellors they are established.

Isa.30:21 Thine ears shall hear a word behind thee, saying, This is the way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand, and when ye turn to the left.

Lk.22:42 Father, if Thou be willing, remove this cup from Me: nevertheless not My will, but Thine, be done.

Rom.12:1,2 I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to

this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

OBEDIENCE TO GOD

1Sam.15:22 Hath the Lord as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams.

Job 36:11 If they obey and serve Him, they shall spend their days in prosperity, and their years in pleasures.

Isa.1:19,20 If ye be willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land: But if ye refuse and rebel, ye shall be devoured with the sword: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it.

Lk.6:46 Why call ye Me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

Jn.13:17 If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

Jn.14:15 If ye love Me, keep My commandments.

Jn.15:14 Ye are My friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.

Eph.6:6 Not with eyeservice, as menpleasers; but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart.

Heb.5:8 Though He were a Son, yet learned He obedience by the things which He suffered.

STRENGTH and POWER

Psa.68:35b The God of Israel is He that giveth strength and power unto His people.

Neh.8:10b The joy of the Lord is your strength.

Psa.37:39 The salvation of the righteous is of the Lord: He is their strength in the time of trouble.

Isa.30:7b Their strength is to sit still.

Isa.30:15b In quietness and in confidence shall be your strength.

Isa.40:29 He giveth power to the faint; and to them that have no might He increaseth strength.

Isa.40:31 They that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.

Jer.17:5 Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the Lord.

Zech.4:6b Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit, saith the Lord of hosts.

2Cor.4:7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

2Cor.12:9,10b And He said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for My strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. For when I am weak, then am I strong.

Eph.6:10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of His might.

Phi.4:13 I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.

PROTECTION

Exo.14:14 The Lord shall fight for you, and ye shall hold your peace.

Psa.34:7 The angel of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear Him, and delivereth them.

Psa.34:17 The righteous cry, and the Lord heareth, and delivereth them out of all their troubles.

Psa.46:1,2 God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble. Therefore will not we fear, though the earth be removed, and though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea.

Pro.1:33 Whoso hearkeneth unto Me shall dwell safely, and shall be quiet from fear of evil.

Pro.18:10 The name of the Lord is a strong tower: The righteous runneth into it, and is safe.

Isa.43:2 When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee.

(See Psa.91—"The Protection Psalm".)

SUPPLY

Psa.23:1 The Lord is my shepherd; I shall not want (lack).

Psa.34:10 They that seek the Lord shall not want any good thing.

Psa.37:3 Trust in the Lord, and do good; so shalt thou dwell in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed.

Psa.37:25 I have been young, and now am old; yet have I not seen the righteous forsaken, nor his seed begging bread.

Psa.68:19a Blessed be the Lord, Who daily loadeth us with benefits.

Psa.84:11b No good thing will He withhold from them that walk uprightly.

Mat.6:25,26 Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your Heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?

Mat.6:33 Seek ye first the Kingdom of God, and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.

Mat.7:9-11 What man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in Heaven give good things to them that ask Him?

Rom.8:32 He that spared not His Own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things?

Phi.4:19 My God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus.

TRIALS, TEMPTATIONS and TRIBULATIONS

Job 23:10 He knoweth the way that I take: when He hath tried me, I shall come forth as gold.

Pro.1:10 My son, if sinners entice thee, consent thou not.

Pro.3:11,12 My son, despise not the chastening of the Lord; neither be weary of His correction: For whom the Lord loveth He correcteth; even as a father the son in whom he delighteth.

Mat.26:41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

1Cor.10:13 There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, Who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.

2Tim.2:3 Endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.

Heb.12:2,3 Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; Who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. For consider Him that endured such contradiction of sinners against Himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds.

Jam.1:3 The trying of your faith worketh patience.

Jam.1:12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love Him.

1Pet.1:7 That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ.

2Pet.2:9a The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations.

SUFFERING

Psa.34:19 Many are the afflictions of the righteous: but the Lord delivereth him out of them all.

Psa.119:67 Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept Thy Word.

Psa.119:71 It is good for me that I have been afflicted; that I might learn Thy statutes.

Rom.8:18 For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

Rom.8:28 And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose.

2Cor.4:17 For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory.

2Tim.2:12 If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him: if we deny Him, He also will deny us.

1Pet.4:19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God commit the keeping of their souls to Him in well doing, as unto a faithful Creator.

COMFORT

Psa.23:4 Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for Thou art with me; Thy rod and Thy staff they comfort me.

Psa.30:5 For His anger endureth but a moment; in His favour is life: weeping may endure for a night, but joy cometh in the morning.

Psa.119:50 This is my comfort in my affliction: for Thy Word hath quickened me.

Psa.145:14 The Lord upholdeth all that fall, and raiseth up all those that be bowed down.

Psa.147:3 He healeth up the broken in heart, and bindeth up their wounds.

Isa.54:7 For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee.

Lam.3:32,33 Though He cause grief, yet will He have compassion according to the multitude of His mercies. For He doth not afflict willingly nor grieve the children of men.

Mat.5:4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

Jn.14:1 Let not your heart be troubled: Ye believe in God, believe also in Me.

Jn.14:18 I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you.

2Cor.1:4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.

Heb.4:16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

Heb.13:5b He hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.

1Pet.5:7 Casting all your care upon Him; for He careth for you.

Rev.21:4 God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

HEALING

Exo.15:26b I am the Lord that healeth thee.

Psa.34:19 Many are the afflictions of the righteous: but the Lord delivereth him out of them all.

Psa.103:3 Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; Who healeth all thy diseases.

Psa.107:20 He sent His Word, and healed them, and delivered them from their destructions.

Isa.53:5b With His stripes we are healed.

Jer.30:17a I will restore health unto thee, and I will heal thee of thy wounds, saith the Lord.

Jer.32:27 Behold, I am the Lord, the God of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for Me?

Mal.4:2a Unto you that fear My name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in His wings.

Mat.18:19 If two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of My Father which is in Heaven.

Lk.17:14b As they went, they were cleansed.

Jam.5:14,15 Is any sick among you? Let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: and the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

OVERCOMING THE DEVIL

Isa.59:19b When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him.

2Cor.2:11 Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

2Cor.10:3-5 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds. Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.

Eph.4:27 Neither give place to the devil.

Eph.6:11,12 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.

Eph.6:16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

Jam.4:7b Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.

1Pet.5:8,9a Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: whom resist stedfast in the faith.

1Jn.2:14b The Word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

1Jn.3:8b For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil.

1Jn.4:4b Greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world.

FEAR NOT

Psa.27:1 The Lord is my light and my salvation; whom shall I fear? The Lord is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid?

Psa.34:4 I sought the Lord, and He heard me, and delivered me from all my fears.

Psa.56:3 What time I am afraid, I will trust in Thee.

Psa.56:11 In God have I put my trust: I will not be afraid what man can do unto me.

Psa.118:6 The Lord is on my side; I will not fear: what can man do unto me?

Pro.29:25 The fear of man bringeth a snare: but whoso putteth his trust in the Lord shall be safe.

Isa.12:2a Behold, God is my salvation; I will trust, and not be afraid.

Isa.26:3 Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on Thee: because he trusteth in Thee.

Isa.41:10 Fear thou not; for I am with thee: Be not dismayed; for I am thy God: I will strengthen thee; yea, I will help thee; yea, I will uphold thee with the right hand of My righteousness.

Jn.14:27 Peace I leave with you, My peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

2Tim.1:7 God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

1Jn.4:18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.

THANKFULNESS

Psa.34:1 I will bless the Lord at all times: His praise shall continually be in my mouth.

Psa.107:8 Oh that men would praise the Lord for His goodness, and for His wonderful works to the children of men!

1Cor.10:10 Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.

Phi.2:14 Do all things without murmurings and disputings.

Phi.4:11 I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content.

1Thes.5:18 In every thing give thanks.

PRIDE, SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS and HUMILITY

Pro.11:2 When pride cometh, then cometh shame: but with the lowly is wisdom.

Pro.16:18 Pride goeth before destruction, and an haughty spirit before a fall.

Dan.4:37b Those that walk in pride He is able to abase.

Mat.23:12 Whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

Lk.6:41,42b Why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.

2Cor.10:17 He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

Phi.2:3 Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.

1Pet.5:5b,6 All of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble. Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time.

THE POWER OF THE TONGUE

Psa.19:14 Let the words of my mouth, and the meditation of my heart, be acceptable in Thy sight, O Lord, my strength, and my redeemer.

Psa.35:28 My tongue shall speak of Thy righteousness and of Thy praise all the day long.

Pro.16:24 Pleasant words are as an honeycomb, sweet to the soul, and health to the bones.

Pro.17:27 He that hath knowledge spareth his words: and a man of understanding is of an excellent spirit.

Pro.18:21a Death and life are in the power of the tongue.

Pro.29:11 A fool uttereth all his mind: but a wise man keepeth it in till afterwards.

Mat.12:34b Out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

Mat.12:36,37 Every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

Eph.4:29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

2Tim.2:16 But shun profane and vain babblings: for they will increase unto more ungodliness.

2Tim.2:24 The servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient.

Jam.1:19 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath.

Jam.1:26 If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain.

(See James 3—The Tongue Chapter.)

UNITY

Psa.133:1 Behold, how good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity!

Eccl.4:9,10,12 Two are better than one; because they have a good reward for their labour. For if they fall, the one will lift up his fellow: but woe to him that is alone when he falleth; for he hath not another to help him up. And if one prevail against him, two shall withstand him; and a threefold cord is not quickly broken.

Amos 3:3 Can two walk together, except they be agreed?

Rom.12:5 We, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

Rom.14:19 Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another.

Rom.16:17 Mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

1Cor.1:10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.

Eph.4:3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

DISCIPLESHIP

Mat.4:19 Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men.

Mat.6:24 No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

Mat.12:50 Whosoever shall do the will of My Father which is in Heaven, the same is My brother, and sister, and mother.

Mat.19:29 Every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

Lk.9:23,24 If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for My sake, the same shall save it.

Lk.9:62 No man, having put his hand to the plow, and looking back, is fit for the Kingdom of God.

Jn.8:31b If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My disciples indeed.

Jn.15:8 Herein is My Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be My disciples.

2Tim.2:4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please Him Who hath chosen him to be a soldier.

THE CHRISTIAN'S RELATIONSHIP TO WORLDLY SOCIETY

Mat.10:16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.

Jn.15:19 If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

Rom.12:2 Be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

2Cor.6:14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion hath light with darkness?

2Cor.6:17 Come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you.

Jam.4:4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.

1Jn.2:15,16 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

PERSECUTION

Mat.5:10-12 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven. Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in Heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

Mat.10:23a When they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another.

Jn.15:18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated Me before it hated you.

Jn.15:20 Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his Lord. If they have persecuted Me, they will also persecute you.

Jn.16:2b The time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service.

Phi.1:29 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on Him, but also to suffer for His sake.

2Tim.3:12 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

BACKSLIDING

Psa.37:31 The law of his God is in his heart; none of his steps shall slide.

Pro.13:15b The way of transgressors is hard.

Pro.14:14a The backslider in heart shall be filled with his own ways.

2Tim.4:10a Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world.

Heb.10:38 Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, My soul shall have no pleasure in him.

Heb.11:15 If they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.

2Pet.2:20-22 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

CHRISTIANITY IN CRISIS

Ezk.33:31 They come unto thee as the people cometh, and they sit before thee as My people, and they hear thy words, but they will not do them: for with their mouth they show much love, but their heart goeth after their covetousness.

Ezk.34:2b,3 Woe be to the shepherds of Israel that do feed themselves! Should not the shepherds feed the flocks? Ye eat the fat, and ye clothe you with the wool, ye kill them that are fed: but ye feed not the flock.

Mat.15:8,9 This people draweth nigh unto Me with their mouth, and honoureth Me with their lips; but their heart is far from Me. In vain they do worship Me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

Mat.22:29 Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

Mk.7:9,13 Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. Making the Word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered.

Acts 7:48 Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet.

2Tim.3:5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

Rev.3:15,16 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of My mouth.

(See Mat.23—Jesus' Rebuke to the scribes and Pharisees.)

THE LAW OF CHRIST

Mat.22:37-40 Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it. Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

Jn.1:17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

Rom.3:28 Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

Rom.8:2 The law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

Rom.10:4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

Rom.13:8b He that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

Gal.2:21 I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

Gal.3:13a Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law.

Gal.3:24,25 The law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.

Gal.5:1 Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.

Gal.5:13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.

Gal.5:14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

1Tim.1:9a Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient.

Jam.2:10 Whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

CREATION VS. EVOLUTION

Gen.1:1 In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.

Acts 14:15b Ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein.

Rom.1:20-22,25 For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, Who is blessed for ever.

1Tim.6:20 Keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called.

2Tim.3:7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

Heb.11:3 Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the Word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.

Bible Basics

© 1990 Global Missions - Sydney, Australia